

TRUSTING THE FATHER

BIBLE STUDY BOOKLET
LESSONS 001 – 052

Chris Badenhorst

INDEX

	Preface		
001	Character and Nature of God: “Good” (NLT)	027	Filled with The Holy Spirit (VOICE)
002	Character and Nature of God: “Love” (NIV)	028	The Humanity of Jesus (TPT)
003	Character and Nature of God: “Jesus: (JBP)	029	The Thief (Discernment & Battle) (CSB)
004	Character and Nature of God: “Holy Spirit” (CSB)	030	Humility, Obedience, & Trust (TLB)
005	Peace (AMP)	031	Our Responsibility (With the Lord) (CEB)
006	Grace (GNT)	032	Money, Tithe, & Giving (NLT)
007	Faith & Belief / Unbelief (EHV)	033	Loves (NTE)
008	Health and Healing (NKJV)	034	Fruit of the Spirit (DLNT)
009	Trials / Temptations / Discipline (NLV)	035	Gifts (EXB)
010	Satan Defeated! We Have Authority (CEB)	036	Armour of God (NIV)
011	Identity (ESV)	037	Repentance & Conscience (GNT)
012	Tabernacle: Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit (Overview) (TPT)	038	The Law (EHV)
013	Tabernacle: Body (MEV)	039	Your Adversary (HCSB)
014	Tabernacle: Mind (NTE)	040	Final Judgement (WEB)
015	Tabernacle: Soul (TLB)	041	Fasting (Meat & Drink) (EHV)
016	Tabernacle: Heart (NMB)	042	Soul (Emotions & Feelings) (RSV)
017	Tabernacle: Spirit (HCSB)	043	Storms of Life (VOICE)
018	Believing in Christ Jesus & Forgiveness of Sins (GWT)	044	Our Duality (Flesh & Spirit) (NET)
019	Taking the Worry Out of Sin (Religiously) (DLNT)	045	Sowing & Reaping (LEB)
020	How Do We Live as Christians (Believers)? (MSG)	046	Ministry Types (GWT)
021	A Redeemed & Reconciled (Not Fallen) World (MEV)	047	Body of Christ (CSB)
022	Righteousness is Not a Behaviour! (AMP)	048	Overcome the World (TLB)
023	Salvation / Saved (NABRE)	049	As a Child (ICB)
024	God Allowed It? (MSG)	050	Freedom (MEV)
025	The Lord's Prayer (NMB)	051	[Correct] Knowledge (HCSB)
026	Baptisms (GWT)	052	Moving Forward... (RGT)
			Conclusion & Further Topics of Study

I. PURPOSE:

To share with you how I have come to understand the Lord.

Having grown up in a very religious background, my understanding of the Lord was shaped through church doctrine, not the Holy Spirit. I lived in a constant fear of God that caused me much guilt and shame (coming too from a life where guilt and shame was a norm for me with my abusive dad). I portrayed God as I did my dad: love, intermixed with abuse. All the while, constantly trying not to bring on his anger; and feeling like I was never perfect enough to keep his anger at bay. I subconsciously felt I always disappointed my dad—this in turn developed in a conscious feeling that I always disappointed God.

I grew up becoming a defeated human being. And being Born-Again at the age of 16, continued as a defeated Christian. All I did was wait my turn in this world, longing for the day my days on this earth were over and I was with the Lord—even though I often felt that some sin I would commit would instead send me to Hell (not Heaven).

Being the Christian, I expected myself had become an impossible chore—yet didn't give up trying—which continued those feelings of guilt and shame when I failed (over and over again). And church didn't help; no matter which one I went to...they all seemed to share the same doctrinal message about me just being a "sinner saved by Grace"; and finding ways to remind me of my sinful nature and perpetual short-comings. I felt church wasn't there to build me up, but to make me an even more miserable Christian than I already was. So, I'd stopped going to church.

My life (and life as a Christian) all began to change when I heard and believed this "un-church" and "un-religious" message about a Loving God and a Holy Spirit indwelling that provided power, authority, and a correct understanding of who God the Father is. So, at age 38, getting Baptised in the Holy Spirit, I stopped being that helpless Christian! And as I grew with His power and authority, knowing too He was not judging or condemning me for any failures, my life (and Christian life) was now a positive that just kept distancing itself from religion, guilt, and shame.

This is my desire too for you. To share with you an understanding of this transformation in my life through how I began to see scripture anew. And that, if you happen to find yourself stuck as a "defeated Christian", or you're tired of being "Bible-thumped" over the head by churches, you deserve the Freedom that you have been given through Christ Jesus. For, no matter what you do, you cannot minimize the True "Agape" Love that the Lord has for you!

II. GUIDANCE:

- A. No matter what I share in this Bible Study booklet, always let the Holy Spirit be the one to interpret what is being said. He will always speak the Truth about a subject or verse, and as I genuinely try and share with His guidance, I will always be growing in the Lord and increasing my knowledge and understanding of Him. Thus, He may share with you in more detail, or more accurately. I am not, and should not be, your only source of understanding—He has given us an array of individuals whom know Him; don't be shy to let Him guide you to hear the right people.
- B. There is no perfect Bible translation. As such, I reference several different ones. I also have found that the Lord has me do an in-depth Greek/Hebrew analysis of verses or key words, and thus come up with a translation that differs from any published ones I can find. In such cases, I refer to the translation version as Provisions of Grace [PoG]. A [PoG] translation stems from the KJV/AKJV with meaning derived from the original Greek/Hebrew. [*Italicized words*] indicate that they are added for clarity or reference, not found in the original.
- C. When referencing "the Cross", I am attributing it to the entire life and ministry of Jesus: including His death, resurrection, ascension, and delivery of the Holy Ghost for and to mankind.
- D. The use of the word "Lord" references the Unified Trinity of God the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit.
- E. Don't be afraid to journal and take notes as you go. Your relationship with the Lord allows you to openly communicate with Him about anything in your life or about this Bible Study. This can feel odd at times if you are still developing a trust with Him; but the more you do it, the more you will recognise His voice and trust Him.

III. GENERAL BELIEFS:

Through a relationship with the Father, we as children of the Father continue to come to understand His Heart. As such, we see that He truly is a Loving Father that is beyond measure and time. His jealousy for all of us is so great and always so good—He really does only want the best for us in any and all situations of life. And this Love was demonstrated through the pure heart and ministry of Jesus Christ—Jesus embodied the Spirit of the Father and in all ways showed us the Heart of the Father. This is what we believe and hold true in our hearts.

The following are beliefs and understandings through scripture that share some of what we hold true about the Love of the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Ghost.

- God the Father Loves everyone in this world. So much so, that through the sacrificial giving of His Only Son (Christ Jesus), He has Gifted us Forgiveness, Righteousness, Health & Healing, and a personal intimate relationship with Him as a Father.
 - [John 3:16-17](#). [Romans 3:21-22](#). [Hebrews 10:12](#). [1 Peter 2:24](#).
- God is Love. This type of Love is not of our own ability, but God's unique "Agape" Love as defined in 1 Corinthians 13:4-8. This Love, and no other, is what is demonstrated to all the world from the Father. And this is the Love we gain in and through ourselves when we accept Him into our hearts. And His only command to us is to Love Him and each other in that Agape Love which only comes from His ability in us.
 - [John 13:24](#). [John 15:12](#). [1 John 3:23](#). [1 John 4:7,16](#). [1 Corinthians 13:4-8](#).
- The Kingdom of Heaven / Kingdom of God is in us now. It is not a place yet to come (a future Heaven / Reign), or a ritual (religious activity); but Power and Righteousness and Peace and Joy in the Holy Spirit.
 - [Matthew 6:33](#). [Luke 17:21](#). [Romans 14:17](#). [1 Corinthians 4:20](#).
- All humans (all men, all women, all races, and all nationalities) are created equally and have always been so. We are all created in the likeness of the Father, Son (Jesus Christ), and Holy Spirit; not only from the beginning of Creation, but now. This was clearly demonstrated in the ministry of Jesus; and is demonstrated now through Christ, to us from the Father, and in the working of the same Holy Spirit with and in both males and females; as well as in all races and nationalities. The Lord is no respecter of persons.
 - [Genesis 1:26-28](#). [Acts 10:34-35](#). [Romans 2:11](#). [Galatians 3:26-28](#). [Colossians 3:9-17](#).
- Righteousness has been Gifted to all through the Completed Work of Christ Jesus. It has been Gifted to all of us by God's Grace through the finished Faith of Christ Jesus; not by our works (self-righteous acts), nor through the Law (which has been fulfilled by Christ). It is unto all, and upon all that believe.
 - [Romans 3:21-22](#). [Galatians 2:16](#). [Ephesians 2:8](#).
- Salvation is the God-Gifted deliverance and preservation of a person out from the ways of self, the world, and Satan; to live a Kingdom life now on earth. It exists for all, and becomes personal (manifests) upon believing in Jesus Christ as our Saviour. It is by God's Grace through Christ's Faith; which we in turn believe, and thus come into salvation. It begins upon believing (being Born-Again), and is fulfilled when a believer dies; guaranteeing eternal existence with the Lord. There is no other way to obtain salvation but by believing in Christ Jesus.
 - [Luke 3:4-6](#). [Acts 4:10-12](#). [Romans 1:16](#). [Romans 10:9-10](#). [Romans 13:11](#). [Ephesians 1:13-14](#).
[Ephesians 2:8-9](#). [Philippians 2:12-13](#). [2 Thessalonians 2:13-14](#). [Titus 2:11](#).
- The Holy Spirit has been gifted to every person on earth. He is with us all, and in all who accept His infilling. And this infilling does not differ from person-to-person (regardless of gender, age, status, culture, or nationality)—for the Lord is no respecter of persons. For we are each given the same Holy Spirit as Jesus has.
 - [John 15:26](#). [John 16:7-11,13](#). [Acts 2:1-18 \(Joel 2:28-29\)](#). [Acts 10:34-35](#). [Romans 2:11](#). [Galatians 3:26-28](#).

- The Holy Spirit does not condemn us of the sins of our flesh; He only brings to light the sin of not believing in Jesus Christ as our Saviour. When we do not accept the testimony of Truth from the Holy Spirit to believe in Christ Jesus, it is that sin of not believing that is not forgiven. However, when we are Born-Again through believing on Him, that sin is forgiven. All other sins (all the sins of the flesh) were forgiven once-and-for-all-time at the Cross, and it is not necessary to ask forgiveness of them.
 - [Matthew 12:30-32](#). [Mark 3:27-30](#). [John 14:6](#). [John 15:26](#). [John 16:7-11,13](#). [Hebrews 10:12](#). [1 John 5:6-11](#).
- Gifts of the Holy Spirit are for all who believe as part of His Kingdom in us now. The Lord has blessed us with all Spiritual blessings and demonstrates Himself through signs and wonders; including miracles, healings, prophesy, words of knowledge, speaking in tongues, and more. Each one of us as believers can operate in all of the Holy Spirit's Gifts, just as Jesus Christ Himself demonstrated and more. They are both a testimony of Christ's accomplishment, and the Lord's Love to both believers and non-believers.
 - [Mark 16:16-18](#). [John 14:12](#). [Acts 4:29-31](#). [Ephesians 1:3](#).

These become a testimony in our lives and relationship with Him. This experiencing of Him is what makes Him so personal—this is His Love towards us and for us. He wants to demonstrate Himself to us, so we can fully understand His Love for everyone on this earth. **God Bless (As He Always Does)**.

IV. RESOURCES:

- A. As you go through these Bible Study lessons, I sometimes refer to my blog that also goes into sharing my relationship with the Lord. This blog is written in a different format than these Bible Studies, so you might garner further insight into a subject through it. So please feel free to visit: www.cbadenhorst.blogspot.com
- B. The following are additional resources referenced throughout this Bible Study Booklet:
- www.BibleGateway.com
 - www.BlueLetterBible.com
 - www.jglm.org
 - www.awmi.net
 - www.bjm.org
 - www.FaithMinistries.ws
 - www.BornOfSpirit.net
 - www.CarlieTerradez.wordpress.com
 - www.DrLeaf.com
 - www.BWRT.org
 - www.aHeavenlyWelcome.com
 - www.lhim.org
 - www.GraceAndFaithMinistries.org
 - www.NewCreations.org
 - www.the613commandments.com
 - www.EscapeToReality.org

V. ACKNOWLEDGEMENT & SUPPORT:

- A. A big THANK YOU to all the family, friends, sponsors, and donors whom have fed into our person lives and ministry. If you would like to support our ministry or part of our outreach, you may do so via our website or at:
- www.paypal.com/us/fundraiser/charity/2413858
 - www.CrosspointAcademy.co.za
- B. A thank you to **Kelly Badenhorst** who has supported and encouraged me in this life-journey.
- C. And most of all, our son **Joshua Badenhorst**, whose name was given to us by the Lord.

VI. BIBLE TRANSLATIONS CONTAINED IN THE LESSONS:

- **AKJV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Authorized-King-James-Version-AKJV-Bible/
- **AMP:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Amplified-Bible-AMP/
- **CEB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Common-English-Bible-CEB/
- **CSB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Christian-Standard-Bible-CSB/
- **DLNT:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Disciples-Literal-New-Testament-DLNT/
- **EHV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Evangelical-Heritage-Version-EHV-Bible/
- **ESV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/English-Standard-Version-ESV-Bible/
- **EXB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Expanded-Bible-EXB/
- **GNT:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Good-News-Translation-GNT-Bible/
- **GWT:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/GODS-WORD-Translation-GW-Bible/
- **HCSB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Holman-Christian-Standard-Bible-HCSB/
- **ICB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/International-Childrens-Bible-ICB/
- **JBP:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/JB-Phillips-New-Testament/
- **KJV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/King-James-Version-KJV-Bible/
- **LEB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Lexham-English-Bible-LEB/
- **MEV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Modern-English-Version-MEV-Bible/
- **MSG:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Message-MSG-Bible/
- **NABRE:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-American-Bible-Revised-Edition-NABRE-Bible/
- **NET:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-English-Translation-NET-Bible/
- **NIV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-International-Version-NIV-Bible/
- **NKJV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-King-James-Version-NKJV-Bible/
- **NLT:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-Living-Translation-NLT-Bible/
- **NLV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-Life-Version-NLV-Bible/
- **NMB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-Matthew-Bible-NMB/
- **NTE:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/New-Testament-for-Everyone-NTE/
- **RGT:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Revised-Geneva-Translation-RGT-Bible/
- **RSV:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/Revised-Standard-Version-RSV-Bible/
- **TLB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/The-Living-Bible-TLB/
- **TPT:** www.bible.com/versions/1849-tpt-the-passion-translation
(No longer available on Bible Gateway)
- **VOICE:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/The-Voice-Bible/
- **WEB:** www.biblegateway.com/versions/World-English-Bible-WEB/

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “GOOD”

INTENTION:

When we think of God, we do not always think of Him as being a good person—as we would ourselves judge a person we see or meet living in this world. We oftentimes give more “good” credit to people around us than to God.

Yet it is God that lives up to His own “Good” standard and will always Himself follow the guidelines He gives us.

Additionally, we can falsely assume that even if God sends hurricanes, earthquakes, famine, or hardship on me, that this is somehow “good” of God to do out of some mysterious, incomprehensible plan He has.

But we will learn that God’s true nature of “Good” does not involve such trauma and hardship. Good actually means it is wonderful, pleasing, glad, happy, kind, prosperity, etc. This is the God we need to know!

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD

Bible Study: Lessons 001 – 004



PREFACE – CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD (PARTS 1 – 4):

This 4-part series will look into, and help to clarify, whom God is. Oftentimes, we may feel we don't know what God is doing, can do, or will do in our lives or this world. We may think one day He is out to bless me; and the next, out to 'get' me. Leaving us wondering if He even cares for us.

For me, I grew up with the notion that God was like my own dad: angry, abusive, unpredictable, loving. As such, I complicated God into some multi-personality being that I could not trust in any fashion, because I never "knew" what He was going to do or how He was going to react—whether I did something wrong or not.

The way I feared my own dad, I feared God. So much so, that if I messed up (sinned), I would pre-emptively punish myself before God punished me—like sleeping on the hard floor for a week instead of the comfy bed. All to save me from getting a flat tire, having my photography negatives stolen, or finding myself in a financial bind. I really thought it was God doing those things to me for the "error of my ways".

If God was punishing me, how could I ever see Him as good or loving? Or even worse, I defined good and loving as Him being able to punish me (bring misfortune on my life). But is God like that (like my dad), confused and short-tempered? NO!

We can know He is not by the example of Him that is Christ Jesus. Jesus only did what He saw His Father (God) do. And never did we see Jesus punish someone for their sins. He even admitted that He did not come to Judge, and neither was His Father (God) Judging us.

God the Father, Jesus Christ the Son, and the Holy Spirit (Holy Ghost) are "Three-in-One"—in that although they are three separate beings, they each follow the same principal. One cannot do what another does not do; nor not do what the other does. They each have a role and function, yet they cannot and will not contradict each other. This is why Jesus said a "Kingdom divided cannot stand". If they did not think alike, act alike, and be alike, they would be a Kingdom divided (not united); and always be at odds with one-another. And who would "win" the discrepancy???

So if we ever see something in our lives, or hear someone say something about God that does not align with what Jesus demonstrated, it is not "good" nor of God. We can then see that "good" is not sickness, disease, birth-defects, misfortune, hardships, natural disasters (storms, drought, famine), lack, nor death.

When God creates something (as we will read in Genesis 1:1-26), He will claim it as "good". That being perfect and without flaw. So if we see something that is flawed in us or the world, we can know it is not of or from Him.

He is Love too (and not a confusing kind of Love, one that can be clearly seen and experienced). He only desires us to have the most in life—for He gave His only Son in exchange for us that we may have Life and Life more abundantly! He also gave His Holy Spirit to us, with the Gifts and Fruit provided by Him.

We will dig into better understanding the character and nature of God through these 4 parts:

1. The first part is looking at what it means that God is "Good".
2. The second part is looking at God as "Love".
3. The third part is looking at God as "Jesus".
4. The fourth part is looking at God as the "Holy Spirit".

When we see these aspects of whom He is, it will alleviate any cause for fear of Him and be able to see Him as Jesus did: His Father. And, as a believer, you are His child (son/daughter) just as Jesus is to God—you are Jesus's brothers and sisters...how awesome is that! And this same Father treats you the exact same way He treated His own Son Jesus: with Love, Care, and someone He is "well pleased" with.

Let's come to an understanding that "God is for us and not against us", and that He is not out to punish us.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “GOOD”

Bible Study: Lesson 001 (Character and Nature of God, Part 1)



I. TOPIC (PART 1 – GOOD):

We want to look at the Character and Nature of God as “Good”.

When you go through the following scripture reading, focus on the times God says something is “good”. This term “good” really is what it means, without the notion of hurt or pain. The Hebrew word is:

טוֹב (*towb*, [H2896](#))

1. good, pleasant, agreeable
 - a. pleasant, agreeable (to the senses)
 - b. pleasant (to the higher nature)
 - c. good, excellent (of its kind)
 - d. good, rich, valuable in estimation
 - e. good, appropriate, becoming
 - f. better (comparative)
 - g. glad, happy, prosperous (of man's sensuous nature)
 - h. good understanding (of man's intellectual nature)
 - i. good, kind, benign
 - j. good, right (ethical)
2. a good thing, benefit, welfare
 - a. welfare, prosperity, happiness
 - b. good things (collective)
 - c. good, benefit
 - d. moral good
3. welfare, benefit, good things
 - a. welfare, prosperity, happiness
 - b. good things (collective)
 - c. bounty

Then think about what that means to you, and if you feel you define God in this “Good” way.

II. READING: [Genesis 1:1-26](#) (NLT)

1 In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. 2 The earth was formless and empty, and darkness covered the deep waters. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the surface of the waters.

3 Then God said, “Let there be Light,” and there was Light. 4 And God saw that the Light was good. Then he separated the Light from the darkness. 5 God called the Light “day” and the darkness “night.” And evening passed and morning came, marking the first day.

6 Then God said, “Let there be a space between the waters, to separate the waters of the heavens from the waters of the earth.” 7 And that is what happened. God made this space to separate the waters of the earth from the waters of the heavens. 8 God called the space “sky.” And evening passed and morning came, marking the second day.

9 Then God said, “Let the waters beneath the sky flow together into one place, so dry ground may appear.” And that is what happened. 10 God called the dry ground “land” and the waters “seas.” And God saw that it was good. 11 Then God said, “Let the land sprout with vegetation—every sort of seed-bearing plant, and trees that grow seed-bearing fruit. These seeds will then produce the kinds of plants and trees from which they came.” And that is what happened. 12 The land produced vegetation—all sorts of seed-bearing plants, and trees with seed-bearing fruit. Their seeds produced plants and trees of the same kind. And God saw that it was good. 13 And evening passed and morning came, marking the third day.

14 Then God said, “Let lights appear in the sky to separate the day from the night. Let them be signs to mark the seasons, days, and years. 15 Let these lights in the sky shine down on the earth.” And that is what happened. 16 God made two great lights—the larger one to govern the day, and the smaller one to govern the night. He also made the stars. 17 God set these lights in the sky to light the earth, 18 to govern the day and night, and to separate the light from the darkness. And God saw that it was good. 19 And evening passed and morning came, marking the fourth day.

20 Then God said, “Let the waters swarm with fish and other life. Let the skies be filled with birds of every kind.” 21 So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that scurries and swarms in the water, and every sort of bird—each producing offspring of the same kind. And God saw that it was good. 22 Then God blessed them, saying,

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "GOOD"

Bible Study: Lesson 001 (Character and Nature of God, Part 1)



"Be fruitful and multiply. Let the fish fill the seas, and let the birds multiply on the earth." 23 And evening passed and morning came, marking the fifth day.

24 Then God said, "Let the earth produce every sort of animal, each producing offspring of the same kind—livestock, small animals that scurry along the ground, and wild animals." And that is what happened. 25 God made all sorts of wild animals, livestock, and small animals, each able to produce offspring of the same kind. And God saw that it was good.

26 Then God said, "Let us make human beings in our image, to be like us. They will reign over the fish in the sea, the birds in the sky, the livestock, all the wild animals on the earth, and the small animals that scurry along the ground."

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Isaiah 61:1](#) / [Luke 4:18-19](#) (NLT) [PoG]

The Spirit of the Sovereign Lord is upon me, for the Lord has anointed me to bring good news [*Gospel*] to the poor. He has sent me to comfort the broken-hearted and to proclaim that captives will be released, and prisoners will be freed.

Question: How is this "Good News"? In what ways can you or have you spoken "good news" to someone?

Response:

B. [Psalms 23:6](#) (NLT)

Surely your goodness and unfailing love will pursue me all the days of my life, and I will live in the house of the Lord forever.

Question: Do you feel that God follows you with anger and wrath; would that make you want to dwell with God?

Response:

C. [Psalms 34:8](#) (NLT)

Taste and see that the Lord is good. Oh, the joys of those who take refuge in him!

Question: Have you experienced ("tasted and seen") in your own life that the Lord is good? How have you trusted (taken refuge) in the Lord, and have seen it come through in your life?

Response:

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "GOOD"

Bible Study: Lesson 001 (Character and Nature of God, Part 1)



D. [Luke 12:29-32](#) (NLT)

“And don’t be concerned about what to eat and what to drink. Don’t worry about such things. 30 These things dominate the thoughts of unbelievers all over the world, but your Father already knows your needs. 31 Seek the Kingdom of God above all else, and he will give you everything you need. 32 “So don’t be afraid, little flock. For it gives your Father great happiness to give you the Kingdom.”

Question: Does God want to give to you? Have you ever feared something that never came to pass?

Response:

E. [John 10:10-11](#) (NKJV)

The thief’s purpose is to steal and kill and destroy. My purpose is to give them a rich and satisfying life. 11 “I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd sacrifices his life for the sheep.

Question: Does God “steal, kill, and destroy”? How has the Lord been a good Shephard in your life ([Psalms 23](#))?

Response:

F. [Romans 2:4b](#) (PoG)

It is the Goodness of God that leads to repentance.

Question: Do you fear the Lord when you do something wrong?

Response:

G. [Galatians 5:22-23a](#) (PoG)

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering [patience, endurance, steadfastness, and perseverance over a long period of time], kindness, goodness, faith, 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.

Question: Do you feel the Holy Spirit provides you with all these gifts?

Response:

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "GOOD"

Bible Study: Lesson 001 (Character and Nature of God, Part 1)



H. [Philippians 1:6](#) (NLT)

And I am certain that God, who began the good work within you, will continue his work until it is finally finished on the day when Christ Jesus returns.

Question: Is there something the Lord is perfecting in you every day?

Response:

I. [Philippians 4:8](#) (NLT)

And now, dear brothers and sisters, one final thing. Fix your thoughts on what is true, and honourable, and right, and pure, and lovely, and admirable. Think about things that are excellent and worthy of praise.

Question: Why should we think (meditate) on these things?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Philemon 1:6](#) (PoG)

That the communication [fellowship, communion, intimacy] of your faith may become active by the correct knowledge of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.

Thoughts: It's important to have the correct knowledge of the Lord. Without it, we can tend to lead a life unsure what is the Will of the Lord or what is actually Good. When we align with knowing Him correctly, we then flow more freely with Him and have a deeper intimacy and trust with Him.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “LOVE”

INTENTION:

Just as we can confuse ourselves as to what is “Good”, we can confuse ourselves to what is “Love”.

Growing up, the kind of love my dad had for me included punishment (abuse)—and the religious church I grew up in interpreted God in that same fashion: out to get me “in love”. I thus feared God was always disappointed in me and although thought He might love me because He “was obligated to”, I really felt in my heart that this love of God was really Him looking for reasons to punish me for my imperfections.

I lived this way for decades before coming to finally believe opposite to that understanding—now knowing that God’s Love has no punishment. And because He wants to Love me always, I never have to fear any punishment from Him. We have that ability to come close to Him, into His presence, because we never have to fear Him.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “LOVE”

Bible Study: Lesson 002 (Character and Nature of God, Part 2)



I. TOPIC (PART 2 – LOVE):

We want to continue to look at the Character and Nature of God—this time as “Love”.

As we learned to see what it means that God is “Good”, we want to see also what it means to see God as “Love”. Sometimes we can view love (especially in the world we live in) as including abuse and pain. But this is not the true Love that is from God—an “Agape” ([G26](#)) Love. This same Love He asks us to live in, is the same Love He lives in.

II. READING: [1 John 3:16-24](#), [1 John 4:7-21](#), & [1 John 5:1-5](#) (NIV) [PoG]

16 This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers and sisters. 17 If anyone has material possessions and sees a brother or sister in need but has no pity on them, how can the love of God be in that person? 18 Dear children, let us not love with words or speech but with actions and in truth.

19 This is how we know that we belong to the truth and how we set our hearts at rest in his presence: 20 If our hearts condemn us, we know that God is greater than our hearts, [as] He knows everything. 21 Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God 22 and receive from Him anything we ask, because we keep His commands and do what pleases him. 23 And this is His command: to believe in the name of His Son, Jesus Christ, and to love one another as he commanded us. 24 The one who keeps God’s commands lives in Him, and He in them. And this is how we know that He lives in us: We know it by the Spirit he gave us.

...

7 Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God. 8 Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love. 9 This is how God showed his love among us: He sent his one and only Son into the world that we might live through Him. 10 This is love: not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent his Son as an atoning sacrifice for our sins. 11 Dear friends, since God so loved us, we also ought to love one another. 12 No one has ever seen God; but if we love one another, God lives in us and His love is made complete in us.

13 This is how we know that we live in Him and He in us: He has given us of his Spirit. 14 And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent his Son to be the Saviour of the world. 15 If anyone acknowledges that Jesus is the Son of God, God lives in them and they in God. 16 And so we know and rely on the love God has for us.

God is love. Whoever lives in love lives in God, and God in them. 17 [Love has been perfected among us in this: that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because as He (Jesus Christ) is, so are we in this world.] 18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment. The one who fears is not made perfect in love.

19 We love because He first loved us. 20 Whoever claims to love God yet hates a brother or sister is a liar. For whoever does not love their brother and sister, whom they have seen, cannot love God, whom they have not seen. 21 And He has given us this command: Anyone who loves God must also love their brother and sister.

...

Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves the father loves his child as well. 2 This is how we know that we love the children of God: by loving God and carrying out his commands. 3 In fact, this is love for God: to keep His commands. And His commands are not burdensome, 4 for everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith. 5 Who is it that overcomes the world? Only the one who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "LOVE"

Bible Study: Lesson 002 (Character and Nature of God, Part 2)



III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [John 3:16-19](#) (NIV)

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. 17 For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him. 18 Whoever believes in him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe stands condemned already because they have not believed in the name of God's one and only Son. 19 This is the verdict: Light has come into the world, but people loved darkness instead of light because their deeds were evil.

Question: What does God's Love look like? Imagine watching your own child be beaten and crucified on a cross for someone else's fault / sin.

Response:

B. [1 Corinthians 13:4-8a](#) (NIV) [PoG]

4 Love is patient, love is kind. [Love] does not envy, [Love] does not boast, [Love] is not proud. 5 [Love] does not dishonour others, [Love] is not self-seeking, [Love] is not easily angered, [Love] keeps no record of wrongs. 6 Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. 7 [Love] always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. 8 Love never fails.

Question: Since we have learned that God = Love, in these verses, replace the words "Love" with "God" and read through it again. Does that change how you see God?

Response:

C. [Mark 12:28-31](#) (NIV)

28 One of the teachers of the law came and heard them debating. Noticing that Jesus had given them a good answer, he asked him, "Of all the commandments, which is the most important?" 29 "The most important one," answered Jesus, "is this: 'Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God, the Lord is one. 30 Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.' 31 The second is this: 'Love your neighbour as yourself.' There is no commandment greater than these."

Question: Which commandment is the most important? Why do you think so?

Response:

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "LOVE"

Bible Study: Lesson 002 (Character and Nature of God, Part 2)



D. [Galatians 5:14](#) (PoG)

For all the law is fulfilled in one word in this: "You shall love your neighbour as yourself."

Question: This one "word" is love. Have you ever loved a difficult "neighbour" or "person"?

Response:

E. [Galatians 5:22-23](#) (PoG)

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering [patience, endurance, steadfastness, and perseverance over a long period of time], kindness, goodness, faith, 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.

Question: If we are saved, we have the Fruits of the Spirit. How do you manifest Love to yourself and others?

Response:

F. [Romans 5:5b](#) (NIV)

...because God's love has been poured out into our hearts through the Holy Spirit, who has been given to us.

Question: Do you feel the Holy Spirit? In what ways do you feel God's Love through you?

Response:

G. [Ephesians 1:3-4](#) (NKJV)

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ, 4 just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love.

Question: What does it mean to be Holy and without blame? Do you believe you are?

Response:

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “LOVE”

Bible Study: Lesson 002 (Character and Nature of God, Part 2)



H. [2 Timothy 1:6-7](#) (PoG)

6 Therefore I remind you to stir up the gift of God [*the Holy Spirit*] which is in you through me laying my hands on you. 7 For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind (discipline).

Question: How does the Lord’s Gift of power, love, and discipline help in your everyday life?

Response:

I. [Jude 1:20-21](#) (NKJV)

20 But you, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit, 21 keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

Question: What are some ways you can build yourself up in your belief?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Ephesians 3:14-21](#) (NIV)

For this reason I kneel before the Father, 15 from whom every family in heaven and on earth derives its name. 16 I pray that out of his glorious riches he may strengthen you with power through his Spirit in your inner being, 17 so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith. And I pray that you, being rooted and established in love, 18 may have power, together with all the Lord’s holy people, to grasp how wide and long and high and deep is the love of Christ, 19 and to know this love that surpasses knowledge—that you may be filled to the measure of all the fullness of God. 20 Now to him who is able to do immeasurably more than all we ask or imagine, according to his power that is at work within us, 21 to him be glory in the church and in Christ Jesus throughout all generations, for ever and ever! Amen.

Thoughts: Being “rooted and established in love” is that we live and dwell in how much the Lord loves us! His love is immeasurable to us and we should never doubt that. When we come to realize His over-encompassing love, we realize He has nothing but Love towards us (not anger or wrath). For when we fear the Lord in that He is always dwelling on our mistakes and eager to punish us, we lose sight of His love—in that there is no love in fear:

[1 John 4:18a](#) (NIV)

There is no fear in love. But perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment.

And that living without fear makes life so much less stressful; we do not have to dwell on our own mistakes either, knowing that His love took care of all our mistakes at the Cross (hence why we do not have to believe we will be punished). His power works in and through us; but when we fear or lose sight of His love, we limit God’s immeasurable ability in our life. Let’s not limit God!

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “JESUS”

INTENTION:

This is one area of God’s character and nature I did not related—that God is exactly as Jesus is; and Jesus exactly as God is. So, even though I read about God “doing” things in the Old testament of the Bible, I could override or put-aside those things if they contradict anything Jesus demonstrated. Jesus came to reveal the exact true nature and character of God: both as a Father and as what that really looked like.

Thus, let us see and experience God as we see and experience Jesus!

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “JESUS”

Bible Study: Lesson 003 (Character and Nature of God, Part 3)



I. TOPIC (PART 3 – JESUS):

We want to continue to look at the Character and Nature of God—this time as “Jesus”.

As we learned to see what it means that God is “Good” and “Love”, we want to see also what it means to see God as “Jesus”. If there is still any confusion as to God’s character and nature, this is cleared up fully in Jesus being the exact representation of God—whom we see and experience from Jesus, is exactly what we can see and experience from God. They are never in disagreement and we can always see them as acting and behaving the same ways.

II. READING: [John 8:1-59](#) (J.B. Phillips New Testament) [PoG]

... Jesus went off to the Mount of Olives.

2-5 Early next morning he returned to the Temple and the entire crowd came to him. So he sat down and began to teach them. But the scribes and Pharisees brought in to him a woman who had been caught in adultery. They made her stand in front, and then said to him, “Now, master, this woman has been caught in adultery, in the very act. According to the Law, Moses commanded us to stone such women to death. Now, what do you say about her?”

6-9a They said this to test him, so that they might have some good grounds for an accusation. But Jesus stooped down and began to write with his finger in the dust on the ground. But as they persisted in their questioning, he straightened himself up and said to them, “Let the one among you who has never sinned throw the first stone at her.” Then he stooped down again and continued writing with his finger on the ground. And when they heard what he said, they were convicted by their own consciences and went out, one by one, beginning with the eldest until they had all gone.

9b-10 Jesus was left alone, with the woman still standing where they had put her. So he stood up and said to her, “Where are they all—did no one condemn you?”

11 And she said, “No one, sir.” “Neither do I condemn you,” said Jesus to her. “Go home and do not sin again.”

12 Later, Jesus spoke to the people again and said, “I am the light of the world. The man who follows me will never walk in the dark but will live his life in the light.”

13 This made the Pharisees say to him, “You are testifying to yourself—your evidence is not valid.”

14-18 Jesus answered, “Even if I am testifying to myself, my evidence is valid, for I know where I have come from and I know where I am going. But as for you, you have no idea where I come from or where I am going. You are judging by human standards, but I am not judging anyone. Yet if I should judge, my decision would be just, for I am not alone—the Father who sent me is with me. In your Law, it is stated that the witness of two persons is valid. I am one testifying to myself and the second witness to me is the Father who sent me.”

19 “And where is this father of yours?” they replied. “You do not know my Father,” returned Jesus, “any more than you know me: if you had known me, you would have known him.”

20 Jesus made these statements while he was teaching in the Temple treasury. Yet no one arrested him, for his time had not yet come.

21 Later, Jesus spoke to them again and said, “I am going away and you will try to find me, but you will die in your sins. You cannot come where I am going.”

22 This made the Jews say, “Is he going to kill himself, then? Is that why he says, “You cannot come where I am going’?”

23-24 “The difference between us,” Jesus said to them, “is that you come from below and I am from above. You belong to this world but I do not. That is why I told you will die in your sins. For unless you believe that I am who I am, you will die in your sins.”

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “JESUS”

Bible Study: Lesson 003 (Character and Nature of God, Part 3)



25-26 Then they said, “Who are you?” “I am what I have told you I was from the beginning,” replied Jesus. “There is much in you that I could speak about and condemn. But he who sent me is true and I am only speaking to this world what I myself have heard from him.”

27-30 They did not realise that he was talking to them about the Father. So Jesus resumed, “When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you will realise that I am who I say I am, and that I do nothing on my own authority but speak simply as my Father has taught me. The one who sent me is with me now: the Father has never left me alone for I always do what pleases him.” And even while he said these words, many people believed in him.

31-32 So Jesus said to the Jews who believed in him, “If you are faithful to what I have said, you are truly my disciples. And you will know the truth and the truth will set you free!”

33 “But we are descendants of Abraham,” they replied, “and we have never in our lives been any man’s slaves. How can you say to us, ‘You will be set free?’”

34-38 Jesus returned, “Believe me when I tell you that every man who commits sin is a slave. For a slave is no permanent part of a household, but a son is. If the Son, then, sets you free, you are really free! I know that you are descended from Abraham, but some of you are looking for a way to kill me because you can’t bear my words. I am telling you what I have seen in the presence of my Father, and you are doing what you have seen in the presence of your father.”

39-41 “Our father is Abraham!” they retorted. “If you were the children of Abraham, you would do the sort of things Abraham did. But in fact, at this moment, you are looking for a way to kill me, simply because I am a man who has told you the truth that I have heard from God. Abraham would never have done that. No, you are doing your father’s work.” “We are not illegitimate!” they retorted. “We have one Father—God.”

42-47 “If God were really your Father,” replied Jesus, “you would have loved me. For I came from God, and I am here. I did not come of my own accord—he sent me, and I am here. Why do you not understand my words? It is because you cannot hear what I am really saying. Your father is the devil, and what you are wanting to do is what your father longs to do. He always was a murderer, and has never dealt with the truth, since the truth will have nothing to do with him. Whenever he tells a lie, he speaks in character, for he is a liar and the father of lies. And it is because I speak the truth that you will not believe me. Which of you can prove me guilty of sin? If I am speaking the truth, why is it that you do not believe me? The man who is born of God can hear these words of God and the reason why you cannot hear the words of God is simply this, that you are not the sons of God.”

48 “How right we are,” retorted the Jews, “in calling you a Samaritan, and mad at that [having a demon]!”

49-51 “No,” replied Jesus, “I am not mad [demon-possessed]. I am honouring my Father and you are trying to dishonour me. But I am not concerned with my own glory: there is one whose concern it is, and he is the true judge. Believe me when I tell you that if anybody accepts my words, he will never see death at all.”

52-53 “Now we know that you’re mad [demon-possessed],” replied the Jews. “Why, Abraham died and the prophets, too, and yet you say, ‘If a man accepts my words, he will never experience death!’ Are you greater than our father, Abraham? He died, and so did the prophets—who are you making yourself out to be?”

54-56 “If I were trying to glorify myself,” returned Jesus, “such glory would be worthless. But it is my Father who glorifies me, the very one whom you say is your God—though you have never known him. But I know him, and if I said I did not know him, I should be as much a liar as you are! But I do know him and I am faithful to what he says. As for your father, Abraham, his great joy was that he would see my coming. Now he has seen it and he is overjoyed.”

57 “Look,” said the Jews to him, “you are not fifty yet, and has Abraham seen you?” ([Genesis 18](#))

58 “I tell you in solemn truth,” returned Jesus, “before there was an Abraham, I AM!”

59 At this, they picked up stones to hurl at him, but Jesus disappeared and made his way out of the Temple.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "JESUS"

Bible Study: Lesson 003 (Character and Nature of God, Part 3)



III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Hebrews 1:3](#) (J.B. Phillips)

... This Son, radiance of the glory of God, flawless expression of the nature of God, himself the upholding principle of all that is...

Question: Do you see God as you see Jesus—with Jesus being a “flawless expression of the nature of God”?

Response:

B. [John 5:19-20](#) (J.B. Phillips)

Jesus said to them, “I assure you that the Son can do nothing of his own accord, but only what he sees the Father doing. What the Son does is always modelled on what the Father does, for the Father loves the Son and shows him everything that he does himself, Yes, and he will show him even greater things than these to fill you with wonder.

Question: Have you seen any marvellous things that Jesus has done in your life?

Response:

C. [John 9:1-7](#) (J.B. Phillips) [PoG]

Later, as Jesus walked along he saw a man who had been blind from birth. 2 “Master, whose sin caused this man’s blindness,” asked the disciples, “his own or his parents’?” 3-5 “He was not born blind because of his own sin or that of his parents,” returned Jesus, “[nevertheless, that the works of God should be made manifest in him]. I must carry on the work of him who sent me while the daylight lasts. Night is coming, when no one can work. I am the world’s light as long as I am in it.” 6-7 Having said this, he spat on the ground and made a sort of clay with the saliva. This he applied to the man’s eyes and said, “Go and wash in the pool of Siloam.” (Siloam means “one who has been sent”.) So the man went off and washed and came home with his sight restored.

Question: Is it sin that caused him to be born blind; or do you think God made him blind? What ways can God heal?

Response:

D. [Matthew 9:1-6](#) (J.B. Phillips)

So Jesus re-embarked on the boat, crossed the lake, and came to his own town. Immediately some people arrived bringing him a paralytic lying flat on his bed. When Jesus saw the faith of those who brought him he said to the paralytic, “Cheer up, my son! Your sins are forgiven.”

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “JESUS”

Bible Study: Lesson 003 (Character and Nature of God, Part 3)



At once some of the scribes thought to themselves, “This man is blaspheming”. But Jesus realised what they were thinking, and said to them, “Why must you have such evil thoughts in your minds? Do you think it is easier to say to this man, ‘Your sins are forgiven’ or ‘Get up and walk’? But to make it quite plain that the Son of Man has full authority on earth to forgive sins”—and here he spoke to the paralytic—“Get up, pick up your bed and go home.” And the man sprang to his feet and went home.

Question: Have you ever felt like a sin you committed can’t be forgiven or a sickness can’t be healed?

Response:

E. [John 14:11-14](#) (J.B. Phillips)

Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The very words I say to you are not my own. It is the Father who lives in me who carries out his work through me. Do you believe me when I say that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? But if you cannot, then believe me because of what you see me do. I assure you that the man who believes in me will do the same things that I have done, yes, and he will do even greater things than these, for I am going away to the Father. Whatever you ask the Father in my name, I will do—that the Son may bring glory to the Father. And if you ask me anything in my name, I will grant it.

Question: Look at all the miracles Jesus did; can we do anything that Jesus did while He was on the Earth?

Response:

F. [Matthew 12:25-26](#) (J.B. Phillips)

... “Any kingdom divided against itself is bound to collapse, and no town or household divided against itself can last for long. If it is Satan who is expelling Satan, then he is divided against himself—so how do you suppose that his kingdom can continue?”

Question: What does it mean for a kingdom/household to be divided amongst itself (Satan, God, Humans)?

Response:

G. [Matthew 14:44-46](#) (J.B. Phillips)

44 “Again, the kingdom of Heaven is like some treasure which has been buried in a field. A man finds it and buries it again and goes off overjoyed to sell all his possessions to buy himself that field. 45-46 “Or again, the kingdom of Heaven is like a merchant searching for fine pearls. When he has found a single pearl of great value, he goes and sells all his possessions and buys it.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "JESUS"

Bible Study: Lesson 003 (Character and Nature of God, Part 3)



Question: Do you see value in yourself as God sees in you (you are the treasure and pearl He sold Himself for)?

Response:

H. [Mark 4:3-8,14-20](#) (NKJV)

“Listen! Behold, a sower went out to sow. 4 And it happened, as he sowed, that some seed fell by the wayside; and the birds of the air came and devoured it. 5 Some fell on stony ground, where it did not have much earth; and immediately it sprang up because it had no depth of earth. 6 But when the sun was up it was scorched, and because it had no root it withered away. 7 And some seed fell among thorns; and the thorns grew up and choked it, and it yielded no crop. 8 But other seed fell on good ground and yielded a crop that sprang up, increased and produced: some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred.”

14 The sower sows the word. 15 And these are the ones by the wayside where the word is sown. When they hear, Satan comes immediately and takes away the word that was sown in their hearts. 16 These likewise are the ones sown on stony ground who, when they hear the word, immediately receive it with gladness; 17 and they have no root in themselves, and so endure only for a time. Afterward, when tribulation or persecution arises for the word’s sake, immediately they stumble. 18 Now these are the ones sown among thorns; they are the ones who hear the word, 19 and the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires for other things entering in choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. 20 But these are the ones sown on good ground, those who hear the word, accept it, and bear fruit: some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred.”

Question: Look at the 4 seed examples, do you see yourself as one type; which one?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 5:36-39](#) (J.B. Phillips)

36 Then he gave them this illustration. “Nobody tears a piece from a new coat to patch up an old one. If he does, he ruins the new one and the new piece does not match the old. 37-39 “Nobody puts new wine into old wineskins. If he does, the new wine will burst the skins—the wine will be spilt and the skins ruined. No, new wine must be put into new wineskins. Of course, nobody who has been drinking old wine will want the new at once. He is sure to say, ‘The old is a good sound wine.’”

Thoughts: The old wine being spoken of is the Old Testament and the Laws of Moses. The new wine is that of Jesus and the New Covenant we have because of Him. We mustn’t mix old and new to create a doctrine, nor think that we live in the Old Testament. We should always view ourselves in the Light of Jesus and the reality that we exist post-Cross, not pre-Cross.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “HOLY SPIRIT”

INTENTION:

Looking back on my life, even into my childhood (before I became a believer), I can recognise the Holy Spirit with me. And even as a believer, seeing, feeling, and hearing Him as He helped guide my life. Yet, I never really “felt” like I had a close relationship with Him; or even really understood Him or His role in my life.

When we tune our ears and heart to Him, what He can bring can be so amazing and impactful—not only on our own personal lives, but the lives of anyone around you. He longs to bring the God’s Kingdom into each and every life.

Let’s open up and trust Him, letting Him fully into our lives!

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “HOLY SPIRIT”

Bible Study: Lesson 004 (Character and Nature of God, Part 4)



I. TOPIC (PART 4 – HOLY SPIRIT):

We want to continue to look at the Character and Nature of God—this time as the “Holy Spirit”.

As we saw with Jesus as the exact representation of whom God is, we can also equate the Holy Spirit to this same nature and character (i.e. Three-In-One). The Holy Spirit is a Gift to us all; let’s recognise what He brings to us. And then also, if you want to experience this same Holy Spirit with His Fruit and Gifts.

II. READING: Receiving / Coming of the Holy Spirit:

[John 20:19-22](#) (CSB) [PoG]

19 When it was evening on that first day of the week, the disciples were gathered together with the doors locked because they feared the Jews. Jesus came, stood among them, and said to them, “Peace be with you.” 20 Having said this, he showed them his hands and his side. So the disciples rejoiced when they saw the Lord. 21 Jesus said to them again, “Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me, I also send you.” 22 After saying this, he breathed on them and said, “Receive the Holy Spirit.”

[Acts 2:1-41](#) (CSB) [PoG]

1 When the day of Pentecost had arrived, they [*a group of believers*] were all together in one place. 2 Suddenly a sound like that of a violent rushing wind came from heaven, and it filled the whole house where they were staying. 3 They saw tongues like flames of fire that separated and rested on each one of them. 4 Then they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in different tongues, as the Spirit enabled them.

5 Now there were Jews staying in Jerusalem, devout people from every nation under heaven. 6 When this sound occurred, a crowd came together and was confused because each one heard them speaking in his own language. 7 They were astounded and amazed, saying, “Look, aren’t all these who are speaking Galileans? 8 How is it that each of us can hear them in our own native language? 9 Parthians, Medes, Elamites; those who live in Mesopotamia, in Judea and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, 10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya near Cyrene; visitors from Rome (both Jews and converts), 11 Cretans and Arabs—we hear them declaring the magnificent acts of God in our own tongues.” 12 They were all astounded and perplexed, saying to one another, “What does this mean?” 13 But some sneered and said, “They’re drunk on new wine.”

14 Peter stood up with the Eleven, raised his voice, and proclaimed to them, “Fellow Jews and all you residents of Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and pay attention to my words. 15 For these people are not drunk, as you suppose, since it’s only nine in the morning. 16 On the contrary, this is what was spoken through the prophet Joel:

17 And it will be in the last days, says God,
that I will pour out my Spirit on all people;
then your sons and your daughters will prophesy,
your young men will see visions,
and your old men will dream dreams.

18 I will even pour out my Spirit
on my servants in those days, both men and women
and they will prophesy.

19 I will display wonders in the heaven above
and signs on the earth below:
blood and fire and a cloud of smoke.

20 The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood
before the great and glorious day of the Lord comes.

21 Then everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "HOLY SPIRIT"

Bible Study: Lesson 004 (Character and Nature of God, Part 4)



22 "Fellow Israelites, listen to these words: This Jesus of Nazareth was a man attested to you by God with miracles, wonders, and signs that God did among you through him, just as you yourselves know. 23 Though he was delivered up according to God's determined plan and foreknowledge, you used lawless people to nail him to a cross and kill him. 24 God raised him up, ending the pains of death, because it was not possible for him to be held by death. 25 For David says of him:

I saw the Lord ever before me;
because he is at my right hand,
I will not be shaken.

26 Therefore my heart is glad
and my tongue rejoices.

Moreover, my flesh will rest in hope,
27 because you will not abandon me in Hades
or allow your holy one to see decay.

28 You have revealed the paths of life to me;
you will fill me with gladness
in your presence.

29 "Brothers and sisters, I can confidently speak to you about the patriarch David: He is both dead and buried, and his tomb is with us to this day. 30 Since he was a prophet, he knew that God had sworn an oath to him to seat one of his descendants on his throne. 31 Seeing what was to come, he spoke concerning the resurrection of the Messiah: He was not abandoned in Hades, and his flesh did not experience decay.

32 "God has raised this Jesus; we are all witnesses of this. 33 Therefore, since he has been exalted to the right hand of God and has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit, he has poured out what you both see and hear. 34 For it was not David who ascended into the heavens, but he himself says:

The Lord declared to my Lord,
'Sit at my right hand
35 until I make your enemies your footstool.'

36 "Therefore let all the house of Israel know with certainty that God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Messiah."

37 When they heard this, they were pierced to the heart and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles, "Brothers, what should we do?"

38 Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, each of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins, and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. 39 For the promise is for you and for your children, and for all who are far off, as many as the Lord our God will call." 40 With many other words he testified and strongly urged them, saying, "Be saved from this corrupt generation!" 41 So those who accepted his message were baptized [into Christ], and that day about three thousand people were added to them.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [John 16:7-11](#) (PoG)

7-11 Nevertheless I (Jesus Christ) tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper (Holy Spirit) will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send Him to you. And when He has come, He will convict the world of:

- Sin, because they do not believe in Me;
- Righteousness, because I go to My Father and you see Me no more;
- Judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged.

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "HOLY SPIRIT"

Bible Study: Lesson 004 (Character and Nature of God, Part 4)



Question: Do you ever feel the Holy Spirit (Lord) is judging you for your sins; or reminding you of them?

Response:

B. [Acts 4:29-31](#) (CSB)

And now, Lord, consider their threats, and grant that your servants may speak your word with all boldness, 30 while you stretch out your hand for healing, and signs and wonders are performed through the name of your holy servant Jesus." 31 When they had prayed, the place where they were assembled was shaken, and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak the word of God boldly.

Question: Do you know what it is to be "filled" with the Holy Spirit?

Response:

C. [Acts 8:14-17](#) (CSB)

When the apostles who were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them. 15 After they went down there, they prayed for them so that the Samaritans might receive the Holy Spirit because he had not yet come down on any of them. 16 (They had only been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) 17 Then Peter and John laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

Question: Can someone be a believer and not yet be baptised in the Holy Spirit?

Response:

D. [Acts 19:1-6](#) (CSB)

While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul travelled through the interior regions and came to Ephesus. He found some disciples 2 and asked them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?" "No," they told him, "we haven't even heard that there is a Holy Spirit." 3 "Into what then were you baptized?" he asked them. "Into John's baptism," they replied. 4 Paul said, "John baptized with a baptism of repentance, telling the people that they should believe in the one who would come after him, that is, in Jesus." 5 When they heard this, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus. 6 And when Paul had laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came on them, and they began to speak in tongues and to prophesy.

Question: Does there seem to be an importance to the disciples that someone is baptized in the Holy Spirit?

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: “HOLY SPIRIT”

Bible Study: Lesson 004 (Character and Nature of God, Part 4)



Response:

E. [1 Corinthians 3:16-17](#) (PoG)

16 Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? 17 If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy this [*defilement* ([G5126](#))]. For the temple of God is holy, which you are.

Question: Have you ever felt God is angry with you when you sin—that He may even want to destroy you?

Response:

Further reading: <http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/misunderstanding-and-misinterpretation.html>

F. [Galatians 5:22-23](#) (PoG)

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering [patience, endurance, steadfastness, and perseverance over a long period of time], kindness, goodness, faith, 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.

Question: Do you feel the Holy Spirit provides these fruits for you now?

Response:

G. [1 Corinthians 12:4-11](#) (CSB)

4 Now there are different gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 There are different ministries, but the same Lord. 6 And there are different activities, but the same God works all of them in each person. 7 A manifestation of the Spirit is given to each person for the common good: 8 to one is given a message of wisdom through the Spirit, to another, a message of knowledge by the same Spirit, 9 to another, faith by the same Spirit, to another, gifts of healing by the one Spirit, 10 to another, the performing of miracles, to another, prophecy, to another, distinguishing between spirits, to another, different kinds of tongues, to another, interpretation of tongues. 11 One and the same Spirit is active in all these, distributing to each person as he wills.

Question: Did Jesus or the disciples perform these gifts? Do you think you can?

Response:

CHARACTER AND NATURE OF GOD: "HOLY SPIRIT"

Bible Study: Lesson 004 (Character and Nature of God, Part 4)



H. [Romans 12:4-8](#) (CSB)

4 Now as we have many parts in one body, and all the parts do not have the same function, 5 in the same way we who are many are one body in Christ and individually members of one another. 6 According to the grace given to us, we have different gifts: If prophecy, use it according to the proportion of one's faith; 7 if service, use it in service; if teaching, in teaching; 8 if exhorting, in exhortation; giving, with generosity; leading, with diligence; showing mercy, with cheerfulness.

Question: Do you find yourself operating in any of these gifts? Do you feel any are stronger in you than others?

Response:

I. [Romans 11:29](#) (CSB) [PoG]

God's gracious gifts and calling are irrevocable [not repented of].

Question: Do you feel you can lose the gift of the Holy Spirit, or His gifts; or that God would take them away?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Acts 5:1-10](#) (KJV): <http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/misunderstanding-and-misinterpretation.html>

But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, 2 and kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet. 3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? 4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God. 5 And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things. 6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. 8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much. 9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. 10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

Thoughts: Did God kill Ananias and Sapphira? When you read the account of Ananias and Sapphira, please note that it does not say that the Holy Spirit (nor God, nor Jesus) struck them dead. It says they "yielded up" ([G1634](#)) their spirits. They did it to themselves—their own conscience convicted them, and most likely their heart literally failed them because of their own mis-construed fear of God. A further explanation is detailed in the link above.

PEACE

INTENTION:

John Lennon's Imagine envisioned a world with peace. However, it was often a world 'without' something. Yet the Lord understands there will always be something in this world that will create conflict to try and disrupt our own peace. However, it is not the lack of conflict that brings peace, but the Lord bringing peace in the midst of conflict.

We can live a life, both at peace with God, and having a peace in this conflicting world.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at God's Peace—firstly His peace toward us, then what it looks like in us as Christians. When you go through the following scripture reading, focus on understanding what this kind of Peace is and how it might differ from what you have thought, or what the world expects peace to be. I like this quote from Bill Johnson in this regard:

“For most people, peace is a time without war, or a time without conflict, or as simple as a time without noise. Take note that it's always the absence of something. In the Kingdom of God, peace is the presence of someone. Peace is a person. Jesus is the Prince of Peace. When the prevailing influence on our hearts and minds is the presence of Jesus, we have peace that conquers. The wonderful reality of this kind of peace is that it is not defined or controlled by its surroundings. This kind of peace changes its surroundings. Jesus slept in a storm and then released peace over that storm, and the storm stopped ([Mark 4:35-41](#)). What was in Him influenced what happened around Him.”

Furthermore, when we read of Peace in a passage, it is often the Greek word 'eirene' ([G1515](#)); its diverse meaning is:

1. a state of national tranquillity
 - a. exemption from the rage and havoc of war
2. peace between individuals, i.e. harmony, concord
3. security, safety, prosperity, felicity, (because peace and harmony make and keep things safe and prosperous)
4. of the Messiah's peace
 - a. the way that leads to peace (salvation)
5. of Christianity, the tranquil state of a soul assured of its salvation through Christ, and so fearing nothing from God and content with its earthly lot, of whatsoever sort that is
6. the blessed state of devout and upright men after death

After the reading, there are related verses that will ask some questions for you to think through and respond to.

II. READING: [Romans 5:1-21](#) (AMP)

Therefore, since we have been justified [that is, acquitted of sin, declared blameless before God] *out of* faith, [let us grasp the fact that] we have peace with God [and the joy of reconciliation with Him] through our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed). 2 Through Him we also have access by faith into this [remarkable state of] grace in which we [firmly and safely and securely] stand. Let us rejoice in our hope and the confident assurance of [experiencing and enjoying] the glory of [our great] God [the manifestation of His excellence and power]. 3 And not only this, but [with joy] let us exult in our sufferings and rejoice in our hardships, knowing that hardship (distress, pressure, trouble) produces patient endurance; 4 and endurance, proven character (spiritual maturity); and proven character, hope and confident assurance [of eternal salvation]. 5 Such hope [in God's promises] never disappoints us, because God's love has been abundantly poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us. 6 While we were still helpless [powerless to provide for our salvation], at the right time Christ died [as a substitute] for the ungodly. 7 Now it is an extraordinary thing for one to willingly give his life even for an upright man, though perhaps for a good man [one who is noble and selfless and worthy] someone might even dare to die. 8 But God clearly shows and proves His own love for us, by the fact that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us. 9 Therefore, since we have now been justified [declared free of the guilt of sin] by His blood, [how much more certain is it that] we will be saved from the wrath of God through Him. 10 For if while we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, it is much more certain, having been reconciled, that we will be saved [from the consequences of sin] by His life [that is, we will be saved because Christ lives today]. 11 Not only that, but we also rejoice in God [rejoicing in His love and perfection] through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received and enjoy our reconciliation [with God].

12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and death through sin, so death spread to all people [no one being able to stop it or escape its power], because they all sinned. 13 Sin was [committed] in the world before the Law [was given], but sin is not charged [against anyone] when there is no law [against it]. 14 Yet death ruled [over mankind] from Adam to Moses [the Lawgiver], even over those who had not sinned as Adam did. Adam is a type of Him (Christ) who was to come [but in reverse—Adam brought destruction, Christ brought salvation].

15 But the free gift [of God] is not like the trespass [because the gift of grace overwhelms the fall of man]. For if many died by one man’s trespass [Adam’s sin], much more [abundantly] did God’s grace and the gift [that comes] by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ, overflow to [benefit] the many. 16 Nor is the gift [of grace] like that which came through the one who sinned. For on the one hand the judgment [following the sin] resulted from one trespass and brought condemnation, but on the other hand the free gift resulted from many trespasses and brought justification [the release from sin’s penalty for those who believe]. 17 For if by the trespass of the one (Adam), death reigned through the one (Adam), much more surely will those who receive the abundance of grace and the free gift of righteousness reign in [eternal] life through the One, Jesus Christ.

18 So then as through one trespass [Adam’s sin] there resulted condemnation for all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. 19 For just as through one man’s disobedience [his failure to hear, his carelessness] the many were made sinners, so through the obedience of the one Man the many will be made righteous and acceptable to God and brought into right standing with Him. 20 But the Law came to increase and expand [the awareness of] the trespass [by defining and unmasking sin]. But where sin increased, [God’s remarkable, gracious gift of] grace [His unmerited favour] has surpassed it and increased all the more, 21 so that, as sin reigned in death, so also grace would reign through righteousness which brings eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Luke 2:8-14](#) (NKJV)

Now there were in the same country shepherds living out in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. 9 And behold, an angel of the Lord stood before them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them, and they were greatly afraid. 10 Then the angel said to them, “Do not be afraid, for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which will be to all people. 11 For there is born to you this day in the city of David a Saviour, who is Christ the Lord. 12 And this will be the sign to you: You will find a Babe wrapped in swaddling cloths, lying in a manger.” 13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God and saying: 14 “Glory to God in the highest, And on earth peace, goodwill toward men!”

Question: Do we see peace on earth? Who is this peace from; who is this peace to?

Response:

B. [2 John 1:3](#) (AMP)

Grace, mercy, and peace (inner calm, a sense of spiritual well-being) will be with us, from God the Father and from Jesus Christ, the Father’s Son, in truth and love.

Question: The disciples often start their letters in the Bible with this phrase; do you think it applies to you?

Response:

C. [John 14:25-28](#) (AMP)

“I have told you these things while I am still with you. 26 But the Helper (Comforter, Advocate, Intercessor—Counsellor, Strengtheners, Standby), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name [in My place, to represent Me and act on My behalf], He will teach you all things. And He will help you remember everything that I have told you. 27 Peace I leave with you; My [perfect] peace I give to you; not as the world gives do I give to you. Do not let your heart be troubled, nor let it be afraid. [Let My perfect peace calm you in every circumstance and give you courage and strength for every challenge.]

Question: Whom is the source of this “perfect peace”?

Response:

D. [1 Corinthians 14:33a](#) (AMP)

for God ... is not a God of confusion and disorder but of peace and order.

Question: Do you view God as peaceful? Why?

Response:

E. [2 Corinthians 13:11](#) (KJV) [PoG]

Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; [indeed] the God of love and peace shall be with you.

Question: How do we live in peace?

Response:

F. [Galatians 5:22-23](#) (PoG)

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering [patience, endurance, steadfastness, and perseverance over a long period of time], kindness, goodness, faith, 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.

Question: How can we nurture and experience this fruit of “inner peace” in us?

Response:

G. [Ephesians 6:13-17](#) (AMP)

Therefore, put on the complete armour of God, so that you will be able to [successfully] resist and stand your ground in the evil day [of danger], and having done everything [that the crisis demands], to stand firm [in your place, fully prepared, immovable, victorious]. 14 So stand firm and hold your ground, having tightened the wide band of truth (personal integrity, moral courage) around your waist and having put on the breastplate of righteousness (an upright heart), 15 and having strapped on your feet the gospel of peace in preparation [to face the enemy with firm-footed stability and the readiness produced by the good news]. 16 Above all, lift up the [protective] shield of faith with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God.

Question: What does the “gospel of peace” mean to you, and how can it help you?

Response:

H. [Philippians 4:4-7](#) (AMP)

Rejoice in the Lord always [delight, take pleasure in Him]; again I will say, rejoice! 5 Let your gentle spirit [your graciousness, unselfishness, mercy, tolerance, and patience] be known to all people. The Lord is near. 6 Do not be anxious or worried about anything, but in everything [every circumstance and situation] by prayer and petition with thanksgiving, continue to make your [specific] requests known to God. 7 And the peace of God [that peace which reassures the heart, that peace] which transcends all understanding, [that peace which] stands guard over your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus [is yours].

Question: Do you have peace in yourself if you ask God for something in your life?

Response:

I. [James 3:17-18](#) (AMP)

But the wisdom from above is first pure [morally and spiritually undefiled], then peace-loving [courteous, considerate], gentle, reasonable [and willing to listen], full of compassion and good fruits. It is unwavering, without [self-righteous] hypocrisy [and self-serving guile]. 18 And the seed whose fruit is righteousness (spiritual maturity) is sown in peace by those who make peace [by actively encouraging goodwill between individuals].

Question: God’s wisdom is always peace-loving; how does this compare to the world’s wisdom to you?

Response:

J. [2 Peter 1:2](#) (AMP)

Grace and peace [that special sense of spiritual well-being] be multiplied to you in the [true, intimate] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

Question: Does knowledge of God always bring grace and peace to you?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Romans 14:17](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

For the kingdom of God is not eating and drinking [*rituals and what goes into your body*], but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit [*what Lives in and manifests out from you*].

Thoughts: Too often we focus on what happens around us or goes into us that we seek peace about. But we can experience true peace by recognising the Holy Spirit inside of us—and that we do not have to attain (work for) righteousness, nor peace or joy; it has been Gifted in us, for us. And we have free and unlimited access to this!

GRACE

INTENTION:

Grace is God's provision for our everyday lives (hence why He gave us the ministry name: Provisions of Grace).

Too often, I found myself working for God, or working to live this Christian life. However, God's Grace has eliminated the need for me to abide by the Law. And likewise, is gifting me the ability to live an Abundant Life. You and God are a team and will never abandon you to be "on your own" to live this life. And moreso, you are His literal child and sibling to Jesus Christ. That's how much He wants to care for you and help meet your every need.

To quote Arthur Meintjies: Christ did all the work, we get all the reward, God gets all the Glory.

We need to see how this applies to our life here and now, and what God has provisioned us to succeed.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at God's Grace. When you go through the following scripture reading, focus on understanding what this Grace is from God and Jesus Christ. The reading is a continuation of the scripture from last week (starting at the end of Romans 5).

Of note about the scripture reading of Romans is that Paul is writing to non-Jews whom have an understanding of Mosaic Law (as having lived with and amongst Jews). Many Christians have this same concept, either the laws of the land or an understanding of Jewish Laws. However, unless you were a Jew before coming to Christ, the Mosaic Law is not something we should know. We as 'Greeks' (non-Jews) have never been under the Laws of Moses—NEVER! Moses gave them at a specific time period for a specific group of people; it never applied to the world as a whole. Moreso, the Law ended at the Cross; thus no one since the Cross has been under the Law. This is something I feel (directed at me too) that we must free ourselves from thinking the Law was ever applied to us (me).

Yet, we can take Paul's writing to the church in Rome in context to the Law in these verses, but not let the Law become the focus—the focus should be always on the accomplishment of God's Grace and Christ's Faith. i.e., don't focus on where it talks about 'sin' but focus on how sin has been destroyed and reduced to naught, having been (and always being) overcome by God's Grace. Sin and the Law are not the topic of Romans, Grace and Righteousness is—and our lives lived in this Grace and Righteousness! Furthermore, His Grace (provision) is overabundantly given to us for our need and the needs of others to go towards fulfilling His Will.

II. READING: [Romans 5:18-21](#) and [Romans 6:1-23](#) (GNT)

So then, as the one sin condemned all people, in the same way the one righteous act sets all people free and gives them life. 19 And just as all people were made sinners as the result of the disobedience of one man, in the same way they will all be put right with God as the result of the obedience of the one man.

20 Law was introduced in order to increase wrongdoing; but where sin increased, God's grace increased much more. 21 So then, just as sin ruled by means of death, so also God's grace rules by means of righteousness, leading us to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

...

What shall we say, then? Should we continue to live in sin so that God's grace will increase? 2 Certainly not! We have died to sin—how then can we go on living in it? 3 For surely you know that when we were baptized into union with Christ Jesus, we were baptized into union with his death. 4 By our baptism, then, we were buried with him and shared his death, in order that, just as Christ was raised from death by the glorious power of the Father, so also we might live a new life.

5 For since we have become one with him in dying as he did, in the same way we shall be one with him by being raised to life as he was. 6 And we know that our old being has been put to death with Christ on his cross, in order that the power of the sinful self might be destroyed, so that we should no longer be the slaves of sin. 7 For when we die, we are set free from the power of sin. 8 Since we have died with Christ, we believe that we will also live with him. 9 For we know that Christ has been raised from death and will never die again—death will no longer rule over him. 10 And so, because he died, sin has no power over him; and now he lives his life in fellowship with God. 11 In the same way you are to think of yourselves as dead, so far as sin is concerned, but living in fellowship with God through Christ Jesus.

12 Sin must no longer rule in your mortal bodies, so that you obey the desires of your natural self. 13 Nor must you surrender any part of yourselves to sin to be used for wicked purposes. Instead, give yourselves to God, as those who have been brought from death to life, and surrender your whole being to him to be used for righteous purposes. 14 Sin must not be your master; for you do not live under law but under God's grace.

15 What, then? Shall we sin, because we are not under law but under God's grace? By no means! 16 Surely you know that when you surrender yourselves as slaves to obey someone, you are in fact the slaves of the master you obey— either of sin, which results in death, or of obedience, which results in being put right with God. 17 But thanks be to God! For though at one time you were slaves to sin, you have obeyed with all your heart the truths found in the teaching you received. 18 You were set free from sin and became the slaves of righteousness. 19 (I use everyday language because of the weakness of your natural selves.) At one time you surrendered yourselves entirely as slaves to impurity and wickedness for wicked purposes. In the same way you must now surrender yourselves entirely as slaves of righteousness for holy purposes.

20 When you were the slaves of sin, you were free from righteousness. 21 What did you gain from doing the things that you are now ashamed of? The result of those things is death! 22 But now you have been set free from sin and are the slaves of God. Your gain is a life fully dedicated to him, and the result is eternal life. 23 For sin pays its wage— death; but God's free gift is eternal life in union with Christ Jesus our Lord.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [2 Corinthians 9:6-15](#) (GNT) [NKJV]

Remember that the person who plants few seeds will have a small crop; the one who plants many seeds will have a large crop. 7 You should each give, then, as you have decided, not with regret or out of a sense of duty; for God loves the one who gives gladly. 8 And God is able to give you more than you need [able to make all grace abound toward you], so that you will always have all you need for yourselves and more than enough for every good cause. 9 As the scripture says,

["He has dispersed abroad,
He has given to the poor;
His righteousness endures forever."]

10 And God, who supplies seed for the sower and bread to eat, will also supply you with all the seed you need and will make it grow and produce a rich harvest from your generosity. 11 He will always make you rich enough to be generous at all times, so that many will thank God for your gifts which they receive from us. 12 For this service you perform not only meets the needs of God's people, but also produces an outpouring of gratitude to God. 13 And because of the proof which this service of yours brings, many will give glory to God for your loyalty to the gospel of Christ, which you profess, and for your generosity in sharing with them and everyone else. 14 And so with deep affection they will pray for you because of the extraordinary grace God has shown you. 15 Let us thank God for his priceless gift!

Question: Has there been a time in your life you found you had more than enough for yourselves and others?

Response:

B. Jesus as God's personal child to take care of:

[Luke 2:40](#)

And the Child [*Jesus*] grew and became strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon Him.

[John 1:14-18](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth. 15 John bore witness of Him and cried out, saying, "This was He of whom I said, 'He who comes after me is preferred before me, for He was before me.'" 16 And of His fullness we have all received, and grace [over] grace. 17 For the law was given [by] Moses, but grace and truth came [by] Jesus Christ. 18 No one has seen God at any time. The only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, He has declared Him.

Question: God the Father provided the means and provision for His own child Jesus. Do you feel He will do the same for you as also being His Child? Do you ever doubt that God's Grace will ever be enough?

Response:

C. [2 Corinthians 12:7-10](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

And lest I should be exalted above measure by the abundance of the revelations, a thorn in the flesh was given to me, a messenger of Satan [*a literal person—most likely "Alexander the coppersmith" (2 Timothy 4:14)*] to buffet me, lest I be exalted above measure. 8 Concerning this thing I pleaded with the Lord three times that it might depart from me. 9 And He said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for My strength is made perfect in weakness." Therefore most gladly I will rather boast in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. 10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in needs, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ's sake. For when I am weak, then I am strong.

Question: Have you ever felt weak?

Response:

D. God's Grace and Christ's Faith:

[Galatians 2:20-21](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by [the faith of] the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me. 21 I do not set aside the grace of God; for if righteousness comes through the law, then Christ died in vain."

[Ephesians 2:4-10](#) (GNT) [PoG]

But God's mercy is so abundant, and his love for us is so great, 5 that while we were spiritually dead in our disobedience, he brought us to life with Christ. It is by God's grace that you have been saved. 6 In our union with Christ Jesus he raised us up with him to rule with him in the heavenly world. 7 He did this to demonstrate for all time to come the extraordinary greatness of his grace in the love he showed us in Christ Jesus. 8-9 For it is by God's grace that you have been saved through [*Christ's*] faith. It is not the result of your own efforts, but God's gift, so that no one can boast about it. 10 God has made us what we are, and in our union with Christ Jesus he has created us for a life of good deeds, which he has already prepared for us to do.

Question: Have you ever tried to earn God’s favour, or make a deal with Him?

Response:

E. [Colossians 3:12-17](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

You are the people of God; he loved you and chose you for his own. So then, you must clothe yourselves with compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience. 13 Be tolerant with one another and forgive one another whenever any of you has a complaint against someone else. You must forgive one another just as the Lord has forgiven you. 14 And to all these qualities add love, which binds all things together in perfect unity. 15 The peace that Christ gives is to guide you in the decisions you make; for it is to this peace that God has called you together in the one body. And be thankful. 16 Christ's message in all its richness must live in your hearts. Teach and instruct one another with all wisdom. Sing psalms, hymns, and [spiritual] songs; sing to God with thanksgiving in your hearts. 17 Everything you do or say, then, should be done in the name of the Lord Jesus, as you give thanks through him to God the Father.

Question: Do you sing to the Lord—either in a group, with a song playing, or making up your own song? Did you know you can even sing in Tongues (“Spiritual Songs”)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Hebrews 4:14-16](#) (GNT)

Let us, then, hold firmly to the faith we profess. For we have a great High Priest who has gone into the very presence of God—Jesus, the Son of God. 15 Our High Priest is not one who cannot feel sympathy for our weaknesses. On the contrary, we have a High Priest who was tempted in every way that we are, but did not sin. 16 Let us have confidence, then, and approach God's throne, where there is grace. There we will receive mercy and find grace to help us just when we need it.

Thoughts: Approaching God’s throne is not doing so in the distant future, but in the now! *Take time to spiritually visualize this in your imagination.* We can approach Him without fear of judgement or condemnation, because it is a Throne of GRACE. So we can bring ourselves to Him in any fashion we are in; we don’t have to first make ourselves “perfect” or “clean” to come to Him; Christ made us perfect and clean, and we can be bold in approaching Him to ask for anything—or just to get a smile and a hug from our “Dad”, sitting on His lap. So, come to Him without rejecting yourself or your circumstances, for His Grace Provision will provide for us always.

FAITH & BELIEF / UNBELIEF

INTENTION:

We have to let go of the religious notion of needing “more faith” or to just “believe more”. These are misnomers. Our only requirement is to believe (not have some level of belief). Likewise, our Faith is gifted to us for use by the Holy Spirit. We don’t need “more faith”, we only need to use the faith we have—that being the Faith of Jesus. Trying to muster up more faith or belief is a futile process that leads to disappointment. Let’s learn to just use the Faith we already have been given. That’s alot easier.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Faith (and also belief / unbelief). When we look at Jesus's ministry, we often see Him criticising people for their "lack of faith" or "unbelief"; even giving us a minimum standard of faith: a mustard seed. No person ever had perfect faith, except for Jesus Christ Himself. And it is this Faith we have access to, having Faith gifted to us, in us. It no longer becomes a matter of our production of faith (us conjuring up our own faith), but just to believe in His completion of Faith (completed work by His Faith). We don't need a mustard seed of faith (an irrelevant portion of faith) when we, as believers, have each been given His full measure of Faith ([Romans 12:3](#))! Thus, we need to see that there is a distinction between pre-Cross and post-Cross faith—for all we have to do now is believe.

For those familiar with Hebrews 11, it is a testament to great people and events of faith—each example opening "by faith..."; an amazing list of people and events! It really seems to give us hope and a push for us to have that kind of faith. But are these verses really telling us to be men and women of great faith too? NO! Because the conclusion to this list is actually the start of Hebrews 12. All these listed were pre-Cross; but we now live post-Cross (in Christ).

It shows us that even though there is such a "great cloud of witnesses" of faith, they compared not to the Faith of Jesus, "the author and finisher of Faith". Hebrews 11 is a build-up to Christ Jesus who mastered and finished Faith once-and-for-all. Being not a requirement that we have our own faith, but a requirement that we "look unto Jesus" as our Faith—believing in that Faith. Thus, not being 'our Faith IN Christ', but 'The Faith OF Christ'! Grace and Faith are Gifts!

Further insight and reading: <http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2018/07/hebrews-11-faith.html>
<http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/moving-forward-to-position-of.html>

II. READING: [Hebrews 11:1-40](#) and [Hebrews 12:1-2](#) (EHV) [PoG]

Faith is being sure about what we hope for, being convinced about things we do not see. 2 For by this faith the ancients were commended in Scripture.

3 By faith we know that the universe was created by God's word, so that what is seen did not come from visible things.

4 By faith Abel offered a better sacrifice to God than Cain did. By faith he was commended in Scripture as righteous; God testified favourably about his gifts. And by faith he still speaks, even though he is dead.

5 By faith Enoch was taken up, so that he would not experience death, and he was not found because God took him away. In fact, before he was taken away, he was commended in Scripture as one who "pleased God". 6 And without faith it is impossible to please God. Indeed, it is necessary for the one who approaches God to believe that he exists and that he rewards those who seek him.

7 By faith Noah, when he was warned about things that had not been seen before, built an ark, in reverent fear, in order to save his family. By it he condemned the world and became an heir of the righteousness that is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham obeyed when he was called to go to a place that he was going to receive as an inheritance, and he left without knowing where he was going.

9 By faith he lived as a stranger in the Promised Land, as if it did not belong to him, dwelling in tents along with Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. 10 For he was looking forward to the city that has foundations, whose architect and builder is God.

11 By faith Abraham also received the ability to conceive children, even though Sarah herself was barren and he was past the normal age, because he considered him faithful who made the promise. 12 And so from one man, and he as good as dead, descendants were born as numerous as the stars in the sky and as countless as the sand along the seashore.

13 One by one, all of these died in faith, without having received the things that were promised, but they saw and welcomed them from a distance. They confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. 14 Indeed, people who say things like that make it clear that they are looking for a land of their own. 15 And if they were remembering the land they had come from, they would have had an opportunity to return. 16 Instead, they were longing for a better land—a heavenly one. For that reason, God is not ashamed to be called their God, because he prepared a city for them.

17 By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered Isaac. This man, who received the promises, was ready to offer his only son, 18 about whom it was said, “Through Isaac your offspring will be traced.” 19 He reasoned that God also had the ability to raise him from the dead, and in a figurative sense, Abraham did receive him back from the dead.

20 By faith Isaac also blessed Jacob and Esau about things that were going to happen.

21 By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed each of Joseph’s sons and worshipped as he leaned on the top of his staff.

22 By faith Joseph, as he neared the end of his life, mentioned the Exodus of the sons of Israel and gave instructions about his bones.

23 By faith Moses was hidden by his parents for three months after he was born, because they saw he was a special child, and they were not afraid of the king’s order.

24 By faith Moses refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter when he grew up. 25 He chose to be mistreated with God’s people rather than enjoy sin for a little while. 26 He considered disgrace for the sake of Christ as greater wealth than the treasures of Egypt, because he was looking ahead to his reward.

27 By faith he left Egypt without fearing the king’s wrath, because he persevered as one who sees him who is invisible.

28 By faith he celebrated the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, so that the destroyer of the firstborn would not strike them down.

29 By faith they passed through the Red Sea, as if going through on dry ground. When the Egyptians tried it, they were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell after the people marched around them for seven days.

31 By faith Rahab the prostitute did not perish with the unbelievers, because she welcomed the spies in peace.

32 And what more should I say? There would not be enough time for me to continue to tell about Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel, and the prophets. 33 By faith they conquered kingdoms, carried out justice, obtained things that were promised, shut the mouths of lions, 34 quenched the power of fire, escaped the edges of the sword, were made powerful after being weak, became mighty in battle, and caused foreign armies to flee. 35 Women received back their dead by resurrection. And others who were tortured did not accept their release, so that they may take part in a better resurrection. 36 Still others experienced mocking and lashes, in addition to chains and imprisonment. 37 They were stoned; they were sawed in two; they were tempted; they were killed with the sword; they went around in sheepskins and goatskins, needy, afflicted, and mistreated. 38 The world was not worthy of them as they wandered in deserts and mountains and caves and holes in the ground.

39 All of these were commended in Scripture by faith, yet they did not receive what was promised, 40 because God had planned something better for us, namely, that they would not reach the goal apart from us.

1 Therefore [for this reason], since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses, let us get rid of every burden and the sin that so easily ensnares us [*the Law*], and let us run with patient endurance the race that is laid out for us. 2 Let us keep our eyes fixed on Jesus, who is the author of our faith and the one who brings it to its goal. In view of the joy set before him, he endured the cross, disregarding its shame, and has taken his seat at the right hand of God’s throne.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Matthew 9:27-30a](#) (EHV)

As Jesus left that place, two blind men followed him, calling out, "Have mercy on us, Son of David!" 28 When he entered the house, the blind men came to him. Jesus said to them, "Do you believe that I am able to do this?" They told him, "Yes, Lord." 29 Then he touched their eyes and said, "According to your faith let it be done for you." 30 And their eyes were opened.

Question: Do you admit to the Lord what you are struggling with? Do you feel He will have mercy on you?

Response:

B. Having both belief and unbelief together:

[Mark 9:14-29](#) (EHV) [PoG]

When they returned to the other disciples, they saw a large crowd around them, and some experts in the law were arguing with them. 15 As soon as all the people in the crowd saw Jesus, they were very excited and ran to greet him. 16 He asked them, "What are you arguing about with them?"

17 One man from the crowd answered him, "Teacher, I brought you my son, who has a spirit that makes him unable to speak. 18 Wherever it seizes him, it throws him down, and he foams at the mouth, grinds his teeth, and becomes rigid. I asked your disciples to drive it out, but they could not."

19 "O unbelieving generation," Jesus replied. "How long will I be with you? How long will I put up with you? Bring him to me."

20 They brought the boy to Jesus. As soon as the spirit saw him, it threw the boy into a convulsion. He fell on the ground and rolled around, foaming at the mouth.

21 Jesus asked the boy's father, "How long has this been happening to him?"

"From childhood," he said. 22 "It has often thrown him into the fire and into the water to kill him. But if you can do anything, have compassion on us and help us."

23 "If you can?" Jesus said to him. "All things are possible for the one who believes."

24 The child's father immediately cried out and said with tears, "I do believe. Help me with my unbelief!"

25 When Jesus saw that a crowd was quickly gathering, he rebuked the unclean spirit. "You mute and deaf spirit," he said, "I command you to come out of him and never enter him again!"

26 The spirit screamed, shook the boy violently, and came out. The boy looked so much like a corpse that many of them said, "He's dead!" 27 But Jesus took him by the hand, raised him up, and he stood up.

28 When Jesus went into a house, his disciples asked him privately, "Why were we not able to drive it out?"

29 He said to them, "This kind [*of unbelief*] cannot be driven out, except by prayer and fasting."

[Matthew 17:19-21](#) (EHV) [PoG]

Then the disciples came to Jesus privately and said, "Why were we unable to drive it out?" 20 He said to them, "Because of your little faith [*unbelief*]. Amen I tell you: If you have faith like a mustard seed, you will tell this

mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you. 21 But this kind [of *unbelief*] does not go out except by prayer and fasting."

Question: What did the father admit he needed help with? Will the Lord accept our need for help with it?

Response:

C. [Acts 3:1-8; 11-16](#) (EHV) [PoG]

Peter and John were going up to the temple at the ninth hour, an hour of prayer. 2 A certain man who was lame from birth was carried there every day and placed at the temple gate, which is called Beautiful, so that he could beg for donations from those entering the temple. 3 When he saw Peter and John about to enter the temple, he asked them for a donation.

4 Peter looked directly at him, as did John. Peter said, "Look at us." 5 So the man paid close attention to them, expecting to receive something from them.

6 But Peter said, "Silver and gold I do not have, but what I have I will give you. In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene, get up and walk!" 7 Peter took him by the right hand and raised him up, and immediately the man's feet and ankles were made strong. 8 Jumping up, he stood and began to walk. He entered the temple courts with them, walking, jumping, and praising God.

11 While the man held on to Peter and John, all the people came running toward them in utter amazement in the area called Solomon's Colonnade.

12 When Peter saw this, he addressed the people: "Men of Israel, why are you amazed at this? Why are you staring at us, as if by our own power or godliness we have made this man walk? 13 The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, glorified his servant Jesus, whom you handed over and disowned in the presence of Pilate, though he had decided to release him. 14 You disowned the Holy and Righteous One and asked to have a murderer given to you. 15 You killed the Author of Life, whom God raised from the dead. We are witnesses of this. 16 And on the basis of [faith, his name], it is the name of Jesus that has strengthened this man, whom you see and know. This faith that comes through Jesus has given him this perfect health in the presence of all of you.

Question: Did the lame man or the disciples have faith?

Response:

D. Authority and instruction given:

[Mark 16:15-18](#) (EHV)

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. 17 "These signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons. They will speak in new languages. 18 They will pick up

snakes. And if they drink any deadly poison, it will not harm them. They will lay their hands on the sick, and they will get well.”

[John 14:11-14](#) (EHV)

Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me. Or else believe because of the works themselves. 12 “Amen, Amen, I tell you: The one who believes in me will do the works that I am doing. And he will do even greater works than these, because I am going to the Father. 13 I will do whatever you ask in my name so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If you ask me for anything in my name, I will do it.

Question: Do you need faith for these signs and wonders to transpire in your life?

Response:

E. [Romans 1:16-17](#) (NKJV)

For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for it is the power of God to salvation for everyone who believes, for the Jew first and also for the Greek. 17 For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith; as it is written, “The just shall live by faith.”

Question: Whose faith?

Response:

F. Focusing on the unseen with Christ’s Faith:

[2 Corinthians 4:13-18](#) (EHV)

Since we have that same spirit of faith, which corresponds to what is written: “I believed; therefore, I have spoken,” we also believe, and therefore we speak. 14 For we know that the one who raised the Lord Jesus will also raise us with Jesus and bring us (together with you) into his presence. 15 In fact, all this is for your benefit, so that as grace increases, it will overflow to the glory of God, as more and more people give thanks. 16 Therefore we are not discouraged. But even if our outer self is wasting away, yet our inner self is being renewed day by day. 17 Yes, our momentary, light trouble produces for us an eternal weight of glory that is far beyond any comparison. 18 We are not focusing on what is seen, but on what is not seen. For the things that are seen are temporary, but the things that are not seen are eternal.

[Psalms 116:7-10a](#) (EHV)

Return, my soul, to your rest, for the Lord has accomplished his purpose for you. 8 Indeed, you have delivered my soul from death, my eye from weeping, my foot from stumbling, 9 so that I may walk before the Lord in the land of the living. 10 I believed. Therefore, I have spoken.

Question: We all have the same spirit of faith! What can we believe for in these verses?

Response:

G. [Galatians 5:22-23](#) (PoG)

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering [patience, endurance, steadfastness, and perseverance over a long period of time], kindness, goodness, faith, 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.

Question: The Lord cares so much for our wellbeing that He takes on the responsibility to produce all this fruit (including faith) for us. Do you believe this for yourself?

Response:

H. [Ephesians 4:4-6](#) (EHV)

There is one body and one Spirit, just as also you were called in the one hope of your calling. 5 There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6 one God and Father of all, who is over all, and through all, and in us all.

Question: There are not multiple types of faith, just one. How can you accept this one faith in your life?

Response:

I. [Colossians 2:6-15](#) (EHV) [PoG]

Therefore, just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord [*by believing*], continue to walk in him, 7 by being rooted and built up in him, and strengthened in the faith just as you were taught, while you overflow in faith with thanksgiving. 8 See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deceit, which are in accord with human tradition, namely, the basic principles of the world, but not in accord with Christ. 9 For all the fullness of God's being dwells bodily in Christ. 10 And you have been brought to fullness in him. Christ is the head over every ruler and authority. 11 You were also circumcised in him, with a circumcision not done by human hands, in the putting off of the body of the sins of the flesh, in the circumcision of Christ, 12 when you were buried with Christ in baptism. And in baptism you were also raised with him through the faith worked by the God who raised Christ from the dead. 13 Even when you were dead in your trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, God made you alive with Christ by forgiving us all our trespasses. 14 God erased the record of our debt brought against us by his legal demands. This record stood against us, but he took it away by nailing it to the cross. 15 After disarming the rulers and authorities, he made a public display of them by triumphing over them in Christ.

Question: We can recognise again that it is a matter of the Lord's Faith: "through the faith worked by God", not our own. Do you believe this revelation that you have been brought to fullness in Christ and God lives in you?

HEALTH AND HEALING

INTENTION:

God wants you well, and we should never second-guess that.

Christ broke the curse of sickness and disease through the Cross; let's believe this.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Health and Healing—not only for a believer, but for everyone. This is a matter of what Christ accomplished for us—Jesus not only demonstrated the Lord’s will regarding health and healing but took upon Himself all sickness, disease, deformities, missing body parts, birth defects, mental illness, and all.

As such, it should not be a mystery to us what God’s Will is in this matter for our own personal lives, but everyone’s life. We will see how Jesus (being the exact representation of God) healed all people, not leaving anyone unhealed; nor giving anyone a disease. Additionally, we can look at Jesus’s instructions to both His disciples and to all believers; seeing the disciples themselves performing miracles of healing both during Jesus’s ministry and after the Cross.

Furthermore, we can look at the lives of the disciples and see they never reveal to us that they suffered one bit from any sickness or disease themselves (only persecution), giving us hope and ability to do the same in our lives.

NB: Paul’s “thorn in the flesh” (2 Corinthians 12:7-10) was not sickness but persecution from a literal person sent by Satan (this being the “messenger of Satan”)—Paul shares with us separately that he was greatly harmed by the evil of “Alexander the coppersmith” (2 Timothy 4:14). This is who I believe was Paul’s “thorn in the flesh”. Neither do I believe Paul had eye problems (eye illness): <https://bornofspirit.net/was-paul-sick-when-he-met-the-galatians/>

There are numerous teachings on health and healing, but I have found these people and teachings have helped me better understand that God wants me (us) well: Andrew Wommack (www.awmi.net/healing/), Bill Johnson (www.bjm.org/core-values/healing/), Curry Blake (Divine Healing Technician Training) (www.jglm.org/videos/), and the testimonies of the late Dave Duell with the giftings of the Holy Spirit (www.faithministries.ws/).

Much of what we will discuss here in this Bible Study pertains to understanding what was discussed in the previous Bible Study on Faith & Belief / Unbelief—it doesn’t require us to have faith to experience health and healing, just believing in the Faith of Christ Jesus (i.e. believing that Jesus Christ can accomplish it because of His Faith).

We are going to start off first with understanding the Body (Bread) and Blood (Wine) of Jesus. Additionally, we will be looking into the meanings behind the original Hebrew and Greek words used in verses.

II. READING: [John 6:26-58](#) (NKJV)

Jesus answered them and said, “Most assuredly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled. 27 Do not labour for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him.”

28 Then they said to Him, “What shall we do, that we may work the works of God?”

29 Jesus answered and said to them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.”

30 Therefore they said to Him, “What sign will You perform then, that we may see it and believe You? What work will You do? 31 Our fathers ate the manna in the desert; as it is written, ‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’”

32 Then Jesus said to them, “Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.”

34 Then they said to Him, “Lord, give us this bread always.”

35 And Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst. 36 But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. 37 All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. 38 For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me. 39 This is the will of the Father who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. 40 And this is the will of Him who sent Me, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in Him may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.”

41 The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, “I am the bread which came down from heaven.” 42 And they said, “Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that He says, ‘I have come down from heaven’?”

43 Jesus therefore answered and said to them, “Do not murmur among yourselves. 44 No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up at the last day. 45 It is written in the prophets, ‘And they shall all be taught by God.’ Therefore everyone who has heard and learned from the Father comes to Me. 46 Not that anyone has seen the Father, except He who is from God; He has seen the Father. 47 Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me has everlasting life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and are dead. 50 This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world.”

52 The Jews therefore quarrelled among themselves, saying, “How can this Man give us His flesh to eat?”

53 Then Jesus said to them, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you. 54 Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. 56 He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me. 58 This is the bread which came down from heaven—not as your fathers ate the manna, and are dead. He who eats this bread will live forever.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. The “Lord’s Supper”:

[Matthew 26:26-28](#) (NKJV)

And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to the disciples and said, “Take, eat; this is My body.” 27 Then He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, “Drink from it, all of you. 28 For this is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

[Mark 14:22-25](#) (NKJV)

And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to them and said, “Take, eat; this is My body.” 23 Then He took the cup, and when He had given thanks He gave it to them, and they all drank from it. 24 And He said to them, “This is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many. 25 Assuredly, I say to you, I will no longer drink of the fruit of the vine until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God.”

[Luke 22:14-20](#) (NKJV)

When the hour had come, He sat down, and the twelve apostles with Him. 15 Then He said to them, “With fervent desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer; 16 for I say to you, I will no longer eat of it until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God.” 17 Then He took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, “Take this and divide it among yourselves; 18 for I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes.” 19 And He took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to them, saying, “This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me.” 20 Likewise He also took the cup after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant in My blood, which is shed for you.

Question: What does the bread (Body) and wine (Blood) mean for you?

Response:

B. [1 Corinthians 11:23-34](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

26 For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; 24 and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." 25 In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." 26 For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.

27 Therefore whoever eats this bread or drinks this cup of the Lord in an unworthy manner will be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. 28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of the bread and drink of the cup. 29 For he who eats and drinks in an unworthy manner eats and drinks judgment [condemnation] to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. 30 For this reason many are weak and sick among you, and many sleep. 31 For if we would judge ourselves, we would not be judged. 32 But when we are judged, we are [trained and instructed] by the Lord, that we may not be condemned [judged] with the world.

33 Therefore, my brethren, when you come together to eat, wait for one another. 34 But if anyone is hungry, let him eat at home, lest you come together for judgment. And the rest I will set in order when I come.

Question: How did they (do we) take "Communion" in an unworthy way?

Response:

C. [Colossians 1:13-20](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

[God the Father] has delivered us from the power of darkness and conveyed us into the kingdom of the Son of His love, 14 in whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins. 15 He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. 16 For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him. 17 And He is before all things, and in Him all things consist. 18 And He is the head of the body, the church, who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that in all things He may have the pre-eminence. 19 For it pleased the Father that in Him all the fullness should dwell, 20 and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross.

...

See also [Hebrews 9 & 10](#) regarding sacrificial blood: the relationship between the sacrifices done through the Law and how Jesus Christ (through the Cross) exacted that required blood-sacrifice (atonement) for sins once-and-for-all-time.

Question: What did the Blood of Jesus Christ accomplish?

Response:

D. Taking our sickness and disease (prophesised, carried-out, completed):

[Isaiah 53:4-5](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

Surely He has borne our griefs [[H2483](#): Sicknesses] And carried our sorrows [[H4341](#): Physical pain, Mental pain, Sorrow]; Yet we esteemed Him stricken, Smitten [[H5221](#): struck, hit, beaten, slayed, killed, scourged] by God, and afflicted. 5 But He was wounded [[H2490](#): defiled, polluted, desecrated, fatally wounded, pierced] for our transgressions, He was bruised [[H1792](#): crushed, broken, shattered] for our iniquities; The chastisement for our peace was upon Him, And by His stripes [[H2250](#): bruises, stripes, wounds, blows] we are healed [[H7495](#): literally healed, healthful, in order to get healed].

[Matthew 8:16-17](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

When evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick, 17 that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: "He Himself took our infirmities [[G769](#): weakness, infirmity of the body (feebleness of health or sickness) or soul (want of strength)], And bore our sicknesses [[G3554](#): disease, sickness]."

[1 Peter 2:24](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

[Christ] Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness—by whose stripes you were healed [[G2390](#): to cure, heal, make whole (literally or figuratively)].

Question: What did Christ Jesus do through His Body? Do you see this as literal (physical) or figurative (spiritual)?

Response:

E. Jesus tells us where sickness and disease come from:

[Matthew 12:22-28](#) (NKJV)

Then one was brought to Him who was demon-possessed, blind and mute; and He healed him, so that the blind and mute man both spoke and saw. 23 And all the multitudes were amazed and said, "Could this be the Son of David?" 24 Now when the Pharisees heard it they said, "This fellow does not cast out demons except by Beelzebub, the ruler of the demons." 25 But Jesus knew their thoughts, and said to them: "Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and every city or house divided against itself will not stand. 26 If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then will his kingdom stand? 27 And if I cast out demons by Beelzebub, by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. 28 But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, surely the kingdom of God has come upon you.

[Luke 13:10-17](#) (NKJV)

Now He was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath. 11 And behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bent over and could in no way raise herself up. 12 But when Jesus saw her, He called her to Him and said to her, "Woman, you are loosed from your infirmity." 13 And He laid His hands on her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. 14 But the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because Jesus had healed on the Sabbath; and he said to the crowd, "There are six days on which men ought to work; therefore come and be healed on them, and not on the Sabbath day." 15 The Lord then answered him and said, "Hypocrite! Does not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his ox or donkey from the stall, and lead it away to water it? 16 So ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound—

think of it—for eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath?” 17 And when He said these things, all His adversaries were put to shame; and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by Him.

[John 9:1-7](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. 2 And His disciples asked Him, saying, “Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?” 3 Jesus answered, “Neither this man nor his parents sinned, [nevertheless] that the works of God should be revealed in him. 4 I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. 5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.” 6 When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. 7 And He said to him, “Go, wash in the pool of Siloam” (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing.

[John 10:10](#) (NKJV)

The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.

Question: Do you believe God is the ones whom makes people sick or have birth-defects?

Response:

F. Jesus demonstrates all kinds of healing:

[Matthew 4:23](#)

And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all kinds of sickness and all kinds of disease among the people.

[Matthew 8:16](#)

When evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick.

[15:30](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

Then great multitudes came to Him, having with them the lame, blind, mute, maimed [crooked body members, injured, disabled, mutilated], and many others; and they laid them down at Jesus’ feet, and He healed them.

[Mark 6:56](#) (NKJV)

Wherever He entered, into villages, cities, or the country, they laid the sick in the marketplaces, and begged Him that they might just touch the hem of His garment. And as many as touched Him were made well.

[Luke 4:40](#) (NKJV)

When the sun was setting, all those who had any that were sick with various diseases brought them to Him; and He laid His hands on every one of them and healed them.

[Luke 6:19](#) (NKJV)

And the whole multitude sought to touch Him, for power went out from Him and healed them all.

Question: Did Jesus ever reject healing? Do you feel He wants to heal you or someone you know?

Response:

G. Unbelief and healing:

[Mark 8:22-26](#) (NKJV)

Then He came to Bethsaida; and they brought a blind man to Him, and begged Him to touch him. 23 So He took the blind man by the hand and led him out of the town. And when He had spit on his eyes and put His hands on him, He asked him if he saw anything. 24 And he looked up and said, "I see men like trees, walking." 25 Then He put His hands on his eyes again and made him look up. And he was restored and saw everyone clearly. 26 Then He sent him away to his house, saying, "Neither go into the town, nor tell anyone in the town."

[Luke 10:10-14](#) (NKJV)

But whatever city you enter, and they do not receive you, go out into its streets and say, 11 'The very dust of your city which clings to us we wipe off against you. Nevertheless know this, that the kingdom of God has come near you.' 12 But I say to you that it will be more tolerable in that Day for Sodom than for that city. 13 "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 But it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment than for you.

[Mark 6:1-6](#) (NKJV)

Then He went out from there and came to His own country, and His disciples followed Him. 2 And when the Sabbath had come, He began to teach in the synagogue. And many hearing Him were astonished, saying, "Where did this Man get these things? And what wisdom is this which is given to Him, that such mighty works are performed by His hands! 3 Is this not the carpenter, the Son of Mary, and brother of James, Joses, Judas, and Simon? And are not His sisters here with us?" So they were offended at Him. 4 But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is not without honour except in his own country, among his own relatives, and in his own house." 5 Now He could do no mighty work there, except that He laid His hands on a few sick people and healed them. 6 And He marvelled because of their unbelief. Then He went about the villages in a circuit, teaching.

Question: Why did Jesus have to lead the blind man out of the city? What limited Jesus in His hometown?

Response:

H. Believers instructed:

[Matthew 10:1,7-8](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

And when He had called His twelve disciples to Him, He gave them power over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all kinds of sickness and all kinds of disease. 7 And as you go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom of heaven is at hand.' 8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out demons. Freely you have received, freely give [[Acts 3:6](#)].

[Mark 6:7,12-13](#) (NKJV)

And He called the twelve to Himself, and began to send them out two by two, and gave them power over unclean spirits. 12 So they went out and preached that people should repent. 13 And they cast out many demons, and anointed with oil many who were sick, and healed them.

[John 14:12-14](#) (NKJV)

“Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me, the works that I do he will do also; and greater works than these he will do, because I go to My Father. 13 And whatever you ask in My name, that I will do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If you ask anything in My name, I will do it.”

[Mark 16:14-18](#) (NKJV)

Later He appeared to the eleven as they sat at the table; and He rebuked their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who had seen Him after He had risen. 15 And He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature. 16 He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned. 17 And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new tongues; 18 they will take up serpents; and if they drink anything deadly, it will by no means hurt them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover.”

Question: Jesus sent His disciples out to do as He Himself did; why could they only heal “many” and not all? What instructions did Jesus give, not only to the disciples, but to all those “who believe”? Is this you?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 17:11-19](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

Now it happened as He went to Jerusalem that He passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. 12 Then as He entered a certain village, there met Him ten men who were lepers, who stood afar off. 13 And they lifted up their voices and said, “Jesus, Master, have mercy on us!” 14 So when He saw them, He said to them, “Go, show yourselves to the priests.” And so it was that as they went, they were cleansed [[G2511](#): to make clean physically (cured), morally, and Levitically]. 15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed [[G2390](#): to cure, heal, make whole (literally or figuratively)], returned, and with a loud voice glorified God, 16 and fell down on his face at His feet, giving Him thanks. And he was a Samaritan. 17 So Jesus answered and said, “Were there not ten cleansed [[G2511](#)]? But where are the nine? 18 Were there not any found who returned to give glory to God except this foreigner?” 19 And He said to him, “Arise, go your way. Your faith has made you well [[G4982](#): to be made whole, to save/keep saved, to make well, heal, restore to health, preserve].”

Thoughts: As lepers, these 10 men were outcasts from the city; not able to interact with anyone but other lepers outside the city gates. They were considered unclean; which is why they kept their distance. Yet their desire was to be made clean (to no longer be outcasts or have leprosy)—which is why they called out to Jesus believing He could heal them. As they went to show themselves to the priests, they were cleansed (cured) of leprosy—yet one (the Samaritan) went back to praise God (not to just go get religious approval). When he did, he was made whole. As suffering from leprosy, it was common to lose fingers, toes, and other parts of the body to the disease. For him to be made whole was for these missing parts to grow back and be restored to his God-designed normalcy. (Yes, missing limbs and organs can grow back!) The other 9 were cured of their sickness, but still had

TRIALS / TEMPTATIONS / DISCIPLINE

INTENTION:

I grew up feeling that it was the Lord always bringing (or “allowing”) hardships on my life—always testing me over and over again. Of which I always seemed to fail.

But this is not the case: it is “the thief comes to kill, steal, and destroy”.

It’s not God testing you to whom you are in this world; it’s this world that is testing you to whom you are in Christ.

There is freedom knowing God is not out to test, tempt, or physically discipline you.

TRIALS / TEMPTATIONS / DISCIPLINE

Bible Study: Lesson 009



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Trials / Temptations / Discipline. Who brings trials and temptations into our lives—is it God? And then does He also punish us through harsh discipline?

We learned in Lesson 005 about God's peace and us having peace with Him (plus all the other lessons clarifying the Character and Nature of God). If God is Good, Love, Jesus Christ, Holy Spirit, Peace, and Grace, why would we believe God is out to punish me—and even moreso, believe that He is the one testing, trying, and tempting us to fail to then justify some kind of punishment to us? We must let go that God does these things!

We will look at several scriptures following, and even correct some poor translations that can make us think God is willing and able to whip us into correction. God's wrath and anger for any and all humans was exacted onto Jesus Christ Himself—the Lord actually enjoyed doing that for our benefit: "It pleased the Lord to crush Him" ([Isaiah 53](#)). So, we need to accept that God is not the one trying, testing, tempting, nor physically disciplining us.

For additional reading, see also: <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/raising-children-as-lord-raises-us.html>
<https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2016/05/trials-by-flesh-05-20-16.html>

II. READING: [James 1:1-25](#) (NLV) [PoG]

This letter is from James. I am a servant owned by God and the Lord Jesus Christ. I greet the twelve family groups of the Jewish nation living in many parts of the world.

2 My Christian brothers, you should be happy when you have all kinds of tests ([G3986](#)). 3 You know these prove ([G1383](#)) your faith. It helps you not to give up. 4 Learn well how to wait so you will be strong and complete and in need of nothing.

5 If you do not have wisdom, ask God for it. He is always ready to give it to you and will never say you are wrong for asking. 6 You must have faith as you ask Him. You must not doubt. Anyone who doubts is like a wave which is pushed around by the sea. 7 Such a man will get nothing from the Lord. 8 The man who has two ways of thinking [*belief and unbelief together* ([Mark 9:23-24](#))] changes in everything he does.

9 A Christian brother who has few riches of this world should be happy for what he has. He is great in the eyes of God. 10 But a rich man should be happy even if he loses everything. He is like a flower that will die. 11 The sun comes up with burning heat. The grass dries up and the flower falls off. It is no longer beautiful. The rich man will die also and all his riches will be gone. 12 The man who does not give up when tests ([G3986](#)) come is happy. [Because ([G3754](#)) he is accepted ([G1384](#)) and holds ([G2983](#))] the crown of life. God has promised this to those who love Him.

13 When you are tempted ([G3985](#)) to do wrong, do not say, "God is tempting ([G3985](#)) me." God cannot be tempted ([G551](#)). He will never tempt ([G3985](#)) anyone. 14 A man is tempted ([G3985](#)) to do wrong when he lets himself be led by what his bad thoughts tell him to do. 15 When he does what his bad thoughts tell him to do, he sins. When sin completes its work, it brings death.

16 My Christian brothers, do not be fooled about this. 17 Whatever is good and perfect comes to us from God. He is the One Who made all light. He does not change. No shadow is made by His turning. 18 He gave us our new lives through the truth of His Word only because He wanted to. We are the first children in His family.

19 My Christian brothers, you know everyone should listen much and speak little. He should be slow to become angry. 20 A man's anger does not allow him to be right with God. 21 Put out of your life all that is unclean and wrong. Receive with a gentle spirit the Word that was taught. It has the power to save your souls from the punishment of sin.

22 Obey the Word of God. If you hear only and do not act, you are only fooling yourself. 23 Anyone who hears the Word of God and does not obey is like a man looking at his face in a mirror. 24 After he sees himself and goes away, he forgets what he looks like. 25 But the one who keeps looking into God's perfect Law and does not forget it will do what it says and be happy as he does it. God's Word makes men free.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Matthew 4:1-11](#) (NLV)

Jesus was led by the Holy Spirit to a desert. There He was tempted by the devil. 2 Jesus went without food for forty days and forty nights. After that He was hungry. 3 The devil came tempting Him and said, "If You are the Son of God, tell these stones to be made into bread." 4 But Jesus said, "It is written, 'Man is not to live on bread only. Man is to live by every word that God speaks.'"

5 Then the devil took Jesus up to Jerusalem, the holy city. He had Jesus stand on the highest part of the house of God. 6 The devil said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down. It is written, 'He has told His angels to look after You. In their hands they will hold You up. Then Your foot will not hit against a stone.'" 7 Jesus said to the devil, "It is written also, 'You must not tempt the Lord your God.'"

8 Again the devil took Jesus to a very high mountain. He had Jesus look at all the nations of the world to see how great they were. 9 He said to Jesus, "I will give You all these nations if You will get down at my feet and worship me." 10 Jesus said to the devil, "Get away, Satan. It is written, 'You must worship the Lord your God. You must obey Him only.'" 11 Then the devil went away from Jesus. Angels came and cared for Him.

Question: Did God tempt Jesus to "try His faith"?

Response:

B. [1 John 2:15-17](#) (NLV)

Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the Father's love is not in him. 16 For everything that is in the world does not come from the Father. The desires of our flesh, and the things our eyes see and want, and the pride of this life come from the world. 17 The world and all its desires will pass away. But the man who obeys God and does what He wants done will live forever.

Question: Do you recognise these three forms of temptation as what Jesus was tempted with in Matthew 4? Looking at your own life, can you see yourself being tested by these three forms of temptation?

Response:

C. [Matthew 26:36-46](#) (NLV) [PoG]

Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane. He said to them, "You sit here while I go over there to pray." 37 He took Peter and the two sons of Zebedee with Him. He began to have much sorrow and a heavy heart. 38 Then He said to them, "My soul is very sad. My soul is so full of sorrow I am ready to die. You stay here and watch with Me."

39 He went on a little farther and got down with His face on the ground. He prayed, "My Father, if it can be done, take away what is before Me. Even so, not what I want but what You want."

40 Then He came to the followers and found them sleeping. He said to Peter, “Were you not able to watch with Me one hour? 41 Watch and pray so that you will not be tempted. Man’s spirit is willing, but the body does not have the power to do it [the flesh is weak].”

42 He went away again the second time. He prayed, saying, “My Father, if this must happen to Me, may whatever You want be done.” 43 He came and found them asleep again. Their eyes were heavy. 44 He went away from them the third time and prayed the same prayer.

45 Then He came to His followers and asked them, “Are you still sleeping and getting your rest? As I speak, the time has come when the Son of Man will be handed over to sinners. 46 Get up and let us go. See! The man who will hand Me over is near.”

Question: What were the disciples being tempted to do? What was Jesus battling?

Response:

D. [Galatians 5:16-24](#) (NLV) [PoG]

I say this to you: Let the Holy Spirit lead you in each step. Then you will not please your sinful old selves [the flesh]. 17 The things our old selves [the flesh] want to do are against what the Holy Spirit wants. The Holy Spirit does not agree with what our sinful old selves [the flesh] want. These two are against each other. So you cannot do what you want to do. 18 If you let the Holy Spirit lead you, the Law no longer has power over you. 19 The things your sinful old self [the flesh] wants to do are: sex sins, sinful desires, wild living, 20 worshiping false gods, witchcraft, hating, fighting, being jealous, being angry, arguing, dividing into little groups and thinking the other groups are wrong, false teaching, 21 wanting something someone else has, killing other people, using strong drink, wild parties, and all things like these. I told you before and I am telling you again that those who do these things [will not inherit the Kingdom of God]. 22 But the fruit that comes from having the Holy Spirit in our lives is: love, joy, peace, not giving up, being kind, being good, having faith, 23 being gentle, and being the boss over our own desires. The Law is not against these things. 24 Those of us who belong to Christ have nailed our sinful old selves [the flesh] on His cross. Our sinful desires are now dead.

Question: Do you ever feel the conflict in you between the flesh and the Holy Spirit?

Response:

E. [1 Peter 1:3-9](#) (NLV) [PoG]

Let us thank the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. It was through His loving-kindness that we were born again to a new life and have a hope that never dies. This hope is ours because Jesus was raised from the dead. 4 We will receive the great things that we have been promised. They are being kept safe in heaven for us. They are pure and will not pass away. They will never be lost. 5 You are being kept by the power of God because you put your trust in Him and you will be saved from the punishment of sin at the end of the world.

6 With this hope you can be happy even if you need to have sorrow and all kinds of tests for awhile. 7 These tests have come to prove your faith and to show that it is good. Gold, which can be destroyed, is tested by fire. Your faith is worth much more than gold and it must be tested also. Then your faith will bring thanks and shining-greatness and honour to Jesus Christ when He comes again. 8 You have never seen Him but you love Him. You cannot see Him now but you are putting your trust in Him. And you have joy so great that words cannot tell about it. 9 [You will be receiving the end of your faith: the salvation of your soul].

Question: Whose testing your faith?

Response:

F. [1 Corinthians 10:13](#) (NLV)

You have never been tempted to sin in any different way than other people. God is faithful. He will not allow you to be tempted more than you can take. But when you are tempted, He will make a way for you to keep from falling into sin.

Question: Do we have the ability to make choices when being tempted?

Response:

G. [2 Corinthians 4:7-12;16-18](#) (NLV)

We have this light from God in our human bodies. This shows that the power is from God. It is not from ourselves. 8 We are pressed on every side, but we still have room to move. We are often in much trouble, but we never give up. 9 People make it hard for us, but we are not left alone. We are knocked down, but we are not destroyed. 10 We carry marks on our bodies that show the death of Jesus. This is how Jesus makes His life seen in our bodies. 11 Every day of our life we face death because of Jesus. In this way, His life is seen in our bodies. 12 Death is working in us because we work for the Lord, but His life is working in you.

16 This is the reason we do not give up. Our human body is wearing out. But our spirits are getting stronger every day. 17 The little troubles we suffer now for a short time are making us ready for the great things God is going to give us forever. 18 We do not look at the things that can be seen. We look at the things that cannot be seen. The things that can be seen will come to an end. But the things that cannot be seen will last forever.

Question: Do you ever feel the troubles and trials you experience makes you want to give up in life or the Lord? Do you ever feel like you are being punished for your faith?

Response:

H. [Hebrews 12:5-11](#) (NLV) [PoG]

5 Do you remember what God said to you when He called you His sons? “My son, listen when the Lord punishes [trains and educates you ([G3809](#))]. Do not give up when He tells you what you must do. 6 The Lord punishes [trains and instructs you as children He loves ([G3811](#))]. He whips [corrects ([Proverbs 3:12](#)) ([H3198](#): to make clear, to demonstrate, to prove)] every son He receives.” 7 Do not give up when you are punished [trained and educated by God ([G3809](#))]. Be willing to take it, knowing that God is teaching you as a son. Is there a father who does not punish [train and instruct his son sometimes ([G3811](#))]? 8 If you are not punished [trained and educated as all sons are ([G3809](#))], it means that you are not a true son of God. You are not a part of His family and He is not your Father. 9 Remember that our fathers on earth punished [corrected us as teachers and instructors ([G3810](#))]. We had respect for them. How much more should we obey our Father in heaven and live? 10 For a little while our fathers on earth punished [trained and instructed us when they thought they should ([G3811](#))]. But God [does so] for our good so we will be holy as He is holy. 11 There is no joy while we are being punished [trained and educated ([G3809](#))]. It is hard to take, but later we can see that good came from it. And it gives us the peace of being right with God.

Question: Does the corrected translation change how you see God as your Father?

Response:

I. With His Word:

[2 Timothy 3:16-17](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction [training, discipline] in righteousness, 17 that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.

[Hebrews 4:12](#) (NLV)

God’s Word is living and powerful. It is sharper than a sword that cuts both ways. It cuts straight into where the soul and spirit meet and it divides them. It cuts into the joints and bones. It tells what the heart is thinking about and what it wants to do.

[John 15:1-5](#) (NLV) [PoG]

“I am the true Vine. My Father is the One Who cares for the Vine. 2 He [raises, elevates, and lifts up ([G142](#))] any branch in Me that does not give fruit. Any branch that gives fruit, He [cleanses it from filth impurities ([G2508](#))] so it will give more fruit. 3 You are made clean by the words I have spoken to you. 4 Get your life from Me and I will live in you. No branch can give fruit by itself. It has to get life from the vine. You are able to give fruit only when you have life from Me. 5 I am the Vine and you are the branches. Get your life from Me. Then I will live in you and you will give much fruit. You can do nothing without Me.

Question: How does God our Father educate, instruct, and discipline us? How did Jesus do so with His Disciples?

Response:

J. Peace and access to God:

[Romans 5:1-5](#) (NLV)

Now that we have been made right with God by putting our trust in Him, we have peace with Him. It is because of what our Lord Jesus Christ did for us. 2 By putting our trust in God, He has given us His loving-favour and has received us. We are happy for the hope we have of sharing the shining-greatness of God. 3 We are glad for our troubles also. We know that troubles help us learn not to give up. 4 When we have learned not to give up, it shows we have stood the test. When we have stood the test, it gives us hope. 5 Hope never makes us ashamed because the love of God has come into our hearts through the Holy Spirit Who was given to us.

[Hebrews 10:19-24](#) (NLV)

Christian brothers, now we know we can go into the Holiest Place of All because the blood of Jesus was given. 20 We now come to God by the new and living way. Christ made this way for us. He opened the curtain, which was His own body. 21 We have a great Religious Leader over the house of God. 22 And so let us come near to God with a true heart full of faith. Our hearts must be made clean from guilty feelings and our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us hold on to the hope we say we have and not be changed. We can trust God that He will do what He promised. 24 Let us help each other to love others and to do good.

Question: Since we have peace with God and can freely come to Him, does it make sense that He punishes us?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Hebrews 3:7-9a](#) (NLV)

The Holy Spirit says, "If you hear His voice today, 8 do not let your hearts become hard as your early fathers did when they turned against Me. It was at that time in the desert when they put Me to the test ([G3986](#)). 9 Your early fathers tempted ([G3985](#)) Me and tried ([G1381](#)) Me."

Thoughts: It was not God tempting and trying the people of Israel, it was the people of Israel trying and tempting God. Their hearts were hardened by their own unbelief—they saw the miracles yet doubted God, unbelieving (believing falsely) that He just brought them out of Egypt to die (that God would just kill them). Feel free to read through the scriptures that share how they tested God: [Deuteronomy 6](#), [Psalm 78](#), [Psalms 95](#), and [Psalms 106](#).

B. Take time to study and look into the original Hebrew for "God's thoughts of peace (*shalom*) toward you" ([Jeremiah 29:11](#) and [Isaiah 55:12](#)). God has "shalom" upon/toward you, and it encompasses much depth and meaning to our lives; including positive variations of peace, as well as health and prosperity. One resource for looking into the original Hebrew or Greek (as these last links to those go to) is: www.BlueLetterBible.org

And we can be assured of His "shalom" to us without doubt because of what Jesus Christ accomplished for us!

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

INTENTION:

Most of my life existed as a defeated Christian. I pinballed around in life just taking what came my way and resisted to live another day to face the same: “Que Será, Será”.

Then I came to realize that my life as a Christian had power and authority—both my own and through the Lord. Christ defeated Satan and he is beneath me (beneath all humans). And when I became a believer, I inherited that same authority that Jesus Christ Himself has.

Let’s discover the authority we have to overcome any and all challenges that come our way.

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

Bible Study: Lesson 010



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Satan's defeat and our authority; both accomplished through the completed work of Jesus Christ. The Lord created humans with authoritative dominion through Adam ([Genesis 1:28](#)), whom, in-turn gave it to Satan ([Genesis 3](#)). However, Jesus, as a human, not only took back what Adam gave away, we have been given even more than what Adam ever had: Christ's authority. Jesus defeated the Devil and Satan, giving us authority over him too.

NB: In the following scripture verses used, we will read about both the Devil and Satan. These are not directly one-of-the-same, but different Greek words representing two distinct meanings, yet relatable. Take into consideration these expanded meanings, especially when discussing the Devil:

Devil: *diabolos* ([G1228](#))

1. prone to slander, slanderous, accusing falsely.
 - a. a calumniator, false accuser, slanderer.
2. metaph. applied to a man who, by opposing the cause of God, may be said to act the part of the devil or to side with him.

calumniator:
1. to utter maliciously false statements, charges, or imputations about.
2. to injure the reputation of by calumny.

calumny:
1. a misrepresentation intended to harm another's reputation.
2. the act of uttering false charges or misrepresentations maliciously calculated to harm another's reputation.

Satan: *satanas* ([G4567](#))

1. adversary (one who opposes another in purpose or act), the name given to
 - a. the prince of evil spirits, the inveterate adversary of God and Christ
 - b. a Satan-like man

II. READING: [Ephesians 1:1-23](#) (CEB)

From Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by God's will. To the holy and faithful people in Christ Jesus in Ephesus. 2 Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Bless the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! He has blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing that comes from heaven. 4 God chose us in Christ to be holy and blameless in God's presence before the creation of the world. 5 God destined us to be his adopted children through Jesus Christ because of his love. This was according to his goodwill and plan 6 and to honour his glorious grace that he has given to us freely through the Son whom he loves. 7 We have been ransomed through his Son's blood, and we have forgiveness for our failures based on his overflowing grace, 8 which he poured over us with wisdom and understanding. 9 God revealed his hidden design to us, which is according to his goodwill and the plan that he intended to accomplish through his Son. 10 This is what God planned for the climax of all times: to bring all things together in Christ, the things in heaven along with the things on earth. 11 We have also received an inheritance in Christ. We were destined by the plan of God, who accomplishes everything according to his design. 12 We are called to be an honour to God's glory because we were the first to hope in Christ. 13 You too heard the word of truth in Christ, which is the good news of your salvation. You were sealed with the promised Holy Spirit because you believed in Christ. 14 The Holy Spirit is the down payment on our inheritance, which is applied toward our redemption as God's own people, resulting in the honour of God's glory.

15 Since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all God's people, this is the reason that 16 I don't stop giving thanks to God for you when I remember you in my prayers. 17 I pray that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, will give you a spirit of wisdom and revelation that makes God known to you. 18 I pray that the eyes of your heart will have enough light to see what is the hope of God's call, what is the richness of God's glorious inheritance among believers, 19 and what is the overwhelming greatness of God's power that is working

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

Bible Study: Lesson 010



among us believers. This power is conferred by the energy of God’s powerful strength. 20 God’s power was at work in Christ when God raised him from the dead and sat him at God’s right side in the heavens, 21 far above every ruler and authority and power and angelic power, any power that might be named not only now but in the future. 22 God put everything under Christ’s feet and made him head of everything in the church, 23 which is his body. His body, the church, is the fullness of Christ, who fills everything in every way.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. Revelations 12:7-12 (CEB)

7 Then there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought the dragon. The dragon and his angels fought back, 8 but they did not prevail, and there was no longer any place for them in heaven. 9 So the great dragon was thrown down. The old snake, who is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of the whole world, was thrown down to the earth; and his angels were thrown down with him. 10 Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say, “Now the salvation and power and kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ have come. The accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them day and night before our God, has been thrown down. 11 They gained the victory over him on account of the blood of the Lamb and the word of their witness. Love for their own lives didn’t make them afraid to die. 12 Therefore, rejoice, you heavens and you who dwell in them. But oh! The horror for the earth and sea! The devil has come down to you with great rage, for he knows that he only has a short time.”

Question: We can see that both Satan and the Devil have been against the Lord’s creation—what did the Devil and Satan lose here? What is he up to now—what do you think his purpose is?

Response:

B. Luke 10:9;17-22 (CEB) [PoG]

9 Heal the sick who are there, and say to them, ‘God’s kingdom has come upon you.’

17 The seventy-two returned joyously, saying, “Lord, even the demons submit themselves to us in your name.”

18 Jesus replied, “I saw Satan fall from heaven like lightning. 19 Look, I have given you authority to crush snakes and scorpions underfoot. I have given you authority over all the power of the enemy. Nothing will harm you [Mark 16:15-18]. 20 Nevertheless, don’t rejoice because the spirits submit to you. Rejoice instead that your names are written in heaven.”

21 At that very moment, Jesus overflowed with joy from the Holy Spirit and said, “I praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you’ve hidden these things from the wise and intelligent and shown them to babies. Indeed, Father, this brings you happiness. 22 My Father has handed all things over to me. No one knows who the Son is except the Father, or who the Father is except the Son and anyone to whom the Son wants to reveal him.”

Question: What authority did Jesus give?

Response:

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

Bible Study: Lesson 010



C. [Matthew 11:11-15](#) (CEB) [PoG]

“I assure you that no one who has ever been born is greater than John the Baptist. Yet whoever is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. 12 From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven is violently attacked as violent people seize it [*because violent people (beings) try to take things for themselves through violence*]. 13 All the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John came. 14 If you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come. 15 Let the person who has ears, hear.

Question: The Kingdom of Heaven is righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit ([Romans 14:17](#))—very opposite from violence. Look back at [Revelations 12:10](#) and [Luke 10:18](#) above with this verse; whom do you think is violently attacking the Kingdom of Heaven / Kingdom of God?

Response:

D. [Job 1:6-12](#) (CEB) [PoG] and [Job 2:1-7](#) (CEB) [PoG]

6 One day the divine beings [Sons of Man] came to present themselves before the Lord, and the Adversary also came among them. 7 The Lord said to the Adversary, “Where did you come from?” The Adversary answered the Lord, “From wandering throughout the earth.” 8 The Lord said to the Adversary, “Have you thought about my servant Job; surely there is no one like him on earth, a man who is honest, who is of absolute integrity, who reveres God and avoids evil?” 9 The Adversary answered the Lord, “Does Job revere God for nothing? 10 Haven’t you fenced him in—his house and all he has—and blessed the work of his hands so that his possessions extend throughout the earth? 11 But stretch out your hand and strike all he has. He will certainly curse you to your face.” 12 The Lord said to the Adversary, “Look, all he has is within your power; only don’t stretch out your hand against him.” So the Adversary left the Lord’s presence.

2 One day the divine beings [Sons of Man] came to present themselves before the Lord. The Adversary also came among them to present himself before the Lord. 2 The Lord said to the Adversary, “Where have you come from?” The Adversary answered the Lord, “From wandering throughout the earth.” 3 The Lord said to the Adversary, “Have you thought about my servant Job, for there is no one like him on earth, a man who is honest, who is of absolute integrity, who reveres God and avoids evil? He still holds on to his integrity, even though you incited me to ruin him for no reason.” 4 The Adversary responded to the Lord, “Skin for skin—people will give up everything they have in exchange for their lives. 5 But stretch out your hand and strike his bones and flesh. Then he will definitely curse [bless] you to your face.” 6 The Lord answered the Adversary, “There he is—within your power; only preserve his life.” 7 The Adversary departed from the Lord’s presence and struck Job with severe sores from the sole of his foot to the top of his head.

Question: What was Satan doing when he spoke with God (read [Revelations 12:10](#) above)? Did God bring the calamity to Job and his entire family/domain? Can Satan do the same thing to us that he did to Job—why?

Response:

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

Bible Study: Lesson 010



E. [John 16:7-11](#) (PoG)

7-11 Nevertheless I (Jesus Christ) tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper (Holy Spirit) will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send Him to you. And when He has come, He will convict the world of:

- Sin, because they do not believe in Me;
- Righteousness, because I go to My Father and you see Me no more;
- Judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged.

Question: What does it mean to you that the Holy Spirit is reminding the world of Satan already being judged?

Response:

F. [Colossians 2:6-15](#) (CEB)

So live in Christ Jesus the Lord in the same way as you received him. 7 Be rooted and built up in him, be established in faith, and overflow with thanksgiving just as you were taught. 8 See to it that nobody enslaves you with philosophy and foolish deception, which conform to human traditions and the way the world thinks and acts rather than Christ. 9 All the fullness of deity lives in Christ's body. 10 And you have been filled by him, who is the head of every ruler and authority. 11 In him you were also circumcised with a circumcision not administered by human hands. The circumcision of Christ is realized in the stripping away of the whole self dominated by sin. 12 You were buried with him through baptism and raised with him through faith in the power of God, who raised him from the dead. 13 When you were dead because of the things you had done wrong and because your body wasn't circumcised, God made you alive with Christ and forgave all the things you had done wrong. 14 He destroyed the record of the debt we owed, with its requirements that worked against us. He cancelled it by nailing it to the cross. 15 When he disarmed the rulers and authorities, he exposed them to public disgrace by leading them in a triumphal parade.

Question: What are ways we re-arm rulers and authorities that try and stand against us?

Response:

G. [1 Corinthians 15:20-28; 45-49](#) (CEB)

But in fact Christ has been raised from the dead. He's the first crop of the harvest of those who have died. 21 Since death came through a human being, the resurrection of the dead came through one too. 22 In the same way that everyone dies in Adam, so also everyone will be given life in Christ. 23 Each event will happen in the right order: Christ, the first crop of the harvest, then those who belong to Christ at his coming, 24 and then the end, when Christ hands over the kingdom to God the Father, when he brings every form of rule, every authority and power to an end. 25 It is necessary for him to rule until he puts all enemies under his feet. 26 Death is the last enemy to be brought to an end, 27 since he has brought everything under control under his feet. When it says that everything has been brought under his control, this clearly means everything except for the one who placed

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

Bible Study: Lesson 010



everything under his control. 28 But when all things have been brought under his control, then the Son himself will also be under the control of the one who gave him control over everything so that God may be all in all.

So it is also written, The first human, Adam, became a living person, and the last Adam became a spirit that gives life. 46 But the physical body comes first, not the spiritual one—the spiritual body comes afterward. 47 The first human was from the earth made from dust; the second human is from heaven. 48 The nature of the person made of dust is shared by people who are made of dust, and the nature of the heavenly person is shared by heavenly people. 49 We will look like the heavenly person in the same way as we have looked like the person made from dust.

Question: Which do you feel has more authority in life: the physical body or the spiritual?

Response:

H. [Ephesians 6:10-18](#) (CEB)

Finally, be strengthened by the Lord and his powerful strength. 11 Put on God’s armour so that you can make a stand against the tricks of the devil. 12 We aren’t fighting against human enemies but against rulers, authorities, forces of cosmic darkness, and spiritual powers of evil in the heavens. 13 Therefore, pick up the full armour of God so that you can stand your ground on the evil day and after you have done everything possible to still stand. 14 So stand with the belt of truth around your waist, justice as your breastplate, 15 and put shoes on your feet so that you are ready to spread the good news of peace. 16 Above all, carry the shield of faith so that you can extinguish the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is God’s word. 18 Offer prayers and petitions in the Spirit all the time. Stay alert by hanging in there and praying for all believers.

Question: What are we fighting? Do you feel you have the full armour of God already?

Response:

I. Devil is trying to deceive us:

[1 Peter 5:8](#) (CEB)

Be clearheaded. Keep alert. Your accuser, the devil, is on the prowl like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour.

[James 4:7](#) (CEB)

Therefore, submit to God. Resist the devil, and he will run away from you.

Question: What are we to resist (see the Greek above)? Do you feel you have the power / authority to resist?

Response:

SATAN DEFEATED! WE HAVE AUTHORITY

Bible Study: Lesson 010



J. Our position:

[Philippians 2:7b-11](#) (CEB) [PoG]

When he [*Jesus*] found himself in the form of a human, 8 he humbled himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross. 9 Therefore, God highly honoured him and gave him a name above all names, 10 so that at the name of Jesus everyone in heaven, on earth, and under the earth might bow 11 and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

[Ephesians 2:6](#) (CEB)

And God raised us up and seated us in the heavens with Christ Jesus.

[1 Corinthians 12:27](#) (CEB)

You are the body of Christ and parts of each other.

[1 John 4:17b](#) (NKJV)

as He is, so are we in this world.

Question: Does anything have authority over Jesus? What is our position? If we are exactly as Christ Jesus is (right now on this earth), should we doubt we have His authority?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. Christ is our reminder:

[Romans 8:31-34](#) (CEB)

So what are we going to say about these things? If God is for us, who is against us? 32 He didn't spare his own Son but gave him up for us all. Won't he also freely give us all things with him? 33 Who will bring a charge against God's elect people? It is God who acquits them. 34 Who is going to convict them? It is Christ Jesus who died, even more, who was raised, and who also is at God's right side. It is Christ Jesus who also pleads our case for us.

[1 John 2:1-2](#) (CEB)

My little children, I'm writing these things to you so that you don't sin. But if you do sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous one. 2 He is God's way of dealing with our sins, not only ours but the sins of the whole world.

Thoughts: If the Devil or Satan ever had the ability to go before God again like we read in Job (which he cannot), Jesus is standing between God and the Devil / Satan as our intercessor (court-appointed attorney). Likewise, if we ourselves condemn ourselves for our actions or inactions (sins), we are in essence doing what the Devil / Satan was doing—he was cast out of heaven, but somehow we decide to take over for him what was taken from him, and literally accuse ourselves in front of God. Yet Jesus is our intercessor as well. And even more than interceding on our behalf, He in turn reminds us that He took care of all our sins at the Cross, that anything we try to bring to God as our own offense can never have any legal hold on us: WE HAVE BEEN MADE FREE! Remember this always.

B. Ben Daily: The Holy But. Living in the Spiritual. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mT87VuGjzwl&t=158s>

IDENTITY

INTENTION:

Whom we are is more than what we see in the mirror. When we are Born-Again, we are instantly changed from being of this world to being of our Father God. Our identity becomes that of our Father in Heaven, and just like our sibling Jesus Christ. How fantastic is that!

How you see yourself can affect your everyday life. Let's know we are Born of God!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Identity—our identity as humans in relation to Christ Jesus (also a human).

Back at Lesson 001, we looked at God's original Creation (which He proclaimed as “good”). It was at Creation that He set into motion a governing Law of Design. Firstly, He Himself created every plant, every animal, and every human at the beginning. From the 7th Day of creation, He has been resting, no longer creating anything more. Having, from those days instructed each plant, each animal, and each human to "reproduce after its own kind" ([Genesis 1](#)).

So, as human, we are the by-product (offspring) of the first humans: Adam (that is both male and female). And from that beginning, all mankind are offspring of them: the resulting product (child) reproduced after its own kind (their parents). And we can see this result in the appearance of the child representing a merger of both the male and the female parent whom created the child—the child thus bearing the image of their creator (their parents).

Genetics, biology, and science has confirmed this Law of God's Creation. Trees reproduce trees, cats reproduce cats, dogs reproduce dogs, fish reproduce fish, birds reproduce birds, etc. And humans reproduce humans. Quite simple.

Because we are, in this way, created by our parents, we identify ourselves with them. Even the nature vs nurture upbringing defines that identity: engraining positive/negative nurturing and positive/negative DNA; and instilling habits, iniquities, beliefs, physical characteristics, and more, from parent to child. We, in that sense, become our parents (we can see an in-grained relation of the child to the parents).

But here is where we confuse our identity and are often deceived in it, both as children and as parents. Our identity is not who bore us or who raised us, our identity is and should always be the Lord! For it is the Lord (Father, Son, and Holy Ghost) that said at Creation that we humans are, "made in THEIR Image". This is something we have lost in those thousands of years since Adam. However, since then, we have experienced the completed work of Jesus Christ for humanity (as a human, and God)!

As such, whether we are male or female, we need to see our identity as being Christ Jesus—renewing our minds and hearts to this revelation...even if it means rejecting our own natural heritage!

For additional reading, see also: <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2018/08/heart-of-god-part-1.html>
<https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2019/02/heart-of-god-part-ii.html>

II. READING: [2 Corinthians 5:1-21](#) (ESV) [PoG]

For we know that if the tent [tabernacle] that is our earthly home is destroyed, we have a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. 2 For in this tent we groan, longing to put on our heavenly dwelling, 3 if indeed by putting it on we may not be found naked. 4 For while we are still in this tent [tabernacle], we groan, being burdened—not that we would be unclothed, but that we would be further clothed, so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. 5 He who has prepared us for this very thing is God, who has given us the Spirit as a guarantee.

6 So we are always of good courage. We know that while we are at home in the body we are away from the Lord, 7 for we walk by faith, not by sight. 8 Yes, we are of good courage, and we would rather be away from the body and at home with the Lord. 9 So whether we are at home or away, we [are accepted by Him]. 10 For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ [[1 John 4:17](#)], so that each one may receive what is due for what he has done in the body, whether good or evil [*to believe or to not believe*].

11 Therefore, knowing the fear [reverence] of the Lord, we persuade others. But what we are is known to God, and I hope it is known also to your conscience. 12 We are not commending ourselves to you again but giving you cause to boast about us, so that you may be able to answer those who boast about outward appearance and not about what is in the heart. 13 For if we are beside ourselves, it is for God; if we are in our right mind, it is for you. 14 For the love of Christ controls us, because we have concluded this: that one has died for all, therefore all have died; 15 and he died for all, that those who live might no longer live for themselves but for him who for their sake died and was raised.

IDENTITY

Bible Study: Lesson 011



16 From now on, therefore, we regard no one according to the flesh. Even though we once regarded Christ according to the flesh, we regard him thus no longer. 17 Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he [*that person*] is a new creation. The old has passed away; behold, the new has come. 18 All this is from God, who through Christ reconciled us to himself and gave us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 that is, in Christ, God was reconciling the world to himself, not counting their trespasses against them, and entrusting to us the message of reconciliation. 20 Therefore, we are ambassadors for Christ, God making his appeal through us. We implore you on behalf of Christ, [you are reconciled with God]. 21 For our sake he made him to be sin who knew no sin, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Galatians 3:25-28](#) (ESV) [PoG]

But now that faith has come, we are no longer under a guardian [*the Law*], 26 for in Christ Jesus you are all sons of God, through faith. 27 For as many of you as were baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is no male and female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

Question: What do you feel God was saying (or what He was eliminating) by saying this?

Response:

B. No partiality:

[Acts 10:34-38,44-46a](#) (ESV)

So Peter opened his mouth and said: “Truly I understand that God shows no partiality, 35 but in every nation anyone who fears him and does what is right is acceptable to him. 36 As for the word that he sent to Israel, preaching good news of peace through Jesus Christ (he is Lord of all), 37 you yourselves know what happened throughout all Judea, beginning from Galilee after the baptism that John proclaimed: 38 how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power. He went about doing good and healing all who were oppressed by the devil, for God was with him.

While Peter was still saying these things, the Holy Spirit fell on all who heard the word. 45 And the believers from among the circumcised who had come with Peter were amazed, because the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out even on the Gentiles. 46 For they were hearing them speaking in tongues and extolling God.

[Romans 2:11](#) (ESV)

For God shows no partiality.

[James 2:1](#) (ESV)

My brothers, show no partiality as you hold the faith in our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory.

Question: What does it mean to you that “God shows no partiality”—and that we shouldn’t either?

Response:

[Hebrews 10:9-10,12,16-23](#) (ESV) [PoG]

then he added, "Behold, I have come to do your will." He does away with the first in order to establish the second. 10 And by that will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

But when Christ had offered for all time a single sacrifice for sins, he sat down at the right hand of God.

"This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, declares the Lord: I will put my laws [*the Law of believing and Loving* ([1 John 3:23](#))] on their hearts, and write them on their minds," 17 then he adds, "I will remember their sins and their lawless deeds no more." 18 Where there is forgiveness of these, there is no longer any offering for sin. 19 Therefore, brothers, since we have confidence to enter the holy places by the blood of Jesus, 20 by the new and living way that he opened for us through the curtain, that is, through his flesh, 21 and since we have a great priest over the house of God, 22 let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, with our hearts sprinkled clean from an evil conscience [*sin conscience*] and our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for he who promised is faithful.

Question: Do you identify with your sins or your righteousness?

Response:

C. [Romans 7:15-25 & 8:1-11](#) (ESV)

For I do not understand my own actions. For I do not do what I want, but I do the very thing I hate. 16 Now if I do what I do not want, I agree with the law, that it is good. 17 So now it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells within me. 18 For I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh. For I have the desire to do what is right, but not the ability to carry it out. 19 For I do not do the good I want, but the evil I do not want is what I keep on doing. 20 Now if I do what I do not want, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells within me. 21 So I find it to be a law that when I want to do right, evil lies close at hand. 22 For I delight in the law of God, in my inner being, 23 but I see in my members another law waging war against the law of my mind and making me captive to the law of sin that dwells in my members. 24 Wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? 25 Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, I myself serve the law of God with my mind, but with my flesh I serve the law of sin.

There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. 2 For the law of the Spirit of life has set you free in Christ Jesus from the law of sin and death. 3 For God has done what the law, weakened by the flesh, could not do. By sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for sin, he condemned sin in the flesh, 4 in order that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. 5 For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit set their minds on the things of the Spirit. 6 For to set the mind on the flesh is death, but to set the mind on the Spirit is life and peace. 7 For the mind that is set on the flesh is hostile to God, for it does not submit to God's law; indeed, it cannot. 8 Those who are in the flesh cannot please God. 9 You, however, are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if in fact the Spirit of God dwells in you. Anyone who does not have the Spirit of Christ does not belong to him. 10 But if Christ is in you, although the body is dead because of sin, the Spirit is life because of righteousness. 11 If the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, he who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through his Spirit who dwells in you.

Question: Can you feel the “dual-personality” that seems to be your own fight between your flesh-identity and spirit-identity?

Response:

D. Our inner battle:

[Ephesians 4:22-24](#) (ESV)

to put off your old self, which belongs to your former manner of life and is corrupt through deceitful desires, 23 and to be renewed in the spirit of your minds, 24 and to put on the new self, created after the likeness of God in true righteousness and holiness.

[Colossians 3:1-14](#) (ESV)

If then you have been raised with Christ, seek the things that are above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. 2 Set your minds on things that are above, not on things that are on earth. 3 For you have died, and your life is hidden with Christ in God. 4 When Christ who is your life appears, then you also will appear with him in glory. 5 Put to death therefore what is earthly in you: sexual immorality, impurity, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. 6 On account of these the wrath of God is coming. 7 In these you too once walked, when you were living in them. 8 But now you must put them all away: anger, wrath, malice, slander, and obscene talk from your mouth. 9 Do not lie to one another, seeing that you have put off the old self with its practices 10 and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge after the image of its creator. 11 Here there is not Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, free; but Christ is all, and in all. 12 Put on then, as God's chosen ones, holy and beloved, compassionate hearts, kindness, humility, meekness, and patience, 13 bearing with one another and, if one has a complaint against another, forgiving each other; as the Lord has forgiven you, so you also must forgive. 14 And above all these put on love, which binds everything together in perfect harmony.

[Galatians 5:11-25](#) (ESV)

But I say, walk by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the flesh. 17 For the desires of the flesh are against the Spirit, and the desires of the Spirit are against the flesh, for these are opposed to each other, to keep you from doing the things you want to do. 18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law. 19 Now the works of the flesh are evident: sexual immorality, impurity, sensuality, 20 idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, rivalries, dissensions, divisions, 21 envy, drunkenness, orgies, and things like these. I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who do such things will not inherit the kingdom of God. 22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, 23 gentleness, self-control; against such things there is no law. 24 And those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. 25 If we live by the Spirit, let us also keep in step with the Spirit.

Question: How do we identify what is of the flesh and what is of the Spirit? Where is the battle between our old self and our new self?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Romans 10:9-13](#) (ESV)

because, if you confess with your mouth that Jesus is Lord and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For with the heart one believes and is justified, and with the mouth one confesses and is saved. 11 For the Scripture says, “Everyone who believes in him will not be put to shame.” 12 For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek; for the same Lord is Lord of all, bestowing his riches on all who call on him. 13 For “everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved”.

Thoughts: Paul quotes a scripture ([Joel 2:32](#)) that talks about our salvation. The words "call upon" speak of making our identity as His (Christ's). The Greek is *epikaleō* ([G1941](#)) which translates as:

1. to put a name upon, to surname
 - a. to permit one's self to be surnamed
2. to be named after someone

It's as if we are changing our surname to His—our identity no longer whom we think we are (our core identity), to whom we really are (our ideal identity). We truly become adopted by the Father, as His child, into His family, with HIS NAME! We share the same name as Jesus Christ.

B. Read through the Parable of the Prodigal Son: [Luke 15:11-32](#) (ESV).

We can see that both sons did not understand their inheritance or value. The prodigal (younger son) didn't expect to be welcomed home, thinking he was a nobody; yet was never accused by his father of losing his value or “sonship”. For the older son that stayed home, he saw his identity as a servant and not a son, working for the inheritance—this led to bitterness and anger that his younger brother received praise from the father when he didn't do any work for that reward.

NB: This is also a representation of the Jews and the Greeks: the Greeks did not expect an inheritance and the Jews felt they had worked for that inheritance. Yet God's gifts not on our merits, but on His Grace.

The father accused the older son of not understanding this, having been given the inheritance (rights) to claim all the father had as his own—this being the same inheritance the younger son was given as well. This is what the father showed the younger when he returned, throwing a feast.

We should then view ourselves, not as either son did of themselves, but as the father saw each son: as a son worthy of everything the father has. Which is exactly as our Father in Heaven sees us—so, whether you are someone whose tried to work for God's goodness, or one that feels unworthy to be called a son, the Lord will receive you into His family as His own—remember you have been legally given His surname and identity!

C. What do you call yourself?

Because often our thoughts and our words define who we are, creating our own identities: “ugly, fat, thin, bald, afraid, shy, timid, stupid, blind, crippled, sick, having allergies, worthless, a whore, a paedophile, a gangster, a specific race, a specific nationality, a personality type, religious denomination, and more”. When we use these terms for ourselves (or others), we limit whom we really are, instead of believing whom God says we are. And when we hold onto these “anti-identities”, we create conflict in us as these relate to the flesh when we are spiritual beings ([Galatians 5:16-24](#) and [1 Corinthians 6:9-11](#)). And this conflict of identity keeps us from truly experiencing the “righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit” that is the Kingdom of God ([Romans 14:17](#)).

Take heart though, if you struggle with an anti-identity, there is no need to fear any reprisal from the Lord; for He will meet you where you are and will not hold back from gifting you all He has, and always loving you!

D. Arthur Meintjes: Adoption. Loved and accepted. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=My62eVLmAHE>

E. Carlie Terradez: Who Do You Think You Are? <https://carlieterradez.wordpress.com/who-do-you-think-you-are/>

Change your confession, change your life. Start speaking out who God says you are today!

I am _____ (your name)

I am a party waiting to happen, **1 Peter 1:8**! Angels rejoice over me, demons flee from me, **James 4:7**, and God himself dances over me with singing, **Zephaniah 3:17**. I am the bearer of good news, **Isaiah 52:7**, a minister of reconciliation, **2 Corinthians 5:18**, the carrier of the King of Glory, **Colossians 1:27**. I am the righteousness of Christ, **2 Corinthians 5:21** and a temple of the Holy Spirit, **1 Corinthians 6:19**. I have an unction from the Holy one and I know all things, **1 John 2:20** I have the mind of Christ, **1 Corinthians 2:16**, I am anointed by God, **1 John 2:27**, And I was created by Him for good works, **Ephesians 2:10**! I have favour with God, favour with man and a good understanding, **Luke 2:52**. I am chosen by God, **John 15:16**, **Ephesians 1:4**, I have been sanctified, **1 Corinthians 6:11**, and made truly Holy. As Jesus is, so am I in this world, **1 John 4:17**! I am always on God's mind, He thinks about me constantly, **Psalms 139:17-18**. Even before the creation of the world, I was planned, **Ephesians 1:4**. I am a child of the King, adopted into his family, **Ephesians 1:5**, An heir in Christ, **Romans 8:17**, Accepted in the Beloved, **Ephesians 1:6**. I am blessed with every spiritual blessing in heavenly places, **Ephesians 1:3**. I lack no good thing, **Psalms 34:10**. I have an abundance for every good work. **2 Corinthians 9:8**. I was predestined by God for success, **Romans 8:28-30**. I am placed and seated with Him, a king and priest, part of a chosen generation, a peculiar people, **1 Peter 2:9**. I am blessed coming in and going out, **Deuteronomy 28:6**. My family is blessed, my flocks are blessed, **Deuteronomy 28:4**, and everything I touch prospers, **Deuteronomy 28:8**. I am the head and not the tail, above the circumstances and not beneath them, **Deuteronomy 28:13**. No weapon formed against me can prosper, **Isaiah 54:17**, no plague can come near my dwelling-my house or my body, **Psalms 91:10**! And nothing can separate me from the love of God—not angels or demons, not principalities or powers, nothing in this world or out of it, **Romans 8:38-39**! I am equipped with the full Armor of God, **Ephesians 6:13**, packed full of the Holy Spirit, with more than enough power inside of me to raise the dead, **Romans 8:11**, heal the sick and cast out devils, **Matthew 10:1**. My faith can move mountains, **Mark 11:23**, my words contain life and death, **Proverbs 18:21**, my life was bought at a price-Jesus covered it, **1 Corinthians 6:20**. My days are appointed, **Psalms 139:16** my life is protected, **Mark 16:18** angels encamp around me, **Psalms 34:7**, and the blessings of God encircle me, **Psalms 103:4**, go before me and overtake me, **Deuteronomy 28:2**. The creator of the universe, my Dad, loves me with an everlasting love, **Jeremiah 31:3**. He is with me always, **Hebrews 13:5**, He thinks about me constantly, **Psalms 139:17**. He knows everything about me, even the number of hairs on my head, **Matthew 10:30**. His love for me is inescapable, insurmountable and irrefutable. I am all round awesome, just ask my Dad!

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT (OVERVIEW)

INTENTION:

Our makeup as human beings plays a role in how we engage with the world around us; and the Lord as well. We are the Lord's creation, made in a very specific way—a way that replicates the Tabernacle design He gave to Moses.

Knowing the different parts of our beings gives us insight into the various ways our life is impacted.

I have found that the world around us works on our being from the outside-in; while the Spirit in our core being works from the inside-out. We can then see how each part of our being then is affected by the world or the Spirit.

We will learn how each part of the Moses Tabernacle represents our own parts of our being.

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT

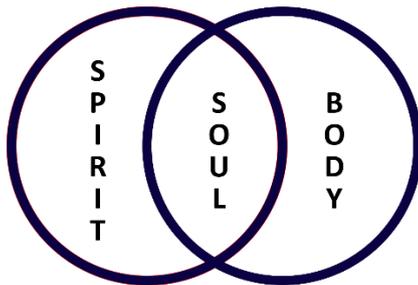
Bible Study: Lessons 012 – 017

PREFACE – TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT (PARTS 1 – 6):

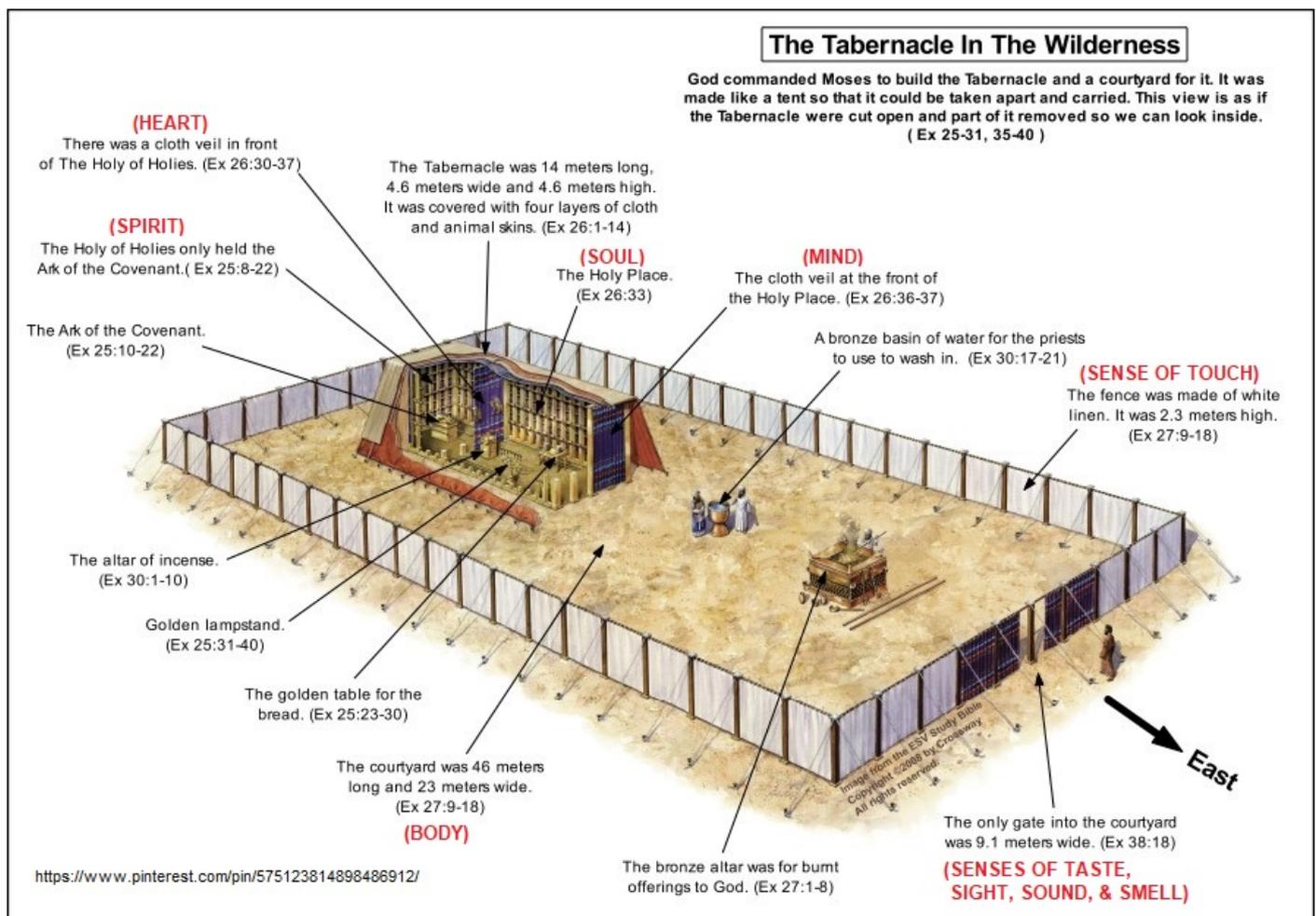
This 6-part series will delve into what we are as human beings in relation to our being as a “Tabernacle” (Temple).

One of the things I have focused on over the years with the Lord is an understanding of “Spirit, Soul, & Body”. I didn’t come to study this until I was in my first year of Bible College. What I learned helped me in my understanding of who I am as a created being; including where struggles and life occur. But what I learned didn’t quite sit well, nor fulfilled my Spirit. Thus, I proceeded to seek guidance from the Lord and with scripture.

The “architect” in me (the creative and visual side of me) longed for a better diagram to understand the relationship of Spirit, Soul, & Body. What I had been presented in Bible College was something on the lines of this:



I tried to improve it with circles, squares, triangles, overlaps, adjacencies, etc. All to no avail. But as I find with the Lord in my personal studies, is that I keep pushing into an understanding, and He took me all over in scripture and revelation—even to things I felt weren’t even connected. He also connected Heart, Mind, & Will in this understanding as well. Then, after several years with this plethora of information germinating in me, He showed me, not a new diagram to draw to tie it all together, but showed me a diagram He already designed that was what I was after: His designed Tabernacle given to Moses...



This is now so obvious to me, because we ARE the Temple (Tabernacle) of God. And for God, there is only one kind of “Tabernacle” (Temple) design; thus, it makes sense that the design He gave Moses was the same design He used in creating us. It is this comparative that we will investigate during this series.

See also: <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2019/05/tabernacle-spirit-soul-body-mind-heart.html>

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 012



I. TOPIC (PART 1 – TABERNACLE / TEMPLE OVERVIEW):

We will begin this series by looking at an understanding of what it means that we are a “Tabernacle” (Temple)—and what that consists of. The Lord’s goal has always been to live in us through the completed work of Jesus Christ; however, before Jesus, the Lord did the next-best-thing, He chose to live among mankind.

To do this, the Lord instructed Moses to specifically build a Tabernacle (movable tent-structure) in a very precise, detailed way. This was, of course, a “shadow” of things to come; of which the design of this Moses Tabernacle (and following Temples) shows us an exact representation of what we are as a Tabernacle / Temple—of which He wants to dwell in. The Lord is so exact that He shows us our makeup through the design of the Moses Tabernacle. And for the Lord, there is only one kind of Tabernacle / Temple design; thus, it makes sense that the design He gave Moses was the same design He used in creating us.

We are made in THEIR Image ([Genesis 1:26-27](#)). They are a unified triune being (God the Father, Jesus Christ the Son, and Holy Spirit/Ghost), making up a Tabernacle themselves:

- God the Father = Spirit ([John 4:24](#)).
- Christ Jesus (Son of Man / Human) = Body ([John 1:14](#)).
- Holy Ghost = Soul ([John 14:26](#)).

We too are triune beings. And in gist, when looking at the Tabernacle, we see each section in likeness as Them:

- Spirit = the Most Holy of Holies.
 - The Heart being the doorway between the Spirit and Soul.
- Soul = the Holy Place.
 - The Mind being the doorway between the Soul and Body.
- Body = Courtyard.
 - Gate and fence representing our 5 senses (our connection to the world around us).

We will detail each of these areas and see how they pertain to our reality here on earth (each given a specific word in the original Greek): Spirit, Soul, Body, Heart, Heart, Mind, and even Flesh (which we already covered in the previous Bible Study lesson regarding our Identity—being our unrenewed “old” self). With this, we can then research and identify each part and address that specific part as needed for growth, healing, emotional wellbeing, unbelief, etc. to help us in this life here on earth—ideally, living from the inside-out (outwardly from the Spirit).

We too must understand that it is not just our spirit that is made Holy (into a Holy Spirit) when we are Born-Again; it is our whole being (Spirit, Heart, Soul, Mind, and Body) that are made Holy—being made into the Temple of the Holy Spirit. And nothing we do or don’t do will change that reality.

For further research you can do yourself regarding each element is using www.BlueLetterBible.org to do key-word searches, as well as Greek word search. Here are some examples to assist you (New Testament searches):

- **Spirit:** occurs 261 times in 234 verses in your custom selection ' in 'The New Testament' in the KJV.
- **Heart:** occurs 105 times in 98 verses in your custom selection ' in 'The New Testament' in the KJV.
- **Soul:** occurs 39 times in 36 verses in your custom selection ' in 'The New Testament' in the KJV.
- **Mind:** occurs 56 times in 54 verses in your custom selection ' in 'The New Testament' in the KJV.
- **Body:** occurs 135 times in 112 verses in your custom selection ' in 'The New Testament' in the KJV.
- **Flesh:** occurs 149 times in 128 verses in your custom selection ' in 'The New Testament' in the KJV.

I find it very interesting when you pull out each search to see how the verses start to parallel or build on each other. Additionally, one can even dig into the Greek word meanings for each to give depth to the words used that do not always show up in the various translations.

Our first reading will start by a summary of Israel as given by Stephen—starting with him being “accused” of saying that Jesus will destroy the Temple; then ending with him sharing how we have become the Temple!

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 012



II. **READING:** [Acts 6:8-15 & 7:1-60](#) (TPT) [PoG]

Stephen, who was a man full of grace and supernatural power, performed many astonishing signs and wonders and mighty miracles among the people. 9 This upset some men belonging to a sect who called themselves the 'Men Set Free'. They were Libyans, Egyptians, and Turks.

They all confronted Stephen to argue with him. 10 But the Holy Spirit gave Stephen remarkable wisdom to answer them. His words were prompted by the Holy Spirit, and they could not refute what he said. 11 So the 'Men Set Free' conspired in secret to find those who would bring false accusations against Stephen and lie about him by saying, "We heard this man speak blasphemy against Moses and God."

12 The 'Men Set Free' agitated the crowd, the elders, and the religious scholars, then seized Stephen and forcefully took him before the supreme council. 13 One after another, false witnesses stepped forward and accused Stephen, saying, "This man never stops denigrating our temple and our Jewish law. 14 For we have heard him teach that Jesus of Nazareth will destroy the temple and change the traditions and customs that Moses handed down to us."

15 Every member of the supreme council focused his gaze on Stephen, for right in front of their eyes, while being falsely accused, his face glowed as though he had the face of an angel!

1 The high priest asked, "Are these accusations true?"

2 Stephen replied, "My fellow Jews and fathers, listen to me. The God of glory appeared to our ancestor Abraham while he was living in Iraq and before he moved to Haran in Syria. 3 God said to him, 'Go! Leave behind your country and your relatives. Begin your journey and come to the land that I will show you.'

4 "So Abraham left south-eastern Iraq and began his journey. He settled in Haran in Syria and stayed there until his father passed away. Then God had him move to the land of Israel with only a promise. 5 Although God gave him no parcel of land he could call his own, not even a footprint, yet he promised Abraham that he and his descendants would one day have it all. And even though as yet Abraham had no child, 6 God spoke with him and gave him this promise:

'Your descendants will live in a foreign land with a people who will make slaves of them and oppress them for four hundred years. 7 But I will judge the nation that enslaves them, and your descendants will be set free to return to this land to serve and worship me.'

8 "Then God entered into covenant with Abraham, which included the requirement of circumcision. So when he became the father of Isaac, he circumcised him eight days after his birth.

9 "Isaac then became the father of Jacob, who was the father of our twelve patriarchs. Jacob's sons became jealous of their brother Joseph and sold him to be a slave in Egypt. But God's favour and blessing rested upon Joseph, and in time, 10 God rescued him from all his oppression and granted him extraordinary favour before Pharaoh, the king of Egypt. Pharaoh appointed him as the overseer of his nation and even of his own palace.

11 "Then a devastating famine came over all of Egypt and Canaan, bringing great misery to the people, including our ancestors, who couldn't find food. 12 But when Jacob learned that there was food in Egypt, he sent his sons, our ancestors, on their first trip to purchase grain for their family. 13 On their second trip to Egypt, Joseph revealed his identity to his brothers, and because of this, Pharaoh learned about Joseph's family and where he came from.

14 "Joseph sent for his father, Jacob, and his entire family, a total of seventy-five people, to come and reside in Egypt. 15 Eventually, Jacob died there, along with all of his sons, our forefathers. 16 Their bones were later carried back to the promised land and buried in Shechem, in the tomb Abraham had purchased for a sum of money from the sons of Hamor.

17 "The time drew near for God to fulfil the prophetic promise he had made to Abraham. Our Jewish people had increased greatly in number, multiplying many times over while in Egypt.

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 012



18 “Another king, who had forgotten how Joseph had made their nation great, arose to rule over Egypt. 19 He was an abusive king who exploited our people with his smooth talk. With cruelty he forced our ancestors to give up their little boys as he committed infanticide!

20 “Then Moses came on the scene—a child of divine beauty. His parents hid him from Pharaoh as long as they could to spare his life. After three months they could conceal him no longer, 21 so they had to abandon him to his fate. But God arranged that Pharaoh’s daughter would find him, take him home, and raise him as her own son. 22 So Moses was fully trained in the royal courts and educated in the highest wisdom Egypt had to offer, until he arose as a powerful prince and an eloquent orator.

23 “When Moses turned forty, his heart was stirred for his people, the Israelites. 24 One day he saw one of our people being violently mistreated, so he came to his rescue, and with his own hands Moses murdered the abusive Egyptian. 25 Moses hoped that when the people realized how he had rescued one of their own, they would recognize him as their deliverer. How wrong he was! 26 The next day he came upon two of our people engaged in a fist fight, and he tried to break it up by saying, ‘Men, you are brothers! Why would you want to hurt each other?’

27 “But the perpetrator pushed Moses aside and said, ‘Who do you think you are? Who appointed you to be our ruler and judge? 28 Are you going to kill me like you did the Egyptian yesterday?’

29 “Shaken by this, Moses fled Egypt and lived as an exile in the land of Midian, where he became the father of two sons. 30 After forty years had passed, while he was in the desert near Mount Sinai, the Messenger of Yahweh appeared to him in the midst of a flaming thorn bush. 31 Moses was astonished and stunned by what he was seeing, so he drew closer to observe this marvel. Then the Lord Yahweh spoke to him out of the flames:

32 ‘I am the living God, the God of your ancestors. I am the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.’

“Trembling in God’s presence and overwhelmed with awe, Moses didn’t even dare to look into the fire. 33 “Out of the flames the Lord Yahweh said to him:

‘Take the sandals off your feet, for you are standing in the realm of holiness. 34 I have watched and seen how my people have been mistreated in Egypt. I have heard their painful groaning, and now I have come down to set them free. So come to me, Moses, for I am sending you to Egypt to represent me.’

35 “So God sent back to Egypt the man our people rejected and refused to recognize by saying, ‘Who appointed you to be our ruler and judge?’ God sent this man back to be their ruler and deliverer, commissioned with the power of the messenger who appeared to him in the flaming thorn bush. 36 This man brought the people out from their Egyptian bondage with many astonishing wonders and miracle signs—miracles in Egypt, miracles at the Red Sea, and miracles during their forty-year journey through the wilderness. 37 This is the same Moses who said to our ancestors, ‘The Lord God will raise up one from among you who will be a prophet to you, like I have been. Listen to everything he will say!’

38 “Moses led the congregation in the wilderness and he spoke face-to-face with the angel who spoke with him on the top of Mount Sinai. Along with our ancestors, he received the living oracles of God that were passed down to us. 39 But our forefathers refused to obey. They pushed him away, and their hearts longed to return to Egypt.

40 “While Moses was on the mountain, our forefathers said to Aaron, ‘Make us gods to lead us, because we don’t know what has become of this Moses who brought us out of Egypt.’

41 “So they made a god, an idol in the form of a bull calf. They offered sacrifices to it and celebrated with delight what their own hands had made.

42 “When God saw what they had done, he turned away from them and handed them over to the worship of the stars of heaven, as recorded in the prophetic writings:

‘People of Israel, you failed to worship me when you offered animal sacrifices for forty years in the wilderness. 43 Instead you worshiped the god Moloch, and you carried his tabernacle, not mine. You

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 012



worshiped your star-god, Rephan. You made idols with your hands and worshiped them instead of me. So now I will cast you into exile beyond Babylon.'

44 "God gave Moses the revelation of the pattern of the tabernacle of the testimony. By God's command, he made it exactly according to the specifications given to him for our ancestors in the wilderness. 45 The next generation received possession of it, and under Joshua's leadership they took possession of the land of the nations, which God drove out in front of them. The tabernacle was carried about until 46 David found loving favour with God and prayed for a dwelling place for the God of Jacob, 47 but it was Solomon who built him a house.

48 "However, the Most High God does not live in temples made by human hands, as the prophet said:

49 'Heaven is my throne room and the earth is but a footstool for my feet. How could you possibly build a house that could contain me?' says the Lord Yahweh. 'And where could you find a place where I could live?

50 Don't you know that it is my hands that have built my house, not yours?'

51 ["You are stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears!] You are always opposing the Holy Spirit, just like your forefathers! 52 Which prophet was not persecuted and murdered by your ancestors? Name just one! They killed them all [[Luke 11:47-51](#)]
—even the ones who prophesied long ago of the coming of the Righteous One! Now you follow in their steps and have become His betrayers and murderers. 53 You have been given the law by the visitation of angels, but you have not obeyed it."

54 When they heard these things, they were overtaken with violent rage [cut to the heart], and they gnashed their teeth at him. 55 But Stephen [being full of the Holy Spirit,] fixed his gaze into the heavenly realm and saw the glory and splendour of God—and Jesus, who stood up at the right hand of God.

56 "Look!" Stephen said. "I can see the heavens opening and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God to welcome me home!"

57 His accusers covered their ears with their hands and screamed at the top of their lungs to drown out his voice. 58 Then they pounced on him and threw him outside the city walls to stone him. His accusers, one by one, placed their outer garments at the feet of a young man named Saul of Tarsus.

59 As they hurled stone after stone at him, Stephen prayed, "Our Lord Jesus, accept my spirit into your presence." 60 He crumpled to his knees and shouted in a loud voice, "Our Lord, don't hold this sin against them." And then he died.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. Physically built Temple (destroyed), Jesus's Temple, and us as a Temple:

[John 2:19-22](#) (TPT)

Jesus answered, "After you've destroyed this temple, I will raise it up again in three days." 20 Then the Jewish leaders sneered, "This temple took forty-six years to build, and you mean to tell us that you will raise it up in three days?" 21 But they didn't understand that Jesus was speaking of the "temple" of his body. 22 But the disciples remembered his prophecy after Jesus rose from the dead, and believed both the Scripture and what Jesus had said.

[Matthew 27:50-51](#) (TPT)

Jesus passionately cried out, took his last breath, and gave up his spirit. 51 At that moment the veil in the Holy of Holies was torn in two from the top to the bottom. The earth shook violently, rocks were split apart...

[2 Corinthians 2:16b](#) (TPT)

For indeed, we are the temple of the living God, just as God has said: I will make my home in them and walk among them. I will be their God, and they will be my people.

Question: What happened with the physically-built Temple—did it still serve a purpose after the Cross?

Response:

B. Temple sacrifices and forgiveness of sin—Jesus our permanent sacrifice:

[Hebrews 9:1-11](#) (TPT)

Now in the first covenant there were specific rules for worship including a sanctuary on earth to worship in. 2 When you entered the tabernacle you would first come into the holy chamber where you would find the lampstand and the bread of his presence on the fellowship table. 3 Then as you pass through the next curtain you would enter the innermost chamber called, the holiest sanctuary of all. 4 It contained the golden altar of incense and the ark of covenant mercy, which was a wooden box covered entirely with gold. And placed inside the ark of covenant mercy was the golden jar with mystery-manna inside Aaron's resurrection rod, which had sprouted, and the stone tablets engraved with the covenant laws. 5 On top of the lid of the ark were two cherubim, angels of splendour, with outstretched wings overshadowing the throne of mercy. But now is not the time to discuss further the significant details of these things.

6 So with this prescribed pattern of worship the priests would routinely go in and out of the first chamber to perform their religious duties. 7 And the high priest was permitted to enter into the Holiest Sanctuary of All only once a year and he could never enter without first offering sacrificial blood for both his own sins and for the sins of the people.

8 Now the Holy Spirit uses the symbols of this pattern of worship to reveal that the perfect way of holiness had not yet been unveiled. For as long as the tabernacle stood 9 it was an illustration that pointed to our present time of fulfilment, demonstrating that offerings and animal sacrifices had failed to perfectly cleanse the conscience of the worshiper. 10 For this old pattern of worship was a matter of external rules and rituals concerning food and drink and ceremonial washings which was imposed upon us until the appointed time of heart-restoration had arrived.

11 But now the Anointed One has become the King-Priest of every wonderful thing that has come. For he serves in a greater, more perfect heavenly tabernacle not made by men. 12 And he has entered once and forever into the Holiest Sanctuary of All, not with the blood of animal sacrifices, but the sacred blood of his own sacrifice. And he alone has made our salvation secure forever!

[Romans 3:24-26](#) (TPT)

Yet through his powerful declaration of acquittal, God freely gives away his righteousness. His gift of love and favour now cascades over us, all because Jesus, the Anointed One, has liberated us from the guilt, punishment, and power of sin!

25 Jesus' God-given destiny was to be the sacrifice to take away sins, and now he is our mercy seat because of his death on the cross. We come to him for mercy, for God has made a provision for us to be forgiven by faith in the sacred blood of Jesus. This is the perfect demonstration of God's justice, because until now, he had been so patient—holding back his justice out of his tolerance for us. So he covered over the sins of those who lived prior to Jesus' sacrifice. 26 And when the season of tolerance came to an end, there was only one possible way for God to give away his righteousness and still be true to both his justice and his mercy—to offer up his own Son. So now, because we stand on the faithfulness of Jesus, God declares us righteous in his eyes!

TABERNACLE: BODY, MIND, SOUL, HEART, SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 012



Question: Read also the remainder of [Hebrews 9 & 10](#) to understand the former customs and regulations of the Temple and sacrifices. Do we have to do the same offering of sacrifices (ask for forgiveness) for our sins now?

Response:

C. Our distinct and interconnected parts of our Tabernacle / Temple (Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit):

[1 Thessalonians 5:23](#) (TPT)

Now, may the God of peace and harmony set you apart, making you completely holy. And may your entire being—spirit, soul, and body—be kept completely flawless in the appearing of our Lord Jesus, the Anointed One.

[3 John 2](#) (TPT)

Beloved friend, I pray that you are prospering in every way and that you continually enjoy good health, just as your soul is prospering.

[Hebrews 4:12](#) (TPT)

For we have the living Word of God, which is full of energy, and it pierces more sharply than a two-edged sword. It will even penetrate to the very core of our being where soul and spirit, bone and marrow meet! It interprets and reveals the true thoughts and secret motives of our hearts.

[Hebrews 10:22](#) (TPT)

we come closer to God and approach him with an open heart, fully convinced by faith that nothing will keep us at a distance from him. For our hearts have been sprinkled with blood to remove impurity and we have been freed from an accusing conscience and now we are clean, unstained, and presentable to God inside and out!

[Galatians 4:6](#) (TPT)

And so that we would know for sure that we are his true children, God released the Spirit of Sonship into our hearts—moving us to cry out intimately, “My Father! You’re our true Father!”

[Matthew 22:37b](#) (NKJV)

“You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.”

Question: Can you start seeing that there are specific roles and means for each part of our being?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. Review the scriptures associated with the different parts of the Moses Tabernacle and then also the scriptures that define our different parts of Body (and Flesh), Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit. Take time to familiarize yourself with the different parts and take notes as to what you feel speaks to you. This diagram shows relevant scriptures and topics:



Mind

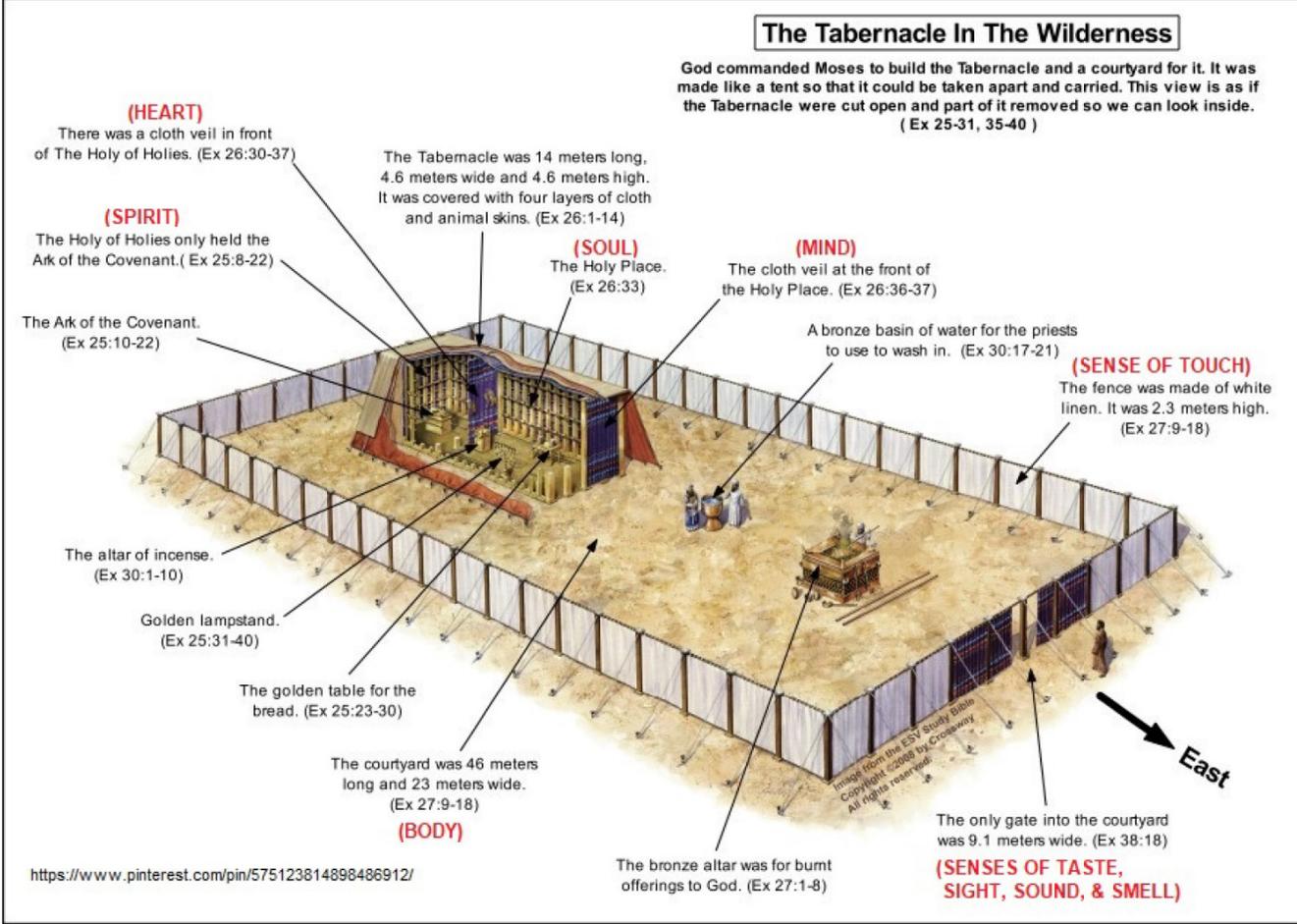
- Philippians 4:4-9
(Heart, Mind, Thinking)
- Romans 7:21-25 & 8:1-7
(Conflict, Flesh, Carnally Minded, Spirit)
- Romans 12:1-2
(Renewing of Mind)
- 2 Corinthians 3:12-16
(Vail on Heart & Mind)
- James 1:5-8
(Wisdom, Double-Minded)
- 2 Corinthians 4:3-4
(Blinded Minds)
- 2 Corinthians 11:3
(Minds Corrupted)
- Ephesians 4:17-19
(Vanity of the Mind, Ignorance)
- 2 Corinthians 10:3-5
(Strongholds, Imaginations)
- Ephesians 4:20-24
(Renewed in the Spirit of Your Mind)

Body & Flesh

- 1 Corinthians 6:19b-20
(Body is the Temple of H.G.)
- Romans 6:6-12
(Body & Sin)
- Romans 8:9-13
(Flesh, Body, Sin)
- Romans 12:1-2
(Bodies as Living Sacrifice)

Temple (Tabernacle) of God

- 2 Corinthians 6:16b *(Temple of the Living God)*
- John 2:19-20 *(Jesus as the Temple)*
- Hebrews 9:1-11 *(Moses Tabernacle, More Perfect Tabernacle)*
- 1 Corinthians 3:10-17 *(Holy Temple & Defilement)*



Triune Beings and Makeup

- 1 Thessalonians 5:23 *(Spirit, Soul, & Body)* - Hebrews 8:10 *(Mind & Heart)*
- 3 John 2 *(Soul & Health)* - Hebrews 10:22 *(Heart, Conscience, Body)*
- Galatians 4:6 *(Spirit into our heart)* - Romans 8:5-8 *(Flesh, Spirit, Mind)*
- Hebrews 3:7-8,12-13 *(Heart & Unbelief)* - Romans 12:1-2 *(Bodies, Living Sacrifice, Holy, Mind)*
- Hebrews 4:12 *(Soul, Spirit, Heart)*

Heart

- Mark 4:14-20
(Seed Sown on Heart)
- Acts 8:36-38
(Belief by Heart)
- Romans 10:9
(Belief in Heart)
- Matthew 9:4-7
(Mind of Heart)
- Luke 9:46-48
(Thought of Heart)
- John 14:27
(Troubled Heart)
- John 16:6,22
(Sorrowful Heart)
- Matthew 13:15
(Heart Waxed Gross)
- Hebrews 3:7-19
(Hardened Heart)
- Mark 6:49-52
(Hardened Heart)
- Mark 16:14
(Unbelief, Hard Heart)
- 1 John 3:19-24
(Heart Condemns)
- Hebrews 10:16-22
(Conscience & Heart)
- Acts 24:16
(Conscience)
- 1 Timothy 1:5
(Pure Heart)

Spirit

- Romans 8:16 *(Spirit & Our Spirit)*
- 1 Corinthians 2:11-12 *(Spirits)*
- 1 Corinthians 6:17 *(Joined Spirit)*
- Romans 8:9-11 *(In the Spirit)*
- Galatians 4:6-7 *(Spirit of His Son)*
- 1 Corinthians 15:45-53 *(Adam = Soul / Christ = Spirit)*
- Matthew 18:18 *(Will / Bind & Loose)*
- Mark 16:15-18 *(Will / Go Into All World)*
- 1 Corinthians 12:4-7 *(Gifts of the Spirit)*
- Galatians 5:22-23a *(Fruits of the Spirit)*
- John 15:1-5 *(Vine & Fruit)*

Soul

- Matthew 11:28-30 *(Rest in our Soul)*
- Matthew 22:37 *(Love the Lord with all Heart, Soul, Mind)*
- Mark 8:34-37 *(Loses Soul)*
- 1 Peter 2:11-12 *(War Against the Soul)*

- James 5:19-20 *(Saving a Soul)*
- 2 Peter 2:7-8 *(Tormented Soul)*
- 1 Thessalonians 5:23 *(Soul Preserved)*
- 3 John 2 *(Soul Prospers)*

TABERNACLE: BODY

INTENTION:

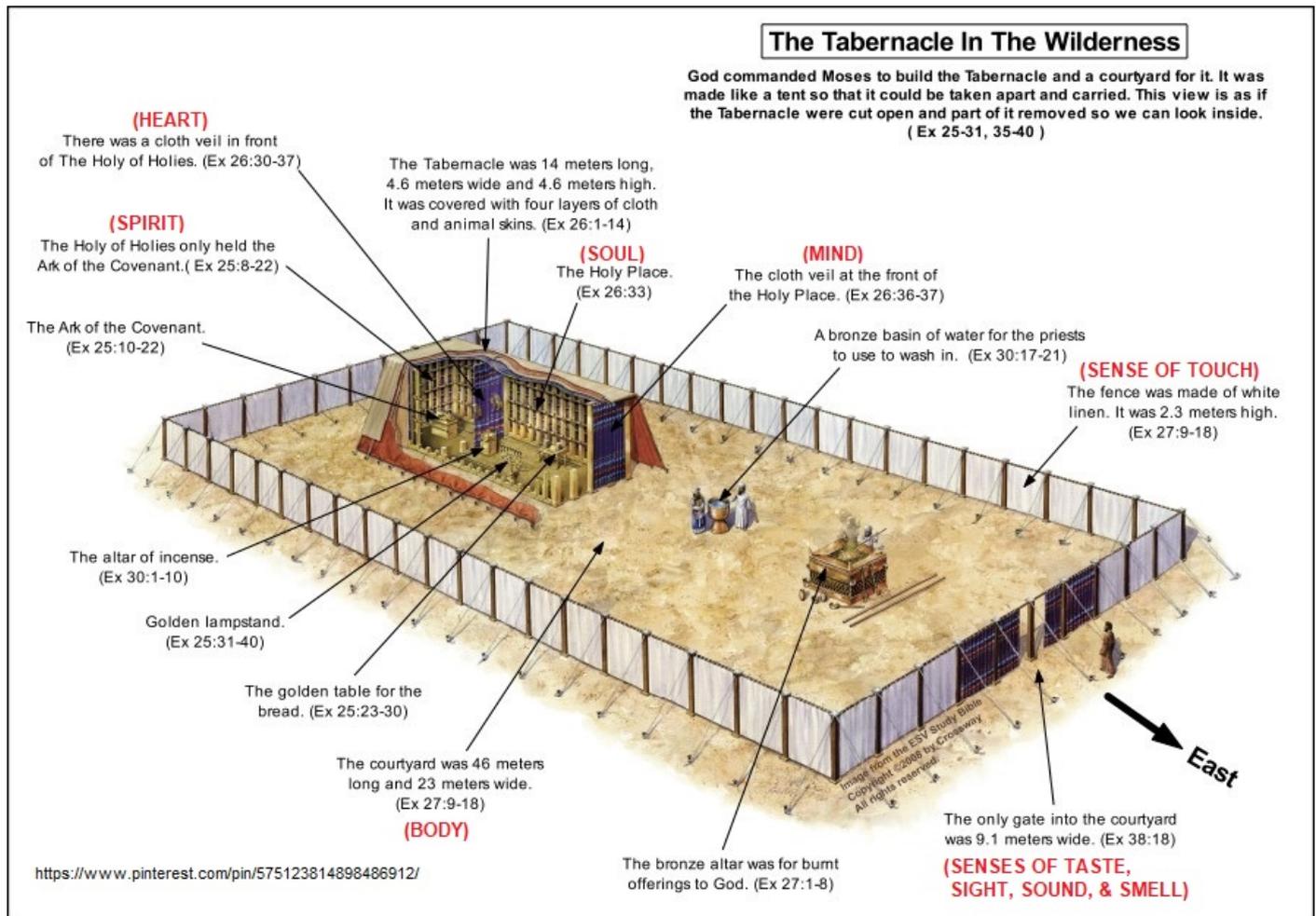
We want to discover what our body is in relation to being the “Temple of the Holy Spirit”.

Often we feel that our existence is just being a “body” on this earth; but it is more than that, housing our Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit. Yet this body we exist in is only temporary—so even if it is suffering in this world, we can have joy that we will get a brand new one. However, let us not forget the power and authority we still have in this world to guide and shape our bodies.

TABERNACLE: BODY

Bible Study: Lesson 013

I. TOPIC (PART 2 – BODY):



In the continuation of our series “Tabernacle: Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit” we want to focus on Body.

It is our body that engages with the world around us through our 5 senses. The gate into the Tabernacle has four openings, one for each sense that enters our bodies: taste, smell, hear, and see. The fence of the Tabernacle is the 5th sense of touch. Everything around us goes through one or more of those senses, into our bodies, and then through our mind, engaging with our soul. Our body is also where sin dwells.

This connection trains us to start believing the physical world around us over the Spiritual world. Our “flesh” is that part of our body and mind that agree with the “reality” of the world over the Truth of God.

It is this connection of the body to the ways of this world that creates conflict in us (in our soul); but we need to understand and make clear to ourselves, that this body and these desires of the flesh have already been defeated by Christ in you—our sins of the flesh and body are perpetually and forever forgiven at the Cross almost 2000 years ago.

When we are Born-Again, our body is made a Holy Temple of the Lord, and nothing can undo that Holiness—no sin of the body (or flesh remnant) can take away this Holiness. For this maintaining of Holiness is done by Christ Jesus through the alter of fire and basin of water in the courtyard. The Lord does not destroy us when sin occurs; instead, He goes about removing the defilement that happens in our bodies.

Christ Jesus baptises us with the Holy Ghost and Fire. This fire is what we sacrifice on. The same sacrificial alter that was in the fenced area (courtyard) of the Tabernacle. And the internal pain we sometimes feel is that fire engulfing that which does not belong—whether an old habit, current sin, religious doctrine, etc. More detail can be read here: <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2016/06/grace-christ-us-part-4-holy-spirit-and.html>

TABERNACLE: BODY

Bible Study: Lesson 013



Also, in that same courtyard of the Tabernacle, near the alter, is the wash basin. This is where the ritualistic cleansing took place. But as Jesus shared with His disciples, it is His Word that washes us clean—always.

Yet, because of conflict of our flesh, we are still promised a new body when the Lord returns—no longer having to deal with our old self that is connected to this departing world. So even though we may be suffering in our body (including physically), it will always be temporary; and we have a promised hope of a new body awaiting us!

But know also, that even though we are to get new bodies, the Lord values us in the body we are in. He still wants us to enjoy the things around us in this world that bring Godly joy to the body—for He made the earth and all the universe for our enjoyment. So don't reject those Godly things we can enjoy through our senses (even sex)—and if we don't know what is Godly or not, we can read those differences in scripture and follow the guidance of the Holy Spirit. And remember, even if you make a mistake, the Lord is not upset with you!

II. READING: [Romans 8:1-27](#) (MEV)

There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. 2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set me free from the law of sin and death. 3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God did by sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and concerning sin, He condemned sin in the flesh, 4 in order that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.

5 For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. 6 To be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace, 7 for the carnal mind is hostile toward God, for it is not subject to the law of God, nor indeed can it be, 8 and those who are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 You, however, are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God lives in you. Now if any man does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him. 10 And if Christ is in you, though the body is dead because of sin, the Spirit is alive because of righteousness. 11 But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead lives in you, He who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit that lives in you.

12 Therefore, brothers, we are debtors not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh. 13 For if you live according to the flesh, you will die, but if through the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are the sons of God. 15 For you have not received the spirit of slavery again to fear. But you have received the Spirit of adoption, by whom we cry, "Abba, Father." 16 The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirits that we are the children of God, 17 and if children, then heirs: heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified with Him.

18 For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed to us. 19 The eager expectation of the creation waits for the appearance of the sons of God. 20 For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but by the will of Him who subjected it, in hope 21 that the creation itself also will be set free from its slavery to corruption into the glorious freedom of the children of God.

22 We know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. 23 Not only that, but we also, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan within ourselves while eagerly waiting for adoption, the redemption of our bodies. 24 For we are saved through hope, but hope that is seen is not hope, for why does a man still hope for what he sees? 25 But if we hope for what we do not see, we wait for it with patience.

26 Likewise, the Spirit helps us in our weaknesses, for we do not know what to pray for as we ought, but the Spirit Himself intercedes for us with groanings too deep for words. 27 He who searches the hearts knows what the mind of the Spirit is, because He intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [1 Corinthians 3:10-15](#) (MEV)

According to the grace of God which has been given to me, as a wise master builder, I have laid the foundation, but another builds on it. Now let each one take heed how he builds on it. 11 For no one can lay another foundation than that which was laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or stubble, 13 each one's work will be revealed. For the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire, and the fire will test what sort of work each has done. 14 If anyone's work which he has built on the foundation endures, he will receive a reward. 15 If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss. But he himself will be saved, still going through the fire.

Question: What do you find yourself building on the alter that is being tested by fire?

Response:

B. The Lord's reaction to defilement (cleansing of the Temple / us):

[John 2:13-17](#) (MEV)

The Passover of the Jews was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 14 In the temple He found those who were selling oxen and sheep and doves, and the moneychangers sitting there. 15 When He had made a whip of cords, He drove them all out of the temple, with the sheep and oxen. He poured out the changers' money and overturned the tables. 16 He said to those who sold doves, "Take these things away! Do not make My Father's house a house of merchandise!" 17 His disciples remembered that it was written, "Zeal for Your house will consume Me."

[Luke 19:45-46](#) (MEV)

Then He entered the temple and began to drive out those who sold and bought in it, 46 saying to them, "It is written, 'My house will be a house of prayer,' but you have made it 'a den of thieves.'"

[1 Corinthians 3:16-17](#) (MEV) [PoG]

Do you not know that you are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? 17 If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy [this, *the defilement* ([G5126](#))]. For the temple of God is holy. And you are His [*Holy*] temple.

[Galatians 5:25b-27](#) (MEV)

... Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for it, 26 that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 27 and that He might present to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish.

[John 15:3](#) (MEV)

You are already clean through the word which I have spoken to you.

Question: What does God destroy, the Temple or the defilement in the Temple?

Response:

C. Our conflict and choices:

[Romans 6:5-18](#) (MEV)

For if we have been united with Him in the likeness of His death, so shall we also be united with Him in the likeness of His resurrection, 6 knowing this, that our old man has been crucified with Him, so that the body of sin might be destroyed, and we should no longer be slaves to sin. 7 For the one who has died is freed from sin. 8 Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him, 9 knowing that Christ, being raised from the dead, will never die again; death has no further dominion over Him. 10 For the death He died, He died to sin once for all, but the life He lives, He lives to God.

11 Likewise, you also consider yourselves to be dead to sin, but alive to God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 12 Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lusts. 13 Do not yield your members to sin as instruments of unrighteousness, but yield yourselves to God, as those who are alive from the dead, and your bodies to God as instruments of righteousness. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? Shall we sin because we are not under the law but under grace? God forbid! 16 Do you not know that to whom you yield yourselves as slaves to obey, you are slaves of the one whom you obey, whether of sin leading to death, or of obedience leading to righteousness? 17 But thanks be to God, for you were slaves of sin, but you have obeyed from the heart that form of teaching to which you were entrusted, 18 and having been freed from sin, you became the slaves of righteousness.

[Romans 7:21-25](#) (MEV)

21 I find then a law that when I desire to do good, evil is present with me. 22 For I delight in the law of God according to the inner man, 23 but I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from the body of this death? 25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with my mind, I serve the law of God, but with my flesh, the law of sin.

Question: Can you feel the conflict of the world vs the Spirit in yourself? Do you have authority and a choice?

Response:

D. [Romans 12:1-2](#) (MEV)

I urge you therefore, brothers, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy, and acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service of worship. 2 Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

TABERNACLE: BODY

Bible Study: Lesson 013



Question: What does a “living sacrifice” mean to you?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [2 Corinthians 5:14-17](#) (MEV):

For the love of Christ constrains us, because we thus judge: that if one died for all, then all have died. 15 And He died for all, that those who live should not from now on live for themselves, but for Him who died for them and rose again. 16 So from now on we do not regard anyone according to the flesh. Yes, though we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet we do not regard Him as such from now on. 17 Therefore, if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature. Old things have passed away. Look, all things have become new.

Thoughts: Something we tend to do as humans is judge other people for the things they do or don't do (regardless of whether it's a comparison to our own actions or some form of morality). Since we are comprised of more than just a body, we must understand that what we do is a result of a blend of our being and the filters we apply (or that have been applied to us).

This is what Paul is getting at above—that we can no longer look at a person's exterior to know whom they are. Only the Lord truly understands their identity and the reasons why people do things. The Lord actually sees the end from the beginning ([Isaiah 46:9-10](#)) and every minute detail of a person's existence in relation to the world we are in (including the actions/inactions of everyone else from the beginning of time). None of us have that insight to understand others or ourselves.

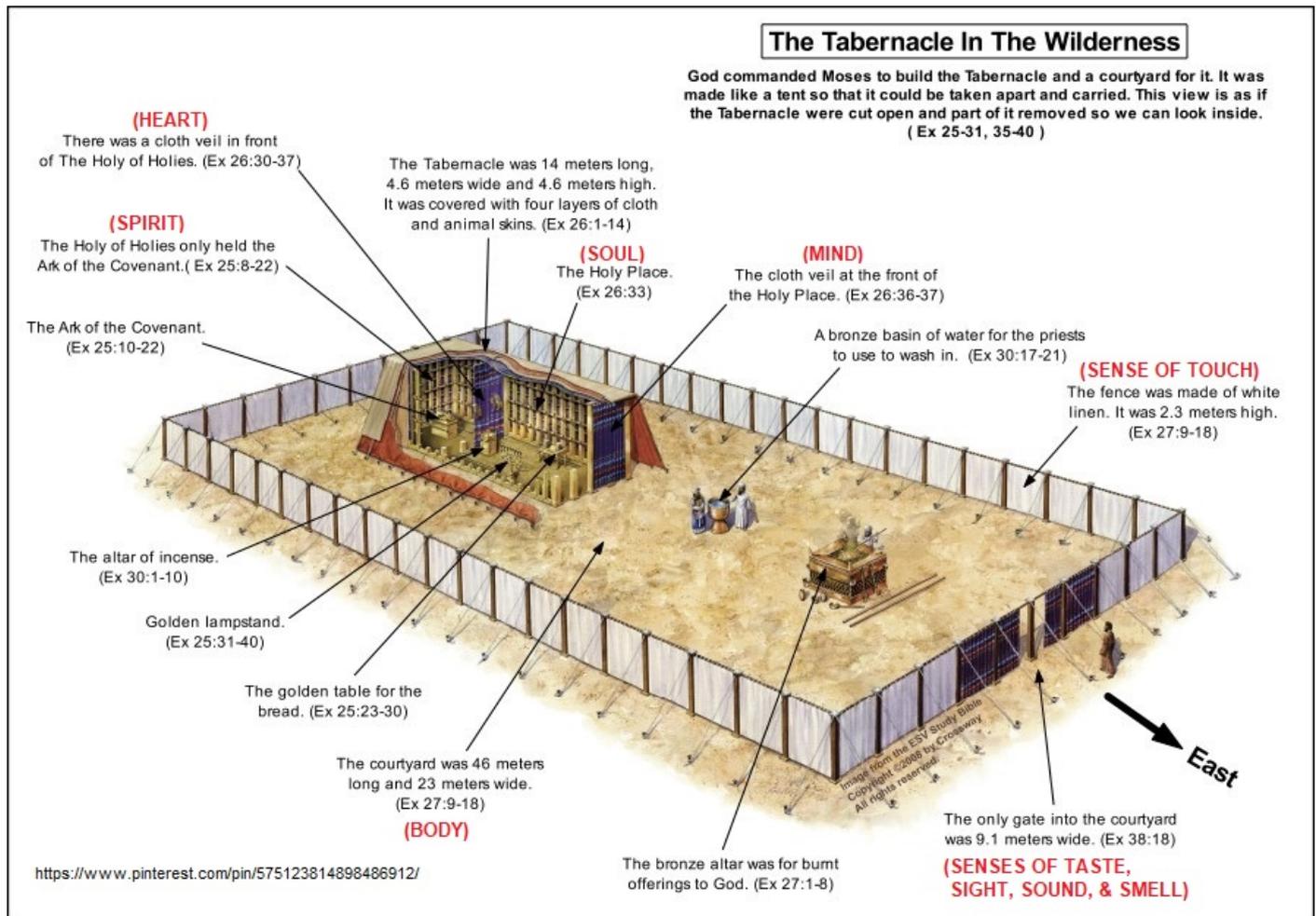
Thus, when we judge ourself or others for what the body and flesh do, we neglect all the other parts of our being and the fulfilment of the Cross to take away all the sins of the flesh of every human being ([Hebrews 10](#)). When we let go of that judgment, we actually allow ourselves to Love others (and to Love ourself) with the Love of God! And too, perpetually walk in forgiveness of others as we ourselves are forgiven (whom are forgiven also).

TABERNACLE: MIND

INTENTION:

Our mind can guide a lot of what we do by its thinking and imaginations; impacting our lives and the lives of those around us. Yet, we can renew it away from the influences of this world and shape it into acknowledging and accepting a greater Truth from the Holy Spirit inside of us.

I. TOPIC (PART 3 – MIND):



In the continuation of our series “Tabernacle: Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit” we want to focus on the Mind.

When looking at the diagram above, we see that the first doorway into the Tabernacle from the Courtyard is our mind. Everything that gets processed by our 5 senses (our body) goes through our brain (our mind)—our mind is the gateway from the body into the soul. And is the battleground for much of our life.

But what can create beautiful imaginations, can also create doctrine and obstacles (filters) against the Lord. Because it is here in the mind that we begin to train our thinking into accepting the world around us as reality; creating those filters on our mind that affect our own will (which comes from the Spirit in us). These filters are developed through negative “nature and nurture”; and can be: racism, xenophobia, religious doctrines, victim mentality, a poverty mindset, negative thinking, and more.

Our minds from birth are an open and free sponge, accepting all that comes its way—whether positive or negative nature or nurturing. We don’t consciously know if it is positive or negative at that childhood time, but as we grow and mature, we can often recognise where we picked up a “bad habit” or “bad mindset” and change it in our adulthood—even though it can be quite a painful process in reprogramming and rewiring the brain.

However, when we align our mind (thinking, imaginations, wisdom, etc) with the Lord, we help set our beliefs on Him and allow Him to more clearly flow out into our bodies from His Spirit within. The battle for our mind is strong as the world will always want to train it to align with itself—yet the brain is always malleable and can untrain and retrain itself.

So, when you find something misaligned with the Lord, know that you CAN change it, and the Lord will help you through that change to set you free from the filters that hinder or destroy your life. Even undoing traumas.

II. **READING:** [Philippians 4:1-20](#) (NTE)

Well then, my dear family – I miss you so much, you’re my joy and crown! – this is how you must stand firm in the Lord, my beloved people.

2 I have a special appeal which goes jointly to Euodia and Syntyche: please, please, come to a common mind in the Lord. 3 (And here’s a request for you too, my loyal comrade: please help these women. They have struggled hard in the gospel alongside me, as have Clement and my other fellow-workers, whose names are in the book of life.)

4 Celebrate joyfully in the Lord, all the time. I’ll say it again: celebrate! 5 Let everybody know how gentle and gracious you are. The Lord is near.

6 Don’t worry about anything. Rather, in every area of life let God know what you want, as you pray and make requests, and give thanks as well. 7 And God’s peace, which is greater than we can ever understand, will keep guard over your hearts and minds in King Jesus.

8 For the rest, my dear family, these are the things you should think through: whatever is true, whatever is holy, whatever is upright, whatever is pure, whatever is attractive, whatever has a good reputation; anything virtuous, anything praiseworthy. 9 And these are the things you should do: what you learned, received, heard and saw in and through me. And the God of peace will be with you.

10 I’ve been having a great celebration in the Lord because your concern for me has once again burst into flower. (You were of course concerned for me before, but you didn’t have an opportunity to show it.)

11 I’m not talking about lacking anything. I’ve learnt to be content with what I have. 12 I know how to do without, and I know how to cope with plenty. In every possible situation I’ve learned the hidden secret of being full and hungry, of having plenty and going without, and it’s this: 13 I have strength for everything in the one who gives me power.

14 But you did the right thing by entering into partnership with me in my suffering. 15 Indeed, as you people in Philippi know well, when the gospel was getting under way and I was moving on from Macedonia, there wasn’t a single other church, except yourselves, that entered into a two-way partnership with me, giving and receiving. 16 Yes: when I was in Thessalonica you sent help to me, not just once but twice.

17 I stress that it isn’t the gift I’m interested in. My concern is that you should have a healthy profit balance showing up on your account. 18 For myself, I’ve received full payment, and I’m well stocked up. In fact, I’m full to overflowing, now that I have received from Epaphroditus what you sent. It’s like a sacrifice with a beautiful smell, a worthy offering, giving pleasure to God. 19 What’s more, my God will meet all your needs, too, out of his store of glorious riches in King Jesus. 20 Glory be to our God and father for ever and ever, Amen!

III. **RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:**

A. [Mark 12:30](#) (NTE) [PoG]

“and you shall love the Lord your God with [your whole] heart, and with [your whole] soul, and with [your whole] understanding, and with [your whole] strength.”

Question: When we Love Him in “whole”, it means without filters and hindrances—what are some filters you feel you can eliminate in your mind that affect how you view the Lord?

Response:

B. Renewing the Mind (<https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2016/06/forgetting-past-renewing-mind-06-13-16.html>):

[Ephesians 4:17-24](#) (NTE)

So this is what I want to say; I am bearing witness to it in the Lord. You must no longer behave like the Gentiles, foolish-minded as they are. 18 Their understanding is darkened; they are cut off from God's life because of their deep-seated ignorance, which springs from the fact that their hearts are hard. 19 They have lost all moral sensitivity, and have given themselves over to whatever takes their fancy. They go off greedily after every kind of uncleanness.

20 But that's not how you learned the king! – 21 if indeed you did hear about him, and were taught in him, in accordance with the truth about Jesus himself. 22 That teaching stressed that you should take off your former lifestyle, the old humanity. That way of life is decaying, as a result of deceitful lusts. 23 Instead, you must be renewed in the spirit of your mind, 24 and you must put on the new humanity, which is being created the way God intended it, displaying justice and genuine holiness.

[Romans 12:1-2](#) (NTE)

So, my dear family, this is my appeal to you by the mercies of God: offer your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and pleasing to God. Worship like this brings your mind into line with God's. 2 What's more, don't let yourselves be squeezed into the shape dictated by the present age. Instead, be transformed by the renewing of your minds, so that you can work out what God's will is, what is good, acceptable and complete.

[Philippians 3:13b-16](#) (NTE) [PoG]

this is my one aim: to forget [no longer care for ([G1950](#))] everything that's behind, and to strain every nerve to go after what's ahead. 14 I mean to chase on towards the finishing post, where the prize waiting for me is the upward call of God in King Jesus. 15 Those of us who are mature should think like this! If you think differently about it, God will reveal this to you as well. 16 Only let's be sure to keep in line with the position we have reached.

Question: Do you feel you need to change (or "forget") in your own mind anything contrary to the Lord?

Response:

C. Worldly vs Spiritual wisdom and discernment:

[1 Corinthians 2:13b-16](#) (NTE)

We don't use words we've been taught by human wisdom, but words we've been taught by the spirit, interpreting spiritual things to spiritual people. 14 Someone living at the merely human level doesn't accept the things of God's spirit. They are foolishness to such people, you see, and they can't understand them because they need to be discerned spiritually. 15 But spiritual people discern everything, while nobody else can discern the truth about them! 16 For 'Who has known the mind of the Lord, so as to instruct him?' But we have the mind of the Messiah.

[2 Corinthians 4:2b-6](#) (NTE)

We don't use tricks; we don't falsify God's word. Rather, we speak the truth openly, and recommend ourselves to everybody's conscience in the presence of God. 3 However, if our gospel still remains 'veiled', it is veiled for people who are perishing. 4 What's happening there is that the god of this world has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they won't see the light of the gospel of the glory of the Messiah, who is God's image. 5 We don't proclaim ourselves, you see, but Jesus the Messiah as Lord, and ourselves as your servants because of

Jesus; 6 because the God who said ‘let light shine out of darkness’ has shone in our hearts, to produce the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus the Messiah.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-5](#) (NTE) [PoG]

Yes, we are mere humans, but we don’t fight the war in a merely human way. 4 The weapons we use for the fight, you see, are not merely human; they carry a power from God that can tear down fortresses! We tear down clever arguments, 5 and every proud notion that sets itself up against the knowledge of [God; leading away into captivity every thought and making it obedient to] the Messiah.

Question: Do you believe you have the “mind of Christ”? Do you know anyone who hears testimonies and truths about the Lord, yet their minds still reject His existence? What are ways you can discern that your thoughts are going against the “knowledge of God”; or that someone is speaking with worldly wisdom vs Spiritual?

Response:

D. [Ephesians 2:1-7](#) (NTE)

So where do you come into it all? Well, you were dead because of your offences and sins! 2 That was the road you used to travel, keeping in step with this world’s ‘present age’; in step, too, with the ruler of the power of the air, the spirit that is, even now, at work among people whose whole lives consist of disobeying God. 3 Actually, that’s how all of us used to behave, conditioned by physical desires. We used to do what our flesh and our minds were urging us to do. What was the result? We too were subject to wrath in our natural state, just like everyone else.

4 But when it comes to mercy, God is rich! He had such great love for us that 5 he took us at the very point where we were dead through our offences, and made us alive together with the king (yes, you are saved by sheer grace!). 6 He raised us up with him, and made us sit with him – in the heavenly places, in King Jesus! 7 This was so that in the ages to come he could show just how unbelievably rich his grace is, the kindness he has shown us in King Jesus.

Question: What do you find you have trouble with letting go of your “former self” (old flesh and mind)?

Response:

E. [Colossians 1:9-11,21b-22](#) (NTE)

For this reason, from the day we heard it, we haven’t stopped praying for you. We’re asking God to fill you with the knowledge of what he wants in all wisdom and spiritual understanding. 10 This will mean that you’ll be able to conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the Lord, and so give him real delight, as you bear fruit in every good work and grow up in the knowledge of God. 11 I pray that you’ll be given all possible strength, according to the power of his glory, so that you’ll have complete patience and become truly steadfast and joyful.

...there was a time when you were excluded! You were enemies in your thinking, and in wicked behaviour. 22 But now he has reconciled you in the body of his flesh, through death, in order to bring you into his presence holy, blameless and without any accusation.

Question: We have to remember that we, in truth, are not enemies of God...we only think we are in our imaginations. What are ways we can remind ourselves, even when we make a mistake (sin), that we haven't changed our Loving relationship with the Lord (that He is not upset or disappointed with you)?

Response:

F. How we need to think of ourselves:

[John 10:34-36](#) (NTE)

'It's written in your law, isn't it,' replied Jesus to them, ' "I said, you are gods?" 35 Well, if the law calls people "gods", people to whom God's word came (and you can't set the Bible aside), 36 how can you accuse someone of blasphemy when the father has placed him apart and sent him into the world, and he says, "I am the son of God"?'

[Philippians 2:5-11](#) [PoG]

Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: 6 who, being in the form of God, did not think He had something that didn't belong to Him—He didn't think that equality with God was wrong, or that He had acquired something that wasn't supposed to be His. 7 Yet He emptied Himself, made Himself devoted to another (a slave), and existed in the identity of a human. 8 Indeed, He discovered Himself as being comprised of everything that a human is. He humbled Himself, becoming obedient until death; moreover, death on the cross. 9 On account of this, God indeed exalted Him to the Highest Rank, even giving Him a Name which is over and beyond each and every name! 10 So that, by the Name of Jesus, every knee should bow down in honour: whether in heaven, on earth, or in the world below. 11 Indeed, each and every tongue (of each and every language) will profess and confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Question: We are as Christ ([1 John 4:17b](#))—does your mind agree with this truth?

Response:

G. [James 1:5-8](#) (NTE)

If any one of you falls short in wisdom, they should ask God for it, and it will be given them. God, after all, gives generously and ungrudgingly to all people. 6 But they should ask in faith, with no doubts. A person who doubts is like a wave of the sea which the wind blows and tosses about. 7 Someone like that should not suppose they will receive anything from the Lord, 8 since they are double-minded and unstable in everything they do.

Question: Do you feel you can ask the Lord for anything—even clarity as to the things in our mind that might be deceiving us regarding us knowing His Truth?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

We must not limit how the Lord can work through different techniques available to us from the Medical or Psychological fields. The following are ways I have found which help me overcome the ways my mind (brain) has been detrimentally programmed—and these methods, to me, align with ways we can Biblically “renew our minds”. Often, I find that the Bible references a task, and that both science and psychology fill in the details.

One of the goals we have is to help people in their Mental Health state—having personally suffered from Depression, Anxiety, PTSD, and Suicidal Ideation. We know the affects it can have on one’s life and that of the lives around someone suffering from these. But we know and feel that these do not have to be a permanent reality to anyone. Through my relationship with the Lord, medication, deliverance, Psychiatrists, and Psychologists, I have been able to overcome these debilitating conditions.

Following are two techniques that assisted me, helping renew my mind (rewiring my brain) and healing my soul.

A. Mental Health – Dr Caroline Leaf (www.drleaf.com):

[Dr. Caroline Leaf has developed a] theory (called the Geodesic Information Processing theory) of how we think, build memory, and learn, into tools and processes that have transformed the lives of hundreds of thousands of individuals with Traumatic Brain Injury (TBI), Chronic Traumatic Encephalopathy (CTE), learning disabilities (ADD, ADHD), autism, dementias and mental ill-health issues like anxiety and depression. She has helped hundreds of thousands of students and adults learn how to use their mind to detox and grow their brain to succeed in every area of their lives, including school, university, and the workplace. – www.drleaf.com/pages/about-dr-leaf

Thoughts: Both my wife and I have gone through some of her books and listened to many of her talks. In brief, she (and we) believe that our mind can Rewire / Unwire the brain to overcome habits, addictions, and negativity.

B. Mental Health – BrainWorking Recursive Therapy (www.BWRT.org):

BWRT is defined by Terence Watts – the leading therapist who developed it – as an approach grounded in science. It uses natural psychological processes to recondition neural pathways in the brain that lead to unwanted behaviour. By stopping and rerouting the brain’s natural response to anything traumatic or not understood in its tracks, BWRT can prevent the negative outward symptoms of conditions like depression and anxiety. It uses no devices, advanced technologies or medication, but simply involves a patient and a therapist talking – like many other forms of therapy. Watts believes that because many physical health problems are rooted in – or at least impacted by – psychological problems, BWRT can also be effective in coping with the symptoms of diabetes, multiple sclerosis, and a number of autoimmune diseases. He says: “The purpose of BWRT is to give people the life they deserve, and that’s what it does. “It’s about giving people contentment in their lives, and making them feel equal to others. BWRT does that better than any other therapy I’ve ever used.” - www.ns-healthcare.com/analysis/brain-working-recursive-therapy/

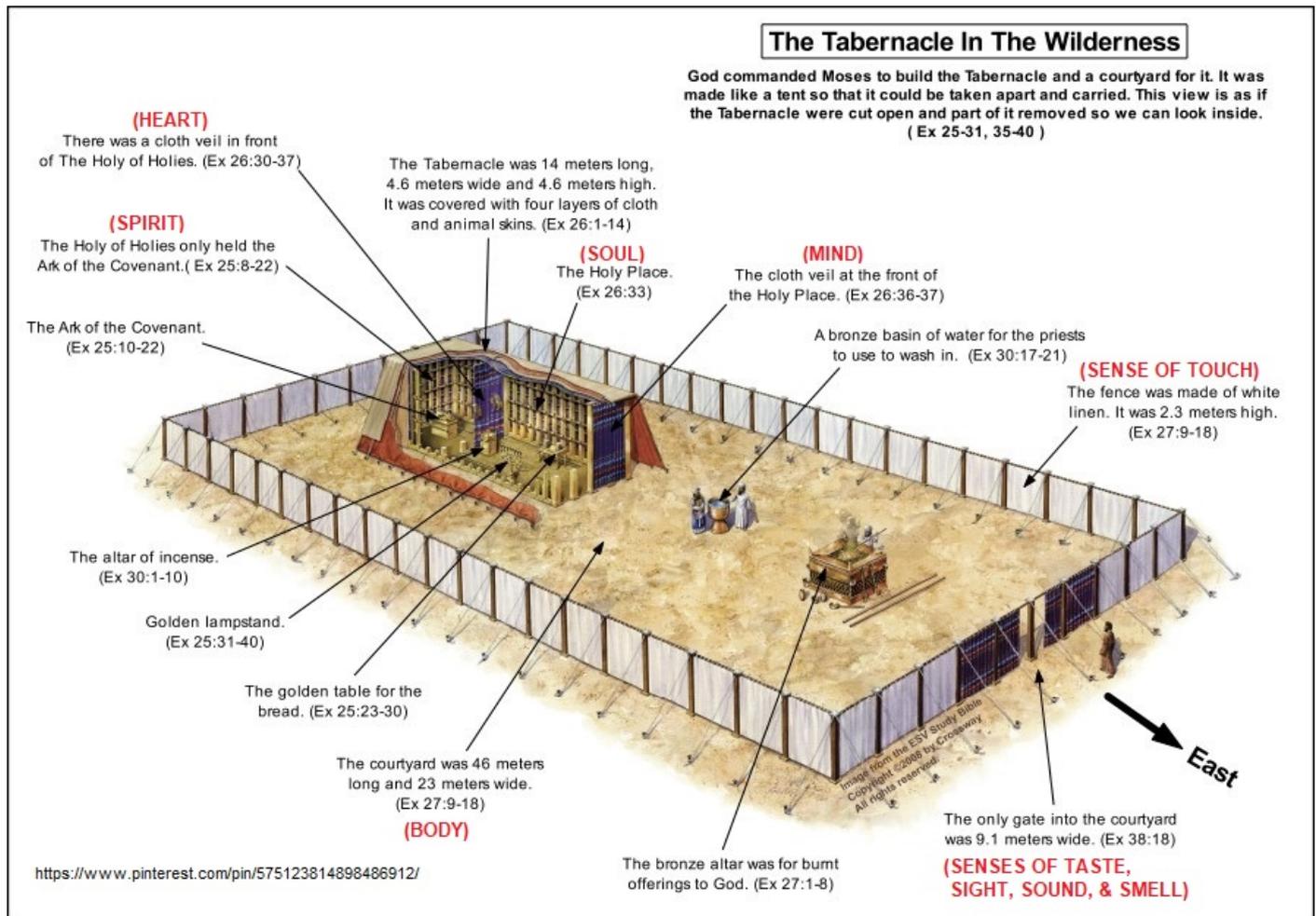
Thoughts: Having done several BWRT sessions with my Psychologist, I’ve been able to undo harsh traumas in my past—even from childhood. This has helped free me from much of the negativity and reaction-based responses from those traumas. Plus, it helped free me from the guilt and shame that I’ve lived with for so long in my life.

TABERNACLE: SOUL

INTENTION:

Our soul is where the core of our emotions lie. Knowing that they derive from a specific location in our being helps us to understand the why's of them and address their needs; also seeing the affect these emotions can have on our decisions (will) in life. We can then embrace emotions as God-given (not fearing them); while also being able to evaluate the ability to overcome them or to choose with them.

I. TOPIC (PART 4 – SOUL):



In the continuation of our series “Tabernacle: Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit” we want to focus on Soul.

For me, as I used to understand it, the word ‘soul’ and the word ‘spirit’ were one-and-the-same. But when you study it out and look at the meanings in the Greek, they are clearly separate. This, to me, made a huge difference in reading scripture where a verse would use soul—I could now relate it to what my soul is, and not confuse it with my Spirit. Now when I look at what the soul is, I can see that it is the realm made up of our emotions and feelings.

When I reference the soul, I purposefully use two words here: emotions and feelings. These typically are words used interchangeably in their meanings. However, I like to treat them different based on what transpires in the soul.

Firstly, we experience emotions related to what goes on about the world around us—from the external in; through our 5 senses, through the body, through the mind, and into our soul. Similarly, we experience emotions in relation to what transpires in and out from our Spirit through the heart, into the soul. What follows then, is a feeling related to that emotion—a “what are we feeling like doing” in response to the emotion. Examples:

- A loved-one that dies. I experience sadness / grief (emotion). From that, I then can: feel like crying; feel like isolating myself; feel like praising the Lord.
- I’m overloaded at work. I experience stress / anxiety (emotion). From that, I can: feel like quitting my job; feel like drinking; feel like I should seek help.
- The Holy Spirit is showing His Love for someone through me. I experience that Love (emotion). From that, I can: feel like doing what the Holy Ghost tells me; feel like running away; feel like blocking that emotion.

We all react to emotions differently, each with a feeling of doing something based on that emotion. And sometimes, we get conflicting feelings based on the pressures from the world and the gentle guidance from the Holy Spirit in us.

Our soul is thus the realm of conflict between the outside (world / flesh) and inside (Spirit). The turmoil we experience happens in our soul. Like our minds, our soul can become restless—even moreso since it lies in the centre between the body and the Spirit. And too, it can feel as though we have a dual-personality in us: at war.

Our soul processes our perceived two identities: that of the Spirit and that of the Flesh. We can be neck-deep in sin, and even continually chose sin in our bodies, and yet still be Born-Again, Spirit-filled, and saved. Yet, when in that dilemma of the incompatible “identities”, our soul experiences that conflict. Sin will not affect your relationship with God in any way! But it does affect your soul. And the only way this conflict will subside is when we let go of the flesh.

For me, my soul experiences anxiety when I have work to do. It seeks rest by avoiding the work through procrastination. Yet, instead of me rejecting the flesh (its learned behaviour), I get trapped into repeating the same anxiety-avoidance techniques again and again. The anxiety is so strong, it seeks the quickest way to eliminate it...hence the procrastination. But if I retrain myself in the Spirit, pushing through the anxiety, then it will have to give in, never to come back again. So instead of dealing with it each time, I eliminate that sin altogether, never having to face that same anxiety again.

Likewise, if I am stressed, I go for a sweet snack. But if I just push through that anxiety ‘driving’ me to want to eat a snack, I can overcome it and eliminate it for good. “Resist the devil (opposition to God) and it will flee from you” ([James 4:7](#)).

Another is that through the abuse suffered as a child from my dad, he nurtured in me that iniquity of anger. I find that this anger manifests itself in my life, sometimes even towards my child. I never wanted this anger, but this is a result of my dad’s iniquity nurtured into me. This fleshly anger is something that has to be eliminated from my life—it is not ‘my’ sin, but that of my dad. But I do know that through Christ and His renewal of me, that anger can go away.

So much of our stress and anxiety in the soul results not from some ‘big’ or “church-named” sin, but of the subtle things that define our “identity of the flesh”: handed-down iniquities from our parents, a personality type, a birth defect, a sickness / disease, an injury, a traumatic event, etc. We would not immediately call these a sin, but is in the context that it is opposed to the Lord and His Truth—and our “Identity as Jesus Christ” ([1 John 4:17](#)).

And as we learned in the previous lesson on renewing the mind; I can achieve this change through my relationship with the Lord, medication, Psychiatrists, and Psychologists—even removing sin from our life.

II. **READING:** [1 Peter 2:1-11](#) (TLB)

So get rid of your feelings of hatred. Don’t just pretend to be good! Be done with dishonesty and jealousy and talking about others behind their backs. 2-3 Now that you realize how kind the Lord has been to you, put away all evil, deception, envy, and fraud. Long to grow up into the fullness of your salvation; cry for this as a baby cries for his milk.

4 Come to Christ, who is the living Foundation of Rock upon which God builds; though men have spurned him, he is very precious to God who has chosen him above all others.

5 And now you have become living building-stones for God’s use in building his house. What’s more, you are his holy priests; so come to him—you who are acceptable to him because of Jesus Christ—and offer to God those things that please him. 6 As the Scriptures express it, “See, I am sending Christ to be the carefully chosen, precious Cornerstone of my church, and I will never disappoint those who trust in him.”

7 Yes, he is very precious to you who believe; and to those who reject him, well—“The same Stone that was rejected by the builders has become the Cornerstone, the most honoured and important part of the building.” 8 And the Scriptures also say, “He is the Stone that some will stumble over, and the Rock that will make them fall.” They will stumble because they will not listen to God’s Word nor obey it, and so this punishment must follow—that they will fall.

9 But you are not like that, for you have been chosen by God himself—you are priests of the King, you are holy and pure, you are God’s very own—all this so that you may show to others how God called you out of the darkness into

TABERNACLE: SOUL

Bible Study: Lesson 015



his wonderful light. 10 Once you were less than nothing; now you are God’s own. Once you knew very little of God’s kindness; now your very lives have been changed by it.

11 Dear brothers, you are only visitors here. Since your real home is in heaven, I beg you to keep away from the evil pleasures of this world; they are not for you, for they fight against your very souls.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Matthew 11:28-30](#) (TLB)

“Come to me and I will give you rest—all of you who work so hard beneath a heavy yoke. Wear my yoke—for it fits perfectly—and let me teach you; for I am gentle and humble, and you shall find rest for your souls; for I give you only light burdens.”

Question: What are ways we burden our soul with heavy loads?

Response:

B. [Mark 8:34-37](#) (TLB)

Then he called his disciples and the crowds to come over and listen. “If any of you wants to be my follower,” he told them, “you must put aside your own pleasures and shoulder your cross, and follow me closely. 35 If you insist on saving your life, you will lose it. Only those who throw away their lives for my sake and for the sake of the Good News will ever know what it means to really live. 36 “And how does a man benefit if he gains the whole world and loses his soul in the process? 37 For is anything worth more than his soul?”

Question: When the Lord gives to you, it come enveloped in Peace. How does chasing after worldly things cause one to “lose (damage) your soul”?

Response:

C. [3 John 1:2](#) (TLB)

Dear friend, I am praying that all is well with you and that your body is as healthy as I know your soul is.

Question: Look at how, medically, our bodies suffer when our soul is in turmoil. Do you find that your health is affected if you have unrest in your soul?

Response:

TABERNACLE: SOUL

Bible Study: Lesson 015



D. Tormented soul:

[2 Peter 2:7-8](#) (TLB) [PoG]

But at the same time the Lord rescued Lot out of Sodom because he was a good man, sick of the terrible wickedness he saw everywhere around him day after day [that tormented his righteous soul].

[James 1:21](#) (TLB)

So get rid of all that is wrong in your life, both inside and outside, and humbly be glad for the wonderful message we have received, for it is able to save our souls as it takes hold of our hearts.

[James 5:19-20](#) (TLB)

Dear brothers, if anyone has slipped away from God and no longer trusts the Lord and someone helps him understand the Truth again, 20 that person who brings him back to God will have saved a wandering soul from death, bringing about the forgiveness of his many sins.

Question: Do “unrighteous” people and behaviours around you trouble your own soul? How can we overcome this torment to help set our souls free?

Response:

E. [Mark 14:32-36](#) (TLB)

And now they came to an olive grove called the Garden of Gethsemane, and he instructed his disciples, “Sit here, while I go and pray.” 33 He took Peter, James, and John with him and began to be filled with horror and deepest distress. 34 And he said to them, “My soul is crushed by sorrow to the point of death; stay here and watch with me.” 35 He went on a little farther and fell to the ground and prayed that if it were possible the awful hour awaiting him might never come. 36 “Father, Father,” he said, “everything is possible for you. Take away this cup from me. Yet I want your will, not mine.”

Question: Have you ever been to a point of despair in your soul? Can Jesus relate to what you are going through?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. The Lord looks out for our soul:

[1 Thessalonians 5:23](#) (TLB)

May the God of peace himself make you entirely pure and devoted to God; and may your spirit and soul and body be kept strong and blameless until that day when our Lord Jesus Christ comes back again.

TABERNACLE: HEART

INTENTION:

Our heart is alive. It is the basis for where and what we believe; and can positively or negatively affect our experiences in life.

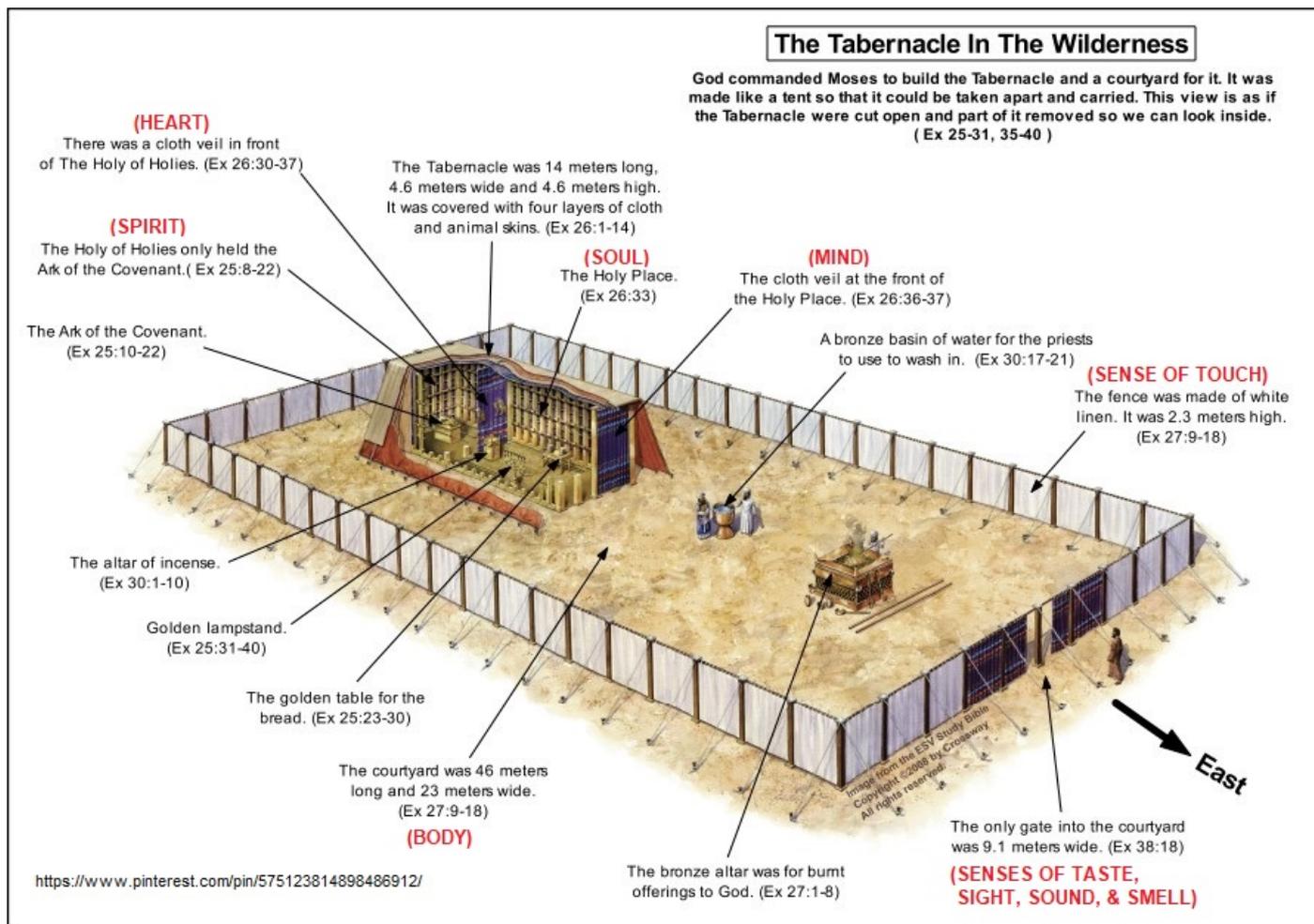
I have found that I used to live my life as a lowly “sinner saved by grace”. This sin-conscience dwelt on my heart, often condemning me. But once I believed that I was Righteous, not a sinner, that religious heaviness on my heart lifted—transforming my heart from that sin-conscience to a righteous-conscience.

We can let go and clear those “unbelief” filters from our heart; allowing us to receive and accept so much of what the Lord has gifted us in life.

TABERNACLE: HEART

Bible Study: Lesson 016

I. TOPIC (PART 5 – HEART):



In the continuation of our series “Tabernacle: Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit” we want to focus on Heart.

Like our minds, we can put barriers (filters) over our hearts ([Mark 12:30](#)). These filters and hardening of our own heart keep us from accepting (believing) in Jesus Christ—both for salvation, and for believing on the Holy Spirit.

Additionally, what we falsely believe about ourselves lies on our heart—hence why we are told to cleanse our heart from an “evil conscience” to instead have a “righteous conscience” (that we are not troubled by a consciousness of sin). When we see ourselves as “sinners”, we reject the Christ’s gifted righteousness as our true identity. And, moreso, condemn ourselves for our faults.

All of this shows the complexity of the heart and how it can affect, not only a person’s belief in Jesus Christ, but affect a believer in their relationship with the Lord; and can also hinder the miracles we seek. When we cleanse our heart, the Spirit within can flow freely and we can experience the Abundant Life Christ has given us!

II. READING: [Hebrews 10:1-23](#) (NMB)

NMB Summary: The old law has no power to cleanse away sin, but Christ did it with the offering of his body once and for all. An exhortation to receive this goodness of God thankfully, with patience and steadfast faith.

1 For the law, which has but the shadow of good things to come, and not the real things themselves, can never, with the sacrifices that the priests offer year by year continually, make those who come to it perfect. 2 For would not then those sacrifices have ceased to be offered, because the offerers, once purged, would have had no more conscience of sins? 3 But in those sacrifices, mention is made of sins every year. 4 For it is impossible that the blood

TABERNACLE: HEART

Bible Study: Lesson 016



of oxen and of goats should take away sins. 5 Therefore when he comes into the world he says: Sacrifice and offering you would not have, but a body you have made ready for me. 6 In sacrifices and sin-offerings you have no pleasure. 7 Then I said, Lo, I come! In the chief part of the book it is written of me, that I will do your will, O God.

8 Above – when he said sacrifice and offering, and burnt sacrifices and sin-offerings you would not have, neither have accepted (which yet are offered according to the law), 9 and then said, Lo, I come to do your will, O God – he takes away the first in order to establish the latter. 10 In accordance with this God's will, we are sanctified by the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once and for all.

11 And every priest is ready daily ministering, and repeatedly offers one manner of offering that can never take away sins. 12 But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, sat down forever on the right hand of God, 13 and from henceforth waits till his enemies be made his footstool. 14 For with one offering, he has made perfect forever those who are sanctified.

15 And the Holy Spirit also witnesses to us of this, namely when he foretold: 16 This is the testament that I will make unto them after those days, says the Lord: I will put my laws in their hearts, and in their mind I will write them, 17 and their sins and iniquities I will remember no more.

18 Now where there is remission of these things, there is no more offering for sin.

19 Seeing, brethren, that by the means of the blood of Jesus we may be bold to enter into that holy place, 20 by the new and living way that he has prepared for us through the veil (that is to say, by his flesh), 21 and seeing also that we have a high priest who is ruler over the house of God, 22 let us draw near with a true heart, in full faith, sprinkled in our hearts from an evil conscience, and washed in our bodies with pure water. 23 And let us keep the profession of our hope without wavering, for he who promised is faithful.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. Heart-believing:

[Mark 4:14-20](#) (NMB)

The sower sows the word. 15 And those who are by the wayside where the word is sown are those to whom, as soon as they have heard it, Satan comes immediately, and takes away the word that was sown in their hearts. 16 And likewise, those who receive the seed on the stony ground are those who, when they have heard the word, at once receive it with gladness, 17 yet have no roots in themselves. And so they endure but a time, and once trouble and persecution arise for the word's sake, they fall immediately. 18 And those who receive the seed among the thorns are such as hear the word, 19 but the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the hunger for other things, enter in and choke the word, and it is made unfruitful. 20 And those who received the seed in good ground are those who hear the word and receive it, and bring forth fruit: some thirtyfold, some sixtyfold, some a hundredfold.

[Acts 8:36-38](#) (NMB)

And as they went on their way, they came to some water, and the chamberlain said, See, here is water. What is to keep me from being baptized? 37 Philip said to him, If you believe with all your heart, you may be. He answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. 38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still. And they both went down into the water, both Philip and also the chamberlain, and he baptized him.

[Romans 10:9-13](#) (NMB)

For if you acknowledge with your mouth that Jesus is the Lord, and believe with your heart that God raised him up from death, you will be safe. 10 For the belief of the heart justifies, and to acknowledge with the mouth makes a man safe. 11 For the scripture says: Whoever believes on him, will not be ashamed. 12 There is no

TABERNACLE: HEART

Bible Study: Lesson 016



difference between the Jews and the Gentiles. For there is one Lord over all, who richly blesses all who call on him. 13 For: Whosoever calls upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

Question: We believe through the heart—have you believed in Jesus Christ to be saved?

Response:

B. Our heart has a “mind of its own” and is affected by emotion:

[Matthew 9:4-7](#) (NMB)

When Jesus saw their thoughts, he said, Why do you think evil in your hearts? 5 Which is easier to say: Your sins are forgiven you, or to say, Arise and walk? 6 But so that you may know that the Son of man has power to forgive sins in earth—Then he said to the paralytic, Arise, take up your bed, and go home to your house. 7 And the man arose and departed to his own house.

[Luke 9:46-48](#) (NMB)

Then there arose a dispute among them, who should be the greatest. 47 When Jesus perceived the thoughts of their hearts, he took a child and set him close by himself 48 and said to them, Whoever receives this child in my name, receives me. And whoever receives me, receives him who sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

[John 14:27](#) (NMB)

Peace I leave with you; my peace I give to you. Not as the world gives do I give to you. Let not your hearts be troubled, and do not fear.

[John 16:6,22](#) (NMB)

But because I have said such things to you, your hearts are full of sorrow. And you now are in sorrow. But I will see you again, and your hearts will rejoice, and no one will take your joy from you.

Question: What do you sometimes think and feel in your heart?

Response:

C. It’s not God that hardens our heart; but we can harden it through our own doubts, unbelief, and deception:

[Matthew 13:15](#) (NMB)

For the hearts of this people have grown dull, and their ears are hard of hearing, and their eyes they have closed, lest they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears and understand with their hearts, and should turn, so that I might heal them.

[Mark 6:49-52](#) (NMB) [PoG]

When they saw him [*Jesus*] walking upon the sea, they supposed it was a spirit and cried out. 50 For they all saw him and were afraid. And immediately he spoke to them and said to them, Be of good cheer, it is I. Be not afraid.

TABERNACLE: HEART

Bible Study: Lesson 016



51 And he went up to them into the boat, and the wind ceased; and they were greatly amazed in themselves beyond measure, and taken aback. 52 For they did not remember about the loaves, because their hearts were blinded [hardened].

[Mark 11:23](#) (NMB)

Truly I say to you that whoever says to this mountain, Take yourself away and cast yourself into the sea, and who does not waver in his heart, but believes that those things which he says will come to pass – whatever he says will be done for him.

[Hebrews 3:7-13](#) (NMB)

Therefore as the Holy Spirit says: Today if you hear his voice, 8 harden not your hearts, as in the rebellion in the day of trial in the wilderness, 9 where your fathers tried me, proved me, and saw my works forty years long. 10 Therefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do ever err in their hearts; they have not acknowledged my ways. 11 So I swore in my wrath that they would not enter into my rest. 12 Take heed, brethren, that there be in none of you an evil heart in unbelief, that he should depart from the living God; 13 but exhort one another daily, while it is called today, lest any of you grow hard-hearted through the deceitfulness of sin.

Question: What are ways you harden your heart to the Lord?

Response:

D. Our conscience is connected to our heart: hence, why we should always have a clean (righteous) conscience:

[Acts 24:16](#) (NMB) [PoG]

And therefore I strive to have a clear conscience [without offense, not troubled by a consciousness of sin] toward God, and toward man also.

[Philippians 1:9-11](#) (NMB) [PoG]

And this I pray: that your love may increase more and more in knowledge and in all experience, 10 that you may accept the things of most value, that you may be pure [without offense, not troubled by a consciousness of sin] until the day of Christ – 11 filled with the fruits of righteousness, which fruits come by Jesus Christ for the glory and laud of God.

[1 Timothy 1:5](#) (NMB)

For the end of the commandment is love that comes of a pure heart and a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned.

Question: Do you find you focus on your faults and sins? Do you feel you offend God?

Response:

TABERNACLE: SPIRIT

INTENTION:

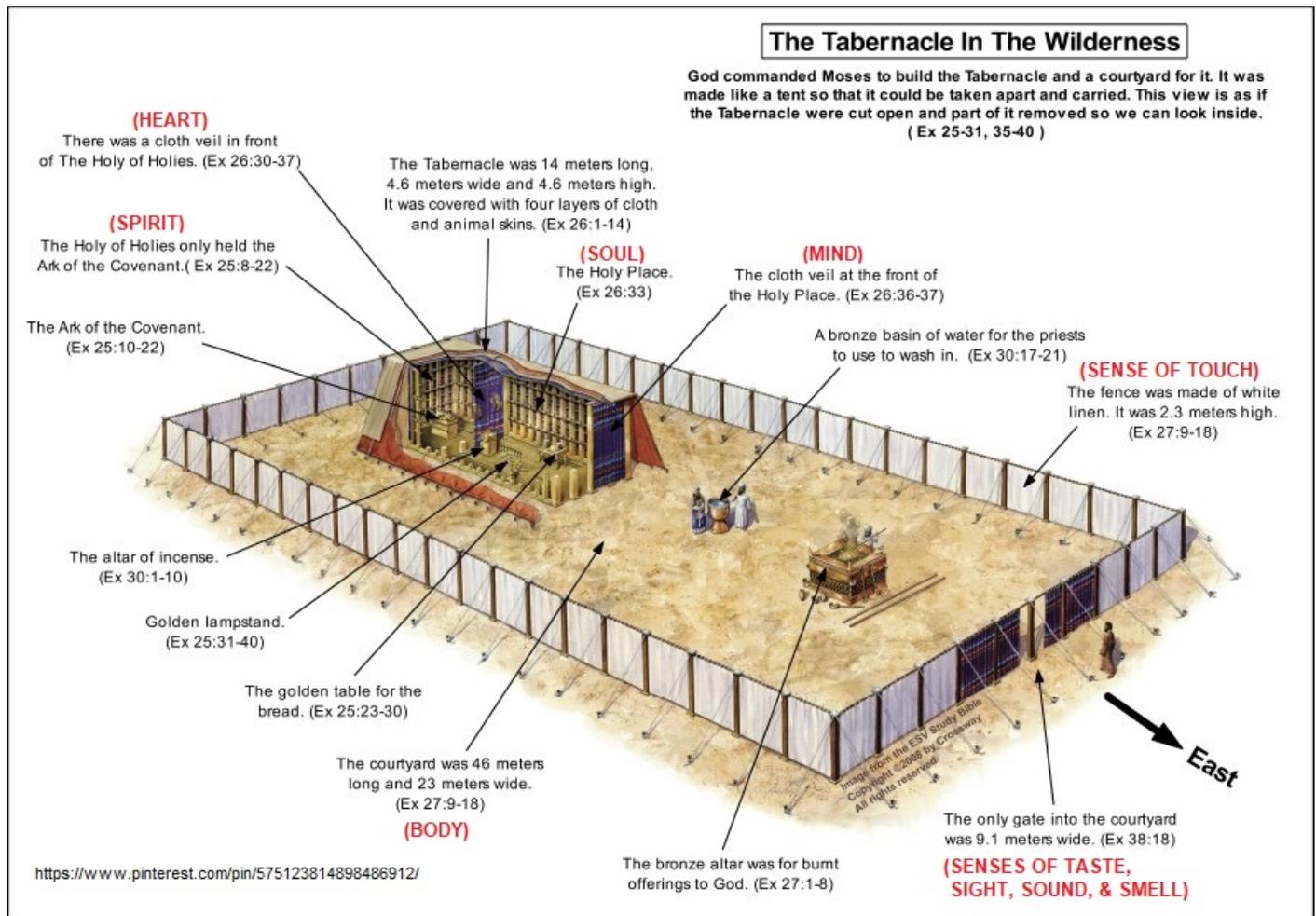
Whom we are in the core is a spirit. In essence, we are a spirit, with a heart, soul, and mind, in a body. Our actions (will) all stem from our spirit inside-out. And as we clear hindering filters from our heart, soul, mind, and body, our Born-again Spirit can flow freely—doing the Will of the Lord in us.

Our body may die, but our spirit exists in eternity; and will either eternally live WITH the Lord in Heaven/New Earth or live SEPARATED from the Lord in Hell. When we believe through the heart in Christ Jesus, our spirit is Born Again into a Holy Spirit—becoming the Spirit of Christ!

TABERNACLE: SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 017

I. TOPIC (PART 6 – SPIRIT):



In the continuation of our series “Tabernacle: Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, Spirit” we want to focus on Spirit. This is the inner-most aspect of whom we are. It is the “Most Holy of Holies” place in the Moses Tabernacle and where the Lord Himself indwells—not only making our Spirit Holy upon believing, but them co-habiting His Spirit with our Born-Again Spirit...”His Spirit testifying with our Spirit”.

When we chose to believe in Christ Jesus, the “sin of not believing” is eliminated. Our sins of the flesh were all forgiven at the Cross, and now that spiritual sin of unbelief is eliminated too! *This is a Bible Study we will address in the future, but you can read about here:* <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2019/06/forgiveness.html>

As humans, we are influenced both by the world around us (outside-in) and the spirit / Spirit inside us (inside-out). this is the eternal core of who we are; whether Born-Again or not.

NB: when I discuss the Spirit, I will use lower-case “spirit” as a means to identify a spirit not Born-Again; and use upper-case “Spirit” as a Spirit Born-Again.

Everything we do (our will) originates in our spirit / Spirit. It travels through the heart, through the soul, through the mind, through the body, and becomes our action. The person’s will can then change as it gets filtered passing through each part of our being which may have unbelief, strongholds, conflict, doctrine, etc. However, if from the Spirit we have cleared the debris and items of resistance (i.e. having a clear heart, soul, and mind), then His Will becomes our Will. This is exactly as Christ was able to do only what He saw His Father do. He was in complete unity with the Father through the Holy Ghost in Him: three-in-one, unified!

This is why we must have a clean conscience, no unbelief, not a troubled soul, a renewed mind, and a sacrificed body. In doing so, we open the way for the Spirit out through us!

TABERNACLE: SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 017



When we become Born-Again (through believing in the heart in the spirit), our spirit is made Holy: a Holy Spirit. The Holy Ghost then seals that doorway of the heart that we cannot lose that belief or salvation to come. Since there is only one kind of Holy to the Lord, when our spirit is made Holy, it is made a Holy Spirit. This is the exact same Spirit that Christ has. We have the Spirit of Christ! Our Born-Again Spirit has the same Holiness as Him and His Holy Spirit. And when we get in-filled with the Holy Ghost, our Spirit and His Spirit are unified as one. Just as mixing two identically pure glasses of water into one, they become inseparable and we are unable to tell them apart: they become one (two-in-one).

Our communication and understanding of the Lord are through the Spiritual realm—for we must “worship Him in Spirit and Truth”. This realm and understanding helps us cut through misunderstandings of scripture often the result of us trying to interpret Spiritual with the flesh.

II. **READING:** [1 Corinthians 2:1-16](#) (HCSB)

When I came to you, brothers, announcing the testimony of God to you, I did not come with brilliance of speech or wisdom. 2 For I didn't think it was a good idea to know anything among you except Jesus Christ and Him crucified. 3 I came to you in weakness, in fear, and in much trembling. 4 My speech and my proclamation were not with persuasive words of wisdom but with a powerful demonstration by the Spirit, 5 so that your faith might not be based on men's wisdom but on God's power.

6 However, we do speak a wisdom among the mature, but not a wisdom of this age, or of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. 7 On the contrary, we speak God's hidden wisdom in a mystery, a wisdom God predestined before the ages for our glory. 8 None of the rulers of this age knew this wisdom, for if they had known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 9 But as it is written:

What eye did not see, and ear did not hear, and what never entered the human mind—God prepared this for those who love Him.

10 Now God has revealed these things to us by the Spirit, for the Spirit searches everything, even the depths of God. 11 For who among men knows the thoughts of a man except the spirit of the man that is in him? In the same way, no one knows the thoughts of God except the Spirit of God. 12 Now we have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who comes from God, so that we may understand what has been freely given to us by God. 13 We also speak these things, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in those taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual things to spiritual people. 14 But the unbeliever does not welcome what comes from God's Spirit, because it is foolishness to him; he is not able to understand it since it is evaluated spiritually. 15 The spiritual person, however, can evaluate everything, yet he himself cannot be evaluated by anyone.

16 For who has known the Lord's mind, that he may instruct Him?

But we have the mind of Christ.

III. **RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:**

A. Born of the Spirit:

[John 3:5-8](#) (HCSB) [PoG]

Jesus answered, “I assure you: Unless someone is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. 6 Whatever is born of the flesh is flesh, and whatever is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Do not be amazed that I told you that you must be born again. 8 The wind [Spirit] blows where it pleases, and you hear its sound, but you don't know where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit.”

TABERNACLE: SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 017



[John 4:21-24](#) (HCSB)

Jesus told her, “Believe Me, woman, an hour is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem. 22 You Samaritans worship what you do not know. We worship what we do know, because salvation is from the Jews. 23 But an hour is coming, and is now here, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth. Yes, the Father wants such people to worship Him. 24 God is spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.”

Question: What are ways you recognise the Spirit inside of you?

Response:

B. The Spirit lives in us, shared (joined) with our Spirit:

[Romans 8:9,14-17](#) (HCSB)

You, however, are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, since the Spirit of God lives in you. But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.

All those led by God’s Spirit are God’s sons. 15 For you did not receive a spirit of slavery to fall back into fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption, by whom we cry out, “Abba, Father!” 16 The Spirit Himself testifies together with our spirit that we are God’s children, 17 and if children, also heirs—heirs of God and coheirs with Christ—seeing that we suffer with Him so that we may also be glorified with Him.

[1 Corinthians 3:16](#) (HCSB) [PoG]

Don’t you yourselves know that you are God’s sanctuary [Temple] and that the Spirit of God lives in you?

[1 Corinthians 6:17](#) (HCSB)

But anyone joined to the Lord is one spirit with Him.

[Ephesians 1:13-14](#) (HCSB)

When you heard the message of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and when you believed in Him, you were also sealed with the promised Holy Spirit. 14 He is the down payment of our inheritance, for the redemption of the possession, to the praise of His glory.

[Galatians 4:6-7](#) (HCSB)

And because you are sons, God has sent the Spirit of His Son into our hearts, crying, “Abba, Father!” 7 So you are no longer a slave but a son, and if a son, then an heir through God.

[1 John 4:13](#) (HCSB)

This is how we know that we remain in Him and He in us: He has given assurance to us from His Spirit.

Question: Do you believe you have His Spirit? Do you sometimes doubt you are a child of God?

Response:

TABERNACLE: SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 017



C. Holy Spirit Gifts and Fruit:

[1 Corinthians 12:4-11](#) (HCSB)

Now there are different gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 There are different ministries, but the same Lord. 6 And there are different activities, but the same God activates each gift in each person. 7 A demonstration of the Spirit is given to each person to produce what is beneficial:

8 to one is given a message of wisdom through the Spirit, to another, a message of knowledge by the same Spirit, 9 to another, faith by the same Spirit, to another, gifts of healing by the one Spirit, 10 to another, the performing of miracles, to another, prophecy, to another, distinguishing between spirits, to another, different kinds of languages, to another, interpretation of languages.

11 But one and the same Spirit is active in all these, distributing to each person as He wills.

[Galatians 5:22-23a](#) (HCSB)

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faith, 23 gentleness, self-control.

Question: We all have been gifted the same Holy Spirit; hence we all operate with all the Gifts—do you feel you can operate in all these Gifts and “eat” of the Fruit of the Spirit?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [James 2:26a](#) (HCSB)

...the body without the spirit is dead.

Thoughts: Whom we are in our core reality is as a Spiritual being, in a body (Temple / Tabernacle) on this earth. When we die, our spirit/Spirit departs our body, and our body returns to the earth it was created from. Our spirit/Spirit then continues to exist for eternity, whether with the Lord, or separated from Him in Hell.

Let us make a clean understanding in our hearts and minds that this life we experience on earth is not the be-all-end-all of things. We can rejoice that we are more than just limited and temporary beings, but that we were created by an Eternal being to be eternal ourselves. So, rejoice as a believer, your existence will be with the Lord for ever and ever and ever!

BELIEVING IN CHRIST JESUS & FORGIVENESS OF SINS

INTENTION:

Our sins of the flesh were all forgiven at the Cross (long before we ever commit them). And when we believe in Christ Jesus, our Sin of not believing in Him is forgiven.

When we understand the these two “sin” aspects, we can let go of so much of the confusion revolving around the concept of sin. The Lord did the work of removing any hindrance sin could have in keeping us from believing in Him; yet He could not violate our free-will in not believing.

So let us let go of the weight and power of sin in our lives and just believe on Him!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Believing in Christ Jesus and Forgiveness of Sins.

This is what the Lord has strived to do from the beginning of Creation. His desire is for us to have an eternal relationship with Him. However, He did not create us as mindless, programmed robots; no, He created us with a free will to believe or not believe (and to sin or not sin). We saw this transpire with Adam and Eve (God not forcing them to eat of the wrong tree), and see it transpire in the everyday lives of each and every human being. We all make choices that affect our lives every minute—our choices even affecting those around us and across the globe.

To think that God “controls” everything or everyone is to reject that notion of a person’s free will. He has the ultimate power to control, but purposefully limits Himself to His own Word to not control. God gave the world to humanity at creation, humanity then gave it to Satan at the Fall, but it was reclaimed to humanity by the human Christ Jesus. Everything that transpires on this earth is a result of human decisions, not through an “Act of God”.

This freedom to choose is His Love for us—for how can we Love Him back if it isn’t a choice? Nor, can that Love be honest and true if we are just programmed like computers to Love Him back.

Our ability to choose is of utmost importance when it comes to believing in Christ Jesus! And this choice determines our eternity. We are eternal beings in a temporary shell (tabernacle) on this earth. Once we depart from our earthly shell, we continue our eternal existence apart from it. Either heading into eternity with the Lord or separated from Him. With Him is partly in Heaven then forever on the New Earth to be created. Separated from Him is to be locked away in agonizing Hell (a place originally created for Satan and His angels).

Once we leave this earth, there is no making a separate choice; our choice must transpire here on this earth before we die. And to help us make the choice, Christ took upon Himself the entire fleshly sins of humanity once-and-for-all-time at the Cross. No longer can our fleshly sins affect our eternity—keeping us out of Heaven or sending us to Hell.

With all the sins of the flesh forgiven, the only Sin left is that of not believing on Christ Jesus. It is only this Sin of not believing that sends a person to eternal Hell. But when we make a choice to believe in Christ Jesus, that Sin is removed, and our eternal destination is to be with the Lord! And it is the ongoing work of God and the Holy Spirit to do all they can to convince you to believe (all without violating your free will not to believe).

With God, we don’t have to worry about the fleshly sins we commit affecting our relationship with Him (as a believer or non-believer); but must decide whether to have believed on Him or not to be Born-Again. Thus, when we read the Bible about sin, we have to distinguish between it talking about the sins of the flesh (those forgiven at the Cross) and the Sin of not Believing in Christ Jesus (the Sin that sends us to Hell). This too translates into what the Bible refers to “Good Works” (to believe in Christ Jesus) and “Evil Works” (not believing in Christ Jesus).

The following reading shares about the impact Jesus had in His ministry and concludes with needing to believe on Him.

Further Reading: <http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2019/06/forgiveness.html>

II. READING: [John 12:9-50](#) (GWT)

A large crowd of Jews found out that Jesus was in Bethany. So they went there not only to see Jesus but also to see Lazarus, whom Jesus had brought back to life. 10 The chief priests planned to kill Lazarus too. 11 Lazarus was the reason why many people were leaving the Jews and believing in Jesus.

12 On the next day the large crowd that had come to the Passover festival heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem. 13 So they took palm branches and went to meet him. They were shouting,

“Hosanna! Blessed is the one who comes in the name of the Lord, the king of Israel!”

14 Jesus obtained a donkey and sat on it, as Scripture says:

15 “Don’t be afraid, people of Zion! Your king is coming. He is riding on a donkey’s colt.”

16 At first Jesus' disciples didn't know what these prophecies meant. However, when Jesus was glorified, the disciples remembered that these prophecies had been written about him. The disciples remembered that they had taken part in fulfilling the prophecies.

17 The people who had been with Jesus when he called Lazarus from the tomb and brought him back to life reported what they had seen. 18 Because the crowd heard that Jesus had performed this miracle, they came to meet him.

19 The Pharisees said to each other, "This is getting us nowhere. Look! The whole world is following him!"

20 Some Greeks were among those who came to worship during the Passover festival. 21 They went to Philip (who was from Bethsaida in Galilee) and told him, "Sir, we would like to meet Jesus." 22 Philip told Andrew, and they told Jesus.

23 Jesus replied to them, "The time has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. 24 I can guarantee this truth: A single grain of wheat doesn't produce anything unless it is planted in the ground and dies. If it dies, it will produce a lot of grain. 25 Those who love their lives will destroy them, and those who hate their lives in this world will guard them for everlasting life. 26 Those who serve me must follow me. My servants will be with me wherever I will be. If people serve me, the Father will honour them.

27 "I am too deeply troubled now to know how to express my feelings. Should I say, 'Father, save me from this time of suffering'? No! I came for this time of suffering. 28 Father, give glory to your name."

A voice from heaven said, "I have given it glory, and I will give it glory again."

29 The crowd standing there heard the voice and said that it had thundered. Others in the crowd said that an angel had talked to him. 30 Jesus replied, "That voice wasn't for my benefit but for yours.

31 "This world is being judged now. The ruler of this world will be thrown out now. 32 When I have been lifted up from the earth, I will draw all people toward me." 33 By saying this, he indicated how he was going to die.

34 The crowd responded to him, "We have heard from the Scriptures that the Messiah will remain here forever. So how can you say, 'The Son of Man must be lifted up from the earth'? Who is this 'Son of Man'?"

35 Jesus answered the crowd, "The light will still be with you for a little while. Walk while you have light so that darkness won't defeat you. Those who walk in the dark don't know where they're going. 36 While you have the light, believe in the light so that you will become people whose lives show the light."

After Jesus had said this, he was concealed as he left. 37 Although they had seen Jesus perform so many miracles, they wouldn't believe in him. 38 In this way the words of the prophet Isaiah came true:

"Lord, who has believed our message? To whom has the Lord's power been revealed?"

39 So the people couldn't believe because, as Isaiah also said,

40 "God blinded them and made them close-minded so that their eyes don't see and their minds don't understand. And they never turn to me for healing!"

41 Isaiah said this because he had seen Jesus' glory and had spoken about him.

42 Many rulers believed in Jesus. However, they wouldn't admit it publicly because the Pharisees would have thrown them out of the synagogue. 43 They were more concerned about what people thought of them than about what God thought of them.

44 Then Jesus said loudly, "Whoever believes in me believes not only in me but also in the one who sent me. 45 Whoever sees me sees the one who sent me. 46 I am the light that has come into the world so that everyone who believes in me will not live in the dark. 47 If anyone hears my words and doesn't follow them, I don't condemn them. I didn't come to condemn the world but to save the world. 48 Those who reject me by not accepting what I say have a judge appointed for them. The words that I have spoken will judge them on the last day. 49 I have not spoken on my own. Instead, the Father who sent me told me what I should say and how I should say it. 50 I know that what he commands is eternal life. Whatever I say is what the Father told me to say."

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. [Hebrews 10:11-18](#) (GWT)

Every day each priest performed his religious duty. He offered the same type of sacrifice again and again. Yet, these sacrifices could never take away sins. 12 However, this chief priest made one sacrifice for sins, and this sacrifice lasts forever. Now he holds the honoured position—the one next to God the Father on the heavenly throne. 13 Since that time, he has been waiting for his enemies to be made his footstool. 14 With one sacrifice he accomplished the work of setting them apart for God forever.

15 The Holy Spirit tells us the same thing: 16 “This is the promise that I will make to them after those days, says the Lord: ‘I will put my teachings in their hearts and write them in their minds.’ ”

17 Then he adds, “I will no longer hold their sins and their disobedience against them.”

18 When sins are forgiven, there is no longer any need to sacrifice for sins.

Question: Did you do anything 2000 years ago to be forgiven? Do you understand that any sin of the flesh you commit (from a simple lie to genocide) is forever forgiven you and never remembered by God; and done so even before you committed it?

Response:

B. Our only goal is to believe in Christ Jesus:

[Mark 16:15-16](#) (GWT)

Then Jesus said to them, “So wherever you go in the world, tell everyone the Good News. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.

[John 3:16-18](#) (GWT)

God loved the world this way: He gave his only Son so that everyone who believes in him will not die but will have eternal life. 17 God sent his Son into the world, not to condemn the world, but to save the world. 18 Those who believe in him won’t be condemned. But those who don’t believe are already condemned because they don’t believe in God’s only Son.

[Romans 10:9-11](#) (GWT)

If you declare that Jesus is Lord, and believe that God brought him back to life, you will be saved. 10 By believing you receive God’s approval [made righteous], and by declaring [it unto salvation]. 11 Scripture says, “Whoever believes in him will not be ashamed.”

Question: What is the goal of the Lord for you personally; and the instructions He gave?

Response:

BELIEVING IN CHRIST JESUS & FORGIVENESS OF SINS

Bible Study: Lesson 018



C. God is not convicting us of our fleshly sins; the Holy Spirit only tries to convince us to believe in Him (convicting us of the Sin of not believing on Him):

[John 8:23-24](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Jesus said to them, "You're from below. I'm from above. You're from this world. I'm not from this world. 24 For this reason I told you that you'll die because of your [Sin]. If you don't believe that I am the one, you'll die because of your [Sin]."

[John 15:26-27, 16:7-15](#) (GWT) [PoG]

"The helper whom I will send to you from the Father will come. This helper, the Spirit of Truth who comes from the Father, will declare the truth about me. 27 You will declare the truth, too, because you have been with me from the beginning."

However, I am telling you the truth: It's good for you that I'm going away. If I don't go away, the helper won't come to you. But if I go, I will send him to you.

[8-11 And when He has come, He will convict the world (unbelievers) of:

- Sin, because they do not believe in Me;
- Righteousness, because I go to My Father and you see Me no more;
- Judgment, because the ruler of this world is judged.]

12 "I have a lot more to tell you, but that would be too much for you now. 13 When the Spirit of Truth comes, he will guide you into the full truth. He won't speak on his own. He will speak what he hears and will tell you about things to come. 14 He will give me glory, because he will tell you what I say. 15 Everything the Father says is also what I say. That is why I said, 'He will take what I say and tell it to you.'

[Mark 3:28-29](#) (GWT)

"I can guarantee this truth: People will be forgiven for any sin or curse. 29 But whoever curses the Holy Spirit will never be forgiven. He is guilty of an everlasting sin."

Question: How can God convict you of your fleshly sins if He took them away at the Cross?

Response:

D. [1 John 5:1-13](#) (GWT)

Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Messiah has been born from God. Everyone who loves the Father also loves his children. 2 We know that we love God's children when we love God by obeying his commandments. 3 To love God means that we obey his commandments. Obeying his commandments isn't difficult 4 because everyone who has been born from God has won the victory over the world. Our faith is what wins the victory over the world. 5 Who wins the victory over the world? Isn't it the person who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This Son of God is Jesus Christ, who came by water and blood. He didn't come with water only, but with water and with blood. The Spirit is the one who verifies this, because the Spirit is the truth. 7 There are three witnesses: 8 the Spirit, the water, and the blood. These three witnesses agree.

9 We accept human testimony. God’s testimony is greater because it is the testimony that he has given about his Son. 10 Those who believe in the Son of God have the testimony of God in them. Those who don’t believe God have made God a liar. They haven’t believed the testimony that God has given about his Son.

11 This is the testimony: God has given us eternal life, and this life is found in his Son. 12 The person who has the Son has this life. The person who doesn’t have the Son of God doesn’t have this life.

13 I’ve written this to those who believe in the Son of God so that they will know that they have eternal life.

Question: There is no fear of Final Judgement by God for believers. As a believer, do you still fear God and Judgement from Him?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. Works (Good and Evil) – Judged by our works at the Judgement Seat

[John 6:26-29](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Jesus replied to them, “I can guarantee this truth: You’re not looking for me because you saw miracles. You are looking for me because you ate as much of those loaves as you wanted. 27 Don’t work ([G2038](#)) for food that spoils. Instead, work for the food that lasts into eternal life. This is the food the Son of Man will give you. After all, the Father has placed his seal of approval on him.”

28 The people asked Jesus, “What does God want us to do [that we can work the works ([G2038](#)) of God]?”

29 Jesus replied to them, “God wants to do something for you so that you believe in the one whom he has sent.” [i.e. This is the work ([G2041](#)) of God: that you believe in Him whom He sent].

[John 3:16-21](#) (GWT) [PoG]

God loved the world this way: He gave his only Son so that everyone who believes in him will not die but will have eternal life. 17 God sent his Son into the world, not to condemn the world, but to save the world. 18 Those who believe in him won’t be condemned. But those who don’t believe are already condemned because they don’t believe in God’s only Son.

19 This is why people are condemned: The light came into the world. Yet, people loved the dark rather than the light because their actions [works ([G2041](#))] were evil. 20 People who do what is wrong hate the light and don’t come to the light. They don’t want their actions [works ([G2041](#))] to be exposed. 21 But people who do [works ([G2041](#))] what is true come to the light so that the things they do [works ([G2038](#))] for God may be clearly seen.

[Romans 2:4b-11](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Don’t you realize that it is God’s kindness that is trying to lead you to him and change the way you think and act?

5 Since you are stubborn and don’t want to change the way you think and act, you are adding to the anger that God will have against you on that day when God vents his anger. At that time God will reveal that his decisions are fair. 6 He will pay all people back for what they have done [works ([G2041](#))]. 7 He will give everlasting life to those who search for glory, honour, and immortality by persisting in doing [work ([G2041](#))] what is good. But he will bring 8 anger and fury on those who, in selfish pride, refuse to believe the truth and who follow what is

wrong. 9 There will be suffering and distress for every person who does [works ([G2716](#))] evil, for Jews first and Greeks as well. 10 But there will be glory, honour, and peace for every person who does [works ([G2038](#))] what is good, for Jews first and Greeks as well. 11 God does not play favourites.

[1 Peter 1:17-20](#) (GWT) [PoG]

So if you call God your Father, live your time as temporary residents on earth in fear. He is the God who judges all people by what they have done [work ([G2041](#))], and he doesn't play favourites. 18 Realize that you weren't set free from the worthless life handed down to you from your ancestors by a payment of silver or gold which can be destroyed. 19 Rather, the payment that freed you was the precious blood of Christ, the lamb with no defects or imperfections. 20 He is the lamb who was known long ago before the world existed, but for your good he became publicly known in the last period of time.

[Revelations 20:11-15](#) (GWT) [PoG]

I saw a large, white throne and the one who was sitting on it. The earth and the sky fled from his presence, but no place was found for them. 12 I saw the dead, both important and unimportant people, standing in front of the throne. Books were opened, including the Book of Life. The dead were judged on the basis of what they had done [their works ([G2041](#))], as recorded in the books. 13 The sea gave up its dead. Death and hell gave up their dead. People were judged based on what they had done [their works ([G2041](#))]. 14 Death and hell were thrown into the fiery lake. (The fiery lake is the second death.) 15 Those whose names were not found in the Book of Life were thrown into the fiery lake.

Thoughts: If our works were everything we did on this earth, then it matters not that we believe on Christ Jesus, but just that we led some form of 'moral' life. And then moreso, that Jesus Christ was sacrificed on the Cross for the removal of everyone's 'sins of the flesh' has no relevance. But if the "work" being spoken of that we are judged by is only the work of "believing in Christ Jesus" or "not believing in Christ Jesus" for that eternal salvation, then this takes out the notion that we have to strive and do things to earn merit for "Heaven". Yet everything Christ Jesus did was to remove the Law and the inability for any human being to earn salvation through their own merits. So do the work of "believing in Christ Jesus" for Salvation and to become Born-Again into the family of God the Loving Father!

Do you believe in Christ Jesus?

TAKING THE WORRY OUT OF SIN (RELIGIOUSLY)

INTENTION:

Being raised in a legalistic church, I developed a religion that kept me focused on sin—in trying to avoid sin. I got trapped in a winless system, for the more I focused on trying not to sin, the more the stronger sin became. But when I realized Christ took care of all those fleshly sins “once and for all time” at the Cross, I stopped worrying about those sins and thinking that they had an affect on my relationship with the Lord.

They never affect how much God Loves me or Gifts me; we just need to take care on how sin can affect the relationships we have here on earth. Though the Lord took care of sin in our relationship with Him, it is still His desire that we don’t sin, so as to avoid the hurts and pains that come along with it in this world.

TAKING THE WORRY OUT OF SIN (RELIGIOUSLY)

Bible Study: Lesson 019



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Taking the Worry Out of Sin (Religiously).

In the previous Bible Study, we looked at the difference between the “sins of the flesh” (which were all taken away through Christ Jesus and the Cross) and the Sin of not believing (Sin of unbelief) on Christ Jesus for Salvation (which is taken away when we do believe).

With this understanding, we can look at some specific scriptures that might cause us to worry or doubt our forgiveness if we don’t see it in the context of these two distinct types of sin.

Much of what I grew up believing was that any sin I committed (especially sexual sins) would cause me to go to Hell. I had such fear of these types of sins, I led a miserable Christian life. And moreso, could not keep from sinning—for the strength of sin is the Law ([1 Corinthians 15:56](#))—the more I tried not to sin, the stronger that desire to sin became.

But once I let go of this fear of sin, trusting that Christ took care of them at the Cross, my life became so much freer. I could now live free from the impossibility of never sinning (something many see as their “Christian” responsibility). It is not that the Lord wants us to keep sinning, for He knows that sin can affect our earthly relationship with ourselves and others—sin impacting our own life or those lives around us in a damaging way. The Lord does not want sin to steal away that Abundant Life He wants us to all freely live. He took away its attempt at hindering our relationship with Him; in turn allowing us to live a life that no longer needs to have any consciousness of sin; knowing that any sin of the flesh I do commit cannot affect my relationship with God; and I am “free to make a mistake”.

Remember, each and every fleshly sin was taken away forever 2000 years ago at the Cross—taken away before you ever committed them. And what is even better is that the Lord already knows which sins and mistakes you will make, and plans your life around them, rescuing you from those mistakes and bringing Good out from them.

God’s desire and purpose for the Cross is to set you free from worrying about what sin you commit. It is impossible to not commit a sin; and more impossible to remember each and every sin you do commit to then ask forgiveness of them. What a dreadful Christian life one leads when the focus of life is on our mistakes, not on our Righteous identity.

This dreadful life is what I have been set free of and strive to never repeat. And my desire is to also set you free from that same sin-conscience I myself lived with. And a good way to start is to remind ourselves that the sacrifice Christ Jesus made for us through the Cross forgave our sins once-and-for-all-time!

Further Reading: <http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2019/06/forgiveness.html>

Furthermore, if we are caught up in a sin of the flesh and feel trapped by it, we do have the authority to overcome it and remove its hold over us. We can pull down those strongholds ([2 Corinthians 10:3-5](#)) because the strength of sin has been overcome, and we are dead to sin ([Romans 6:11](#))!

II. READING: [Hebrews 10:1-25](#) (DLNT)

For the Law— having a shadow of the coming good things, not the very image of the things—is never able to perfect the ones approaching yearly with the same sacrifices which they offer perpetually. 2 Otherwise would they not have ceased being offered, because of the ones worshiping no longer having a consciousness of sins, having been cleansed once-for-all? 3 But in them there is a yearly reminder of sins. 4 For it is impossible for the blood of bulls and goats to take-away sins. 5 Therefore, while entering into the world, He says [in Ps 40:6-8]: “You did not desire sacrifice and offering, but You prepared a body for Me. 6 You were not well-pleased with whole-burnt-offerings and offerings for sin. 7 Then I said, Behold, I have come—in the roll of a book it has been written about Me—that I might do Your will, God”.

TAKING THE WORRY OUT OF SIN (RELIGIOUSLY)

Bible Study: Lesson 019



8 Saying above that “You did not desire nor were You well-pleased with sacrifices and offerings and whole-burnt-offerings and offerings for sin” (which are being offered according-to the Law!), 9 then He has said, “Behold, I have come that I might do Your will”—He does-away-with the first in-order-that He might establish the second,

10 ... by which will we have been made-holy through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once-for-all.

11 And every priest stands ministering daily and offering often the same sacrifices which are never able to take-away sins—12 but this One, having offered one sacrifice for sins for all time, sat-down at the right hand of God, 13 henceforth waiting until His enemies are put as a footstool of His feet.

14 For by one offering He has perfected for all time the ones being made-holy.

15 And the Holy Spirit also testifies to us; for after the statement [in Jer 31:33] having said 16 “This is the covenant which I will covenant with them after those days, says the Lord: Giving My laws upon their hearts, I will also write them upon their mind”, 17 then He says “And I will never remember their sins and their lawless-deeds again”.

18 Now where there is forgiveness of these things, there is no longer an offering for sin!

19 Therefore, brothers, having confidence for the entering of the Holies by the blood of Jesus— 20 which fresh and living way He inaugurated for us through the curtain, that is, His flesh— 21 and having a great Priest over the house of God, 22 let us be approaching God with a true heart in full-assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and having our body washed with clean water. 23 Let us be holding-on-to the confession of our hope without-wavering, for the One having promised is faithful. 24 And let us be considering one another for the provoking of love and good works, 25 not forsaking the gathering-together of ourselves as is a habit with some, but exhorting one another, and so-much more by-as-much-as you see the day drawing-near..

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. These following verses do not talk about sins that keep you out of “Heaven”, but refers to how that identity of sin can keep you from experiencing (sensing) “righteousness, joy, and peace in the Holy Spirit” which is what the Kingdom of Heaven / Kingdom of God is ([Romans 14:17](#)). Referencing the conflict one can experience in a person’s soul between the Spirit (inside-out life) and world (outside-in life).

[1 Corinthians 6:9-10](#) (DLNT)

Or do you not know that wrongdoers will not inherit God’s kingdom? Do not be deceived. Neither sexually-immoral ones, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homo-erotic-partners, nor homosexuals, 10 nor thieves, nor greedy ones—not drunkards, not revilers, not swindlers—will inherit the kingdom of God.

[Galatians 5:19-21](#) (DLNT)

Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are sexual-immorality, impurity, sensuality, 20 idolatry, sorcery, hostilities, strife, jealousy, rages, selfish-interests, dissensions, factions, 21 envy, drunkenness, revelries, and the things like these—as to which things I tell you beforehand, just as I said-before, that the ones practicing such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.

Question: Do you worry that committing any of these sins will keep you out of Heaven (or relationship with God)?

Response:

TAKING THE WORRY OUT OF SIN (RELIGIOUSLY)

Bible Study: Lesson 019



- B. Jesus taught the extremes of the Law to demonstrate to everyone how impossible it was to keep them. Yet, at the same time prophesied about His purpose of fulfilling the Law for us. Sometimes when we read the things Jesus preached, we get scared because it seems very harsh or direct. This is why we too need to understand whom His audience is (those under the Law, which we are not); and what it is He is really saying?

Sadly, I have heard how a person took this following verse literally, and out of context, and actually plucked out her own eye because their “eye” sinned. Yet, Jesus is not speaking about your eye sinning as in it lusting over something, but the sin being spoken of is the Sin of not believing in Christ Jesus for salvation. Jesus explains to us that the Sin being spoken of is this sin that will send a person to Hell. Not that if our hand or eye commits a sin of the flesh that it must be removed. But that if your hand or eye is keeping you from believing in Christ Jesus for salvation, it is better to get into Heaven without a hand or an eye, than keep it and spend eternity in Hell.

[Matthew 5:29-30](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

And if your right eye is causing you to fall, tear it out and throw it from you. For it is better for you that one of your body-parts perish and your whole body not be thrown into Gehenna [Hell]. 30 And if your right hand is causing you to fall, cut it off and throw it from you. For it is better for you that one of your body-parts perish and your whole body not go into Gehenna [Hell].

Question: Have you ever thought about cutting off a member of your body because you didn't like it sinning?

Response:

- C. Jesus demonstrated that the presence of sin (personally or in a group) cannot deter God from your life or that of a group or nation. Jesus only did what He saw God the Father do; thus, Jesus demonstrated what God does with us when we sin. Sin does not reject God's presence!

[Mark 2:15-17](#) (DLNT)

And it comes about that He was reclining [to eat] in his house. And many tax-collectors and sinners were reclining-back-with Jesus and His disciples. For there were many, and they were following Him. 16 And the scribes of the Pharisees, having seen that He was eating with the sinners and tax collectors, were saying to His disciples “Why is it that He is eating with the tax collectors and sinners?” 17 And having heard, Jesus says to them that “The ones being strong have no need of a physician, but the ones being ill. I did not come to call righteous ones, but sinners”.

Question: Do you feel God is hiding His presence from you when you sin; or do you feel He is sitting next to you?

Response:

TAKING THE WORRY OUT OF SIN (RELIGIOUSLY)

Bible Study: Lesson 019



D. Sometimes we can feel that our sin can keep us from receiving healing (for ourself or another). This can especially feel true when our sickness or disability came about because of a sin we committed—like paralysis from an accident caused because of driving drunk, or a disease we got from sex or drugs. The guilt of which can weigh heavy on our heart and conscience.

Yet the Lord demonstrates to us that His desire that we are healed, healthy, and whole outweighs any form of sin we might have committed—or any form of sin we might think has transpired. For even when we think sin is in the way, Jesus always demonstrated that any sin they may believe they had committed was forgiven. When we truly believe we are forgiven, we tend to let go of the guilt and open up that pathway to receive healing.

[Luke 5:20-26](#) (DLNT)

And having seen their faith, He said, “Man, your sins have been forgiven you”. 21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, “Who is this One Who is speaking blasphemies? Who is able to forgive sins except God alone?” 22 But Jesus, having known their reasonings, having responded, said to them, “Why are you reasoning in your hearts? 23 Which is easier: to say, ‘Your sins have been forgiven you’, or to say, ‘Arise and walk’? 24 But in order that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins”—He said to the one having been paralyzed, “I say to you, arise, and having picked up your little-bed, proceed to your house”. 25 And having stood-up at once in their presence, having picked up the thing upon which he was lying-down, he went to his house glorifying God. 26 And astonishment seized everyone. And they were glorifying God. And they were filled with awe, saying that “We saw incredible things today”.

Question: What sin-related guilt do you feel is holding you back from receiving healing for you or someone else?

Response:

E. If our sins of the flesh are all taken at the Cross, does that mean I can choose to keep on sinning? Yes!

Remember, it is not these sins of the flesh that affect your eternal destiny, only the Sin of not believing in Christ Jesus. Thus, as Paul reiterates twice in the same book, we can do whatever we want. Yet, he shares with us that not everything we choose to do is beneficial to our current existence here on earth. And even blatantly says, “God Forbid” that we would want to choose to keep on sinning in the flesh ([Romans 6:1-2](#)). This is because sin can truly have a negative impact on our own life and that of so many around you (directly or indirectly).

It is not the Lord’s desire that we continue to sin in the flesh, but He knows we will, and knows all the reasons why (that domino / butterfly effect from Adams sin). He really only wants the best life for us here on earth; and more-than-not, that includes a life without a sin that can diminish the Abundant Life He longs for us to have. But our sinning (whether by choice or by circumstance or by force), cannot change our relationship with God the Father; nor affect our eternity. We must never fear that it can!

[1 Corinthians 6:12](#) (DLNT)

“All things are lawful to me”, but not all things are beneficial. “All things are lawful to me”, but I will not be mastered by any.

[1 Corinthians 10:23](#) (DLNT)

All things are lawful, but not all things are beneficial. All things are lawful, but not all things build-up.

TAKING THE WORRY OUT OF SIN (RELIGIOUSLY)

Bible Study: Lesson 019



Question: How free do you feel in being able to sin, or keep sinning? Do you feel other Churches or Christians condemn you for you choices or lifestyle?

Response:

- F. What are ways we can help lessen the negative impact sin has on our own life or those around us? We feel hurt by others' faults (sins) against us; and likewise, the same for our faults (sins) towards others. To help spur on forgiveness and bring about healing, we are instructed to talk to others about it. When we bring it into the Light, it has no room to destroy, divide, or infest. And we too can help others we see trapped in sins to guide them out of it if they choose; then, in doing so, restores the trauma that is the conflict in their souls.

[James 5:13-16, 19-20](#) (DLNT)

Is anyone among you suffering-hardship? Let him be praying. Is anyone cheerful? Let him be singing-praise.

14 Is anyone among you sick? Let him summon the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, having anointed him with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 And the prayer of faith will restore the one being ill, and the Lord will raise him. And if he has committed sins, it will be forgiven him. 16 Therefore be confessing-out your sins to one another, and be praying for one another so that you may be healed. A prayer of a righteous person can-do much while working.

My brothers, if anyone among you errs from the truth and someone turns him back, 20 let him know that the one having turned-back a sinner from the error of his way will save his soul from death, and will cover a multitude of sins.

Question: Do you talk about your mistakes to others?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. So, what about the verse regarding confessing our sins—are we supposed to confess them all the time?

[1 John 1:5-10](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

And this is the message which we have heard from Him and are declaring to you: that God is light, and there is not any darkness in Him.

6 If we claim that we have fellowship with Him and are walking in the darkness [*having not believed in Christ Jesus*], we are lying and not doing the truth. 7 But if we are walking in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another and the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin.

8 If we claim that we do not have sin, we are deceiving ourselves and the truth is not in us.

HOW DO WE LIVE AS CHRISTIANS (BELIEVERS)

INTENTION:

I found in my life that ‘how hard the Christian life can be to live’ is a matter of how I live it. I’m not talking about just giving in to the world around us, but gaining a strength that is not just my own ability.

My entire Christian life and its way of living changed the instant that I was Baptised in the Holy Spirit. I let go of trying to live that “righteous” lifestyle out of my own fleshly strength and started living as a team with the Lord. He not only started living His life out of me, but He transformed how I read and understood the Bible.

This is what I want for you to experience too!

Ask Him for it.

HOW DO WE LIVE AS CHRISTIANS (BELIEVERS)

Bible Study: Lesson 020



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the question: How Do We Live as Christians (Believers)?

One of the biggest struggles I had after becoming a believer (at 16 years old) was how difficult it was to live the Christian life. It was an impossible task to live up to the expectation that religion placed on me to “be like Jesus”—to be Righteous, Holy, and without fault (sin). And when I failed at that task, I became guilty, shameful, and tried to hide myself from God and others. I was a miserable Christian, a hypocrite, and lived behind a façade.

I tried to read the Bible, but would fall asleep, or find things that condemned me even more for failing to live up to this “Christian” standard. I would try and go to church, but never felt I fit in, nor felt I was being fed (like I was starving for the Lord without getting any healthy substance). I eventually got so condemned with myself, I really just lived waiting to die (or waiting for the Lord’s return). I was a powerless Christian, swept around like a piece of rubbish on the sea.

But then something happened when I was 38 years old: I started to hear this message (a new message to me) of how I could be an authoritative Christian—the key being the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. And on 28 May 2014, in the loft I lived in, I asked Jesus Christ to Baptise me in the Holy Spirit with the ability to speak in Tongues. And in that moment, cutting through the fear and doubt, I trusted the Father and asked. He delivered on His promise. I lay face-down and sprawled out on the wood floor. Jesus’s presence was so real standing next to me in His sandals and white robe, that I reached out my hand expecting to touch Him.

From that moment, my whole Christian life changed, and I began renewing my heart and mind to some powerful truths that I had not heard before. No longer was I a passive Christian just waiting for the Lord to come again, but became an overcoming Christian. I began to hear the Holy Spirit more clearly, scripture popped out at me in ways I never experienced before with new meaning (without any judgement or condemnation), and I was speaking in Spiritual Tongues. I changed, and my whole outlook on life changed.

It was during this time that the Lord spoke to Kelly and I the words “Just Be”.

These two simple words packed such depth and meaning. It translated our Christian lives from us trying to be as Christ, to us actually accepting that we already WERE like Christ ([1 John 4:17b](#))! It was His commandment for us to “Just Be” whom He already made us to be: Jesus Christ. Just as Jesus was Baptised in the Holy Spirit and commanded the power of God in Him, so were we exactly like that. We let go of the ‘trying’ and just relaxed in the ‘being’—helping us understand that Christ’s yoke is easy!

This didn’t mean we wouldn’t face persecution, nor having to continually renew our mind to this truth; it meant that we were able to let go of the part about living like a Christian. It meant that we could spend our energies, not on striving to be like Him, but using that energy existing as Him. And through this dramatic change, we found our lives shift, getting married, and leaving all behind in the States for our new mission into South Africa.

With my reality (identity) as Christ Jesus, I could stop worrying about if I failed, sinned, or didn’t live up to some perceived expectation of Christianity. Whether I fail or succeed, it never changes my identity as Righteous and Holy. What a stress relief that is, to know that it is okay to make a mistake—God’s Grace always has me covered!

So, what does it look like being a Christian—how do we live as Christians (Believers)?

We’ve looked at the Parable of the Sower ([Mark 4:14-20](#)) in a previous Bible Study, and see that there can be three types of Christians: the first two lose heart or are deceived, and don’t live authoritatively (remaining believers); the third does thrive with an Abundant Life. I went from the former to the latter—and found it an amazing place to be!

Let’s take the struggle out of trying to live as a Christian, and just BE a Christian. And I’ve found one of the strongest ways to do this is to read about what the Lord wants to give you, and has already given you. God doesn’t say, “good luck” after we are Born-Again, He teams up with us as equal partners to share responsibility for our life here on earth; providing for our everyday needs. He never abandons us!

HOW DO WE LIVE AS CHRISTIANS (BELIEVERS)

Bible Study: Lesson 020



II. **READING:** [1 John 4:1-19](#) (MSG)

My dear friends, don't believe everything you hear. Carefully weigh and examine what people tell you. Not everyone who talks about God comes from God. There are a lot of lying preachers loose in the world.

2-3 Here's how you test for the genuine Spirit of God. Everyone who confesses openly his faith in Jesus Christ—the Son of God, who came as an actual flesh-and-blood person—comes from God and belongs to God. And everyone who refuses to confess faith in Jesus has nothing in common with God. This is the spirit of antichrist that you heard was coming. Well, here it is, sooner than we thought!

4-6 My dear children, you come from God and belong to God. You have already won a big victory over those false teachers, for the Spirit in you is far stronger than anything in the world. These people belong to the Christ-denying world. They talk the world's language and the world eats it up. But we come from God and belong to God. Anyone who knows God understands us and listens. The person who has nothing to do with God will, of course, not listen to us. This is another test for telling the Spirit of Truth from the spirit of deception.

7-10 My beloved friends, let us continue to love each other since love comes from God. Everyone who loves is born of God and experiences a relationship with God. The person who refuses to love doesn't know the first thing about God, because God is love—so you can't know him if you don't love. This is how God showed his love for us: God sent his only Son into the world so we might live through him. This is the kind of love we are talking about—not that we once upon a time loved God, but that he loved us and sent his Son as a sacrifice to clear away our sins and the damage they've done to our relationship with God.

11-12 My dear, dear friends, if God loved us like this, we certainly ought to love each other. No one has seen God, ever. But if we love one another, God dwells deeply within us, and his love becomes complete in us—perfect love!

13-16 This is how we know we're living steadily and deeply in him, and he in us: He's given us life from his life, from his very own Spirit. Also, we've seen for ourselves and continue to state openly that the Father sent his Son as Saviour of the world. Everyone who confesses that Jesus is God's Son participates continuously in an intimate relationship with God. We know it so well, we've embraced it heart and soul, this love that comes from God.

17-18 God is love. When we take up permanent residence in a life of love, we live in God and God lives in us. This way, love has the run of the house, becomes at home and mature in us, so that we're free of worry on Judgment Day—our standing in the world is identical with Christ's. There is no room in love for fear. Well-formed love banishes fear. Since fear is crippling, a fearful life—fear of death, fear of judgment—is one not yet fully formed in love.

19 We, though, are going to love—love and be loved. First we were loved, now we love. He loved us first.

III. **RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:**

A. Giving up our own ability to achieve:

[Galatians 2:17-21](#) (MSG)

Have some of you noticed that we are not yet perfect? (No great surprise, right?) And are you ready to make the accusation that since people like me, who go through Christ in order to get things right with God, aren't perfectly virtuous, Christ must therefore be an accessory to sin? The accusation is frivolous. If I was "trying to be good," I would be rebuilding the same old barn that I tore down. I would be acting as a charlatan.

19-21 What actually took place is this: I tried keeping rules and working my head off to please God, and it didn't work. So I quit being a "law man" so that I could be God's man. Christ's life showed me how, and enabled me to do it. I identified myself completely with him. Indeed, I have been crucified with Christ. My ego is no longer central. It is no longer important that I appear righteous before you or have your good opinion, and I am no

HOW DO WE LIVE AS CHRISTIANS (BELIEVERS)

Bible Study: Lesson 020



longer driven to impress God. Christ lives in me. The life you see me living is not “mine,” but it is lived by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. I am not going to go back on that.

Is it not clear to you that to go back to that old rule-keeping, peer-pleasing religion would be an abandonment of everything personal and free in my relationship with God? I refuse to do that, to repudiate God’s grace. If a living relationship with God could come by rule-keeping, then Christ died unnecessarily.

[Galatians 5:22-26](#) (MSG)

But what happens when we live God’s way? He brings gifts into our lives, much the same way that fruit appears in an orchard—things like affection for others, exuberance about life, serenity. We develop a willingness to stick with things, a sense of compassion in the heart, and a conviction that a basic holiness permeates things and people. We find ourselves involved in loyal commitments, not needing to force our way in life, able to marshal and direct our energies wisely.

23-24 Legalism is helpless in bringing this about; it only gets in the way. Among those who belong to Christ, everything connected with getting our own way and mindlessly responding to what everyone else calls necessities is killed off for good—crucified.

25-26 Since this is the kind of life we have chosen, the life of the Spirit, let us make sure that we do not just hold it as an idea in our heads or a sentiment in our hearts, but work out its implications in every detail of our lives. That means we will not compare ourselves with each other as if one of us were better and another worse. We have far more interesting things to do with our lives. Each of us is an original.

Question: Do you feel you sometimes try to achieve out of your own ability? Do you believe God has given you of His Spirit for your free and unlimited use?

Response:

B. [Ephesians 1:7-12](#) (MSG)

Because of the sacrifice of the Messiah, his blood poured out on the altar of the Cross, we’re a free people—free of penalties and punishments chalked up by all our misdeeds. And not just barely free, either. Abundantly free! He thought of everything, provided for everything we could possibly need, letting us in on the plans he took such delight in making. He set it all out before us in Christ, a long-range plan in which everything would be brought together and summed up in him, everything in deepest heaven, everything on planet earth.

11-12 It’s in Christ that we find out who we are and what we are living for. Long before we first heard of Christ and got our hopes up, he had his eye on us, had designs on us for glorious living, part of the overall purpose he is working out in everything and everyone.

Question: As a Christian, do you feel absolutely free?

Response:

HOW DO WE LIVE AS CHRISTIANS (BELIEVERS)

Bible Study: Lesson 020



C. It's His power living in and through us that we have an Authority.

[Ephesians 3:20](#) (MSG)

God can do anything, you know—far more than you could ever imagine or guess or request in your wildest dreams! He does it not by pushing us around but by working within us, his Spirit deeply and gently within us.

[Colossians 1:9-12](#) (MSG)

Be assured that from the first day we heard of you, we haven't stopped praying for you, asking God to give you wise minds and spirits attuned to his will, and so acquire a thorough understanding of the ways in which God works. We pray that you'll live well for the Master, making him proud of you as you work hard in his orchard. As you learn more and more how God works, you will learn how to do your work. We pray that you'll have the strength to stick it out over the long haul—not the grim strength of gritting your teeth but the glory-strength God gives. It is strength that endures the unendurable and spills over into joy, thanking the Father who makes us strong enough to take part in everything bright and beautiful that he has for us.

Question: Do you understand that His Spirit and "glory-strength" is given for you to use?

Response:

D. We are given the ability to Live as Christ.

[Philippians 2:12-16](#) (MSG)

What I'm getting at, friends, is that you should simply keep on doing what you've done from the beginning. When I was living among you, you lived in responsive obedience. Now that I'm separated from you, keep it up. Better yet, redouble your efforts. Be energetic in your life of salvation, reverent and sensitive before God. That energy is God's energy, an energy deep within you, God himself willing and working at what will give him the most pleasure.

14-16 Do everything readily and cheerfully—no bickering, no second-guessing allowed! Go out into the world uncorrupted, a breath of fresh air in this squalid and polluted society. Provide people with a glimpse of good living and of the living God. Carry the light-giving Message into the night so I'll have good cause to be proud of you on the day that Christ returns. You'll be living proof that I didn't go to all this work for nothing.

[Philippians 4:6-9](#) (MSG)

Don't fret or worry. Instead of worrying, pray. Let petitions and praises shape your worries into prayers, letting God know your concerns. Before you know it, a sense of God's wholeness, everything coming together for good, will come and settle you down. It's wonderful what happens when Christ displaces worry at the centre of your life.

8-9 Summing it all up, friends, I'd say you'll do best by filling your minds and meditating on things true, noble, reputable, authentic, compelling, gracious—the best, not the worst; the beautiful, not the ugly; things to praise, not things to curse. Put into practice what you learned from me, what you heard and saw and realized. Do that, and God, who makes everything work together, will work you into his most excellent harmonies.

Question: What are our instructions in this ability to Live as Christ?

HOW DO WE LIVE AS CHRISTIANS (BELIEVERS)

Bible Study: Lesson 020



Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. Do you want the Holy Spirit fully in your innermost being (filled and overflowing); trusting and accepting the Power of the Him in you?

[John 14:25-31](#) (MSG) [PoG]

“I’m telling you these things while I’m still living with you. The Friend, the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send at my request, will make everything plain to you. He will remind you of all the things I have told you. I’m leaving you well and whole. That’s my parting gift to you. Peace. I don’t leave you the way you’re used to being left—feeling abandoned, bereft. So don’t be upset. Don’t be distraught.

28 “You’ve heard me tell you, ‘I’m going away, and I’m coming back.’ If you loved me, you would be glad that I’m on my way to the Father because the Father is the goal and purpose of my life.

29-31 “I’ve told you this ahead of time, before it happens, so that when it does happen, the confirmation will deepen your belief in me. I’ll not be talking with you much more like this because the chief of this godless world is about to attack. But don’t worry—he has nothing on me, no claim on me. But so the world might know how thoroughly I love the Father, I am carrying out my Father’s instructions right down to the last detail.

“Get up. Let’s go. It’s time to leave here.”.

Thoughts: Sometimes we can feel that the Lord is not near...or worse off, “abandoned”. Other times it is that we would feel more secure if Jesus was still here with us (next to me). But here, Jesus shares with us that the Holy Spirit is a greater benefit to us. How amazing is it that the Holy Spirit is referred to by Jesus as a Comforter! Someone that brings peace to our souls—an emotional being that can transform our fears to peace. He reminds us of whom Jesus truly is and make clear to us (unconfused for us) the notion of whom God is as a Father. Confirming that His presence in us testifies in our being that we are NOT abandoned, but powerful and authoritative; and calls out for us that we truly have an Abba Father that so cares for us:

[Romans 8:15-17](#) (MSG)

This resurrection life you received from God is not a timid, grave-tending life. It’s adventurously expectant, greeting God with a childlike “What’s next, Papa?” God’s Spirit touches our spirits and confirms who we really are. We know who he is, and we know who we are: Father and children. And we know we are going to get what’s coming to us—an unbelievable inheritance! We go through exactly what Christ goes through. If we go through the hard times with him, then we’re certainly going to go through the good times with him!

[Galatians 4:4-7](#) (MSG)

But when the time arrived that was set by God the Father, God sent his Son, born among us of a woman, born under the conditions of the law so that he might redeem those of us who have been kidnapped by the law. Thus we have been set free to experience our rightful heritage. You can tell for sure that you are now fully adopted as his own children because God sent the Spirit of his Son into our lives crying out, “Papa! Father!” Doesn’t that privilege of intimate conversation with God make it plain that you are not a slave, but a child? And if you are a child, you’re also an heir, with complete access to the inheritance.

A REDEEMED & RECONCILED (NOT FALLEN) WORLD

INTENTION:

Let's stop blaming Adam and Eve; let's celebrate what God has done through Christ Jesus.

No longer are we under a curse. Nor are we subject to the Devil. Christ Jesus, as a human being, took back what Satan stole and restored humanity's authority over the works of the Devil.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Reconciliation and Redemption.

How we look at the view of the world in which we live can affect how we view ourselves. Too often, when we view this world as still being a “Fallen World” (stemming from Adam’s sin), we can easily become the victim—i.e., fighting to overcome Adam’s transgression and resultant evils in the world. However, we become victors when we realize Christ Jesus overcame Adam’s sin—having eliminated Adam’s curses and the Devil’s authority in our lives. I don’t have to fight to claim something that already has been given me. Thus, it becomes about defending your status (defending your castle) vs. fighting to get it (attacking the castle to claim it).

For me, this realization came about when I was writing a social media post about living in a “Fallen World” when the Holy Spirit abruptly stopped me in my tracks as He spoke to me “Redeemed World”. Before I even had a chance to write “Fallen World”, He corrected me. Wow! How beautiful that is that this world I live in is no longer under Adam’s curse, but redeemed under Christ’s Blood!

Ask yourself: “How does it change my perspective of life if I’m actually living in a Redeemed World (vs. Fallen World), and are already reconciled with God the Father?”

Now, I want to be clear here... when I speak of being redeemed and/or reconciled, I am not speaking about being Saved, Holy, or Righteous. These latter three are only credited you when you believe on Him to be Born-Again.

What is Reconciliation and Redemption the? Simply put, it is a mutual exchange: in that Christ Jesus exchanged Himself (as payment or ransom) for the world:

Reconcile – G604: apokatalassō

1. to reconcile completely
2. to reconcile back again
3. bring back a former state of harmony

Reconciliation – G2643: katallaḡē

1. exchange
 - a. of the business of money changers, exchanging equivalent values
2. adjustment of a difference, reconciliation, restoration to favour
 - a. in the NT of the restoration of the favour of God to sinners that repent and put their trust in the expiatory death of Christ

Reconcile – G2644: katallassō

1. to change, exchange, as coins for others of equivalent value
 - a. to reconcile (those who are at variance)
 - b. return to favour with, be reconciled to one
 - c. to receive one into favour

Reconcile – G1259: diallassō

1. to change
2. to change the mind of anyone, to reconcile
3. to be reconciled, to renew friendship with one

Redeem – G629: apolytrōsis

1. a releasing effected by payment of ransom
 - a. redemption, deliverance
 - b. liberation procured by the payment of a ransom

Redeem – G3084: lytroō

1. to release on receipt of ransom
2. to redeem, liberate by payment of ransom
 - a. to liberate
 - b. to cause to be released to one's self by payment of a ransom
 - c. to redeem
 - d. to deliver: from evils of every kind, internal and external

Knowing we are redeemed and reconciled eliminates an “us and them” mindset when looking at ourselves or others. God, through Christ, equalized the playing-field for humanity; allowing any and all to come to believe in Him. “While we were sinners, He reconciled us”. So, let’s not look at others in their fleshly behaviour, but through the eyes of Christ who unconditionally loves each and every person on this earth!

Furthermore, we need to look at the world around us as also being redeemed from Adam’s curse. And that, though we still see after-effects of that curse, we do not have to accept them as the truth—it is our choice to accept what Christ has done as the real Truth.

A REDEEMED & RECONCILED (NOT FALLEN) WORLD

Bible Study: Lesson 021



II. READINGS: Reconciled / Redeemed

[2 Corinthians 5:14-21](#) (MEV) [PoG]

For the love of Christ constrains us, because we thus judge: that if one died for all, then all have died. 15 And He died for all, that those who live should not from now on live for themselves, but for Him who died for them and rose again. 16 So from now on we do not regard anyone according to the flesh. Yes, though we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet we do not regard Him as such from now on. 17 Therefore, if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature. Old things have passed away. Look, all things have become new. 18 All this is from God, who has reconciled ([G2644](#)) us to Himself through Jesus Christ and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation ([G2643](#)), 19 that is, that God was in Christ reconciling ([G2644](#)) the world to Himself, not counting their sins against them, and has entrusted to us the message of reconciliation ([G2643](#)). 20 So we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God were pleading through us. We implore you in Christ's stead: [You are] reconciled ([G2644](#)) to God. 21 God made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him.

[Romans 5:6-11](#) (MEV)

While we were yet weak, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 7 Rarely for a righteous man will one die. Yet perhaps for a good man some would even dare to die. 8 But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 How much more then, being now justified by His blood, shall we be saved from wrath through Him. 10 For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled ([G2644](#)) to God by the death of His Son, how much more, being reconciled ([G2644](#)), shall we be saved by His life. 11 Furthermore, we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation ([G2643](#)).

[Colossians 1:13-21](#) (MEV)

He has delivered us from the power of darkness and has transferred us into the kingdom of His dear Son, 14 in whom we have redemption ([G629](#)) through His blood, the forgiveness of sins. 15 He is the image of the invisible God and the firstborn of every creature. 16 For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they are thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers. All things were created by Him and for Him. 17 He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together. 18 He is the head of the body, the church. He is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, so that in all things He may have the pre-eminence. 19 For it pleased the Father that in Him all fullness should dwell, 20 and to reconcile ([G604](#)) all things to Himself by Him, having made peace through the blood of His cross, by Him, I say—whether they are things in earth, or things in heaven. 21 And you, who were formerly alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now He has reconciled ([G604](#)).

[1 Peter 1:18-21](#) (MEV)

For you know that you were not redeemed ([G3084](#)) from your vain way of life inherited from your fathers with perishable things, like silver or gold, 19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot. 20 He was foreordained before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for you. 21 Through Him you believe in God who raised Him up from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope might be in God.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. As a reminder, our sins (and those of the whole world) are atoned for, and we have peace with God. Jesus Christ took upon Himself a double-portion of justice from the Lord to pardon our sins—one for the Jews (ours), another for the Gentiles (the whole world).

A REDEEMED & RECONCILED (NOT FALLEN) WORLD

Bible Study: Lesson 021



[Isaiah 40:1-3](#) (MEV) [PoG]

Comfort, O comfort, My people, says your God. 2 Speak kindly to Jerusalem, and cry to her that her warfare has ended, that her iniquity has been pardoned, that she has received of the hand of the Lord double for all her sins.

3 The voice of him who cries out, "Prepare the way of the Lord in the wilderness, make straight in the desert a highway for our God." [referring to John the Baptist].

[1 John 2:2](#) (MEV)

He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

[Luke 2:13-14](#) (MEV)

Suddenly there was with the angel a company of the heavenly host praising God and saying, 14 "Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, and good will toward men."

Question: Do you struggle with knowing that your sins against God are already forgiven you? Do you feel you have peace with God (that He is at peace with you)?

Response:

B. Christ removed the curse of the Law (given to the Israelites, yet created animosity between them and the Gentiles):

[Galatians 3:10-14](#) (MEV)

For all who rely on the works of the law are under the curse. For it is written, "Cursed is everyone who does not continue in all things which are written in the Book of the Law, to do them." 11 Now it is evident that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, for "The just shall live by faith." 12 But the law is not of faith, for "The man who does them shall live by them." 13 Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law by being made a curse for us—as it is written, "Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree"— 14 so that the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

[Ephesians 2:11-18](#) (MEV)

Therefore remember that formerly you, the Gentiles in the flesh, who are called the "uncircumcision" by the so-called "circumcision" in the flesh by human hands, 12 were at that time apart from Christ, alienated from the citizenship of Israel and strangers to the covenants of promise, without hope and without God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Jesus you who were formerly far away have been brought near by the blood of Christ.

14 For He is our peace, who has made both groups one and has broken down the barrier of the dividing wall, 15 by abolishing in His flesh the enmity, that is, the law of the commandments contained in ordinances, that in Himself He might make the two into one new man, thus making peace, 16 and that He might reconcile both to God into one body through the cross, thereby slaying the enmity. 17 And He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to those who were near. 18 For through Him we both have access by one Spirit to the Father.

Question: Have you ever tried to obey the Law? Did you feel guilty after failing to live up to it?

Response:

C. Christ removed Adam's curse of thorns and thistles:

[Genesis 3:17b-18](#) (MEV)

Cursed is the ground on account of you; in hard labour you will eat of it all the days of your life. 18 Thorns and thistles it will bring forth for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.

[Matthew 27:27-31](#) (MEV)

Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole detachment of soldiers before Him. 28 They stripped Him and put a scarlet robe on Him, 29 and when they wove a crown of thorns, they put it on His head and put a staff in His right hand. They knelt before Him and mocked Him, saying, "Hail, King of the Jews!" 30 They spit on Him, and took the staff and hit Him on the head. 31 After they had mocked Him, they took the robe off Him, put His own garments on Him, and led Him away to crucify Him.

Question: Adam's curse created the thorns to hurt and mock Jesus with; but Jesus's blood from those thorns redeemed that curse ([1 Peter 1:18-21](#)). What are ways we can acknowledge that Adam's curse was removed?

Response:

D. Christ took away Eve's curse of childbirth pains/hardships and removed the curse of servitude to males (refer 'E'):
Additional resource: <https://aheavenlywelcome.com/what-is-gods-heart-for-your-birth/>

[Genesis 3:16a](#) (MEV) [PoG]

To the woman He said, "I will greatly multiply your [pain, labour, hardship, sorrow, toil] in childbirth, and in pain you will bring forth children; your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."

[1 Timothy 2:13-15](#) (MEV) [PoG]

For Adam was formed first, then Eve. 14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman, being deceived, fell into sin. 15 [Moreover] she will be saved [through, during] childbearing [childbirth] if [she continues] in faith, love, and holiness, with self-control [soundness of mind].

Question: Did Jesus really take away that curse of Eve and pain in childbirth? Is it possible that God wants a woman to experience a joyous time of childbirth (and even a trouble-free pregnancy)?

Response:

- E. Christ demonstrated equality for all (going against all human-based, curse-based, or religious-based patriarchy and discrimination/racism). Even from the start, the Lord created male and female equally (both in the image of the Lord); from which all races stemmed equally from. The “Fall” created the divide from what has always been equal in the eyes of the Lord—this is why He refers to both male and female as “sons” (equal):

[Genesis 1:27](#) (MEV)

So God created man ([H120](#): human beings) in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

[Galatians 3:26-28](#) (MEV)

You are all sons of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, and there is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

[Romans 16:7](#) (MEV)

Greet Andronicus and Junia ([G2458](#): a female apostle), my kinsmen and fellow prisoners, who are noteworthy among the apostles, who also came to Christ before me.

Question: Do you feel discriminated by others or by religion? Do you discriminate against others because of it?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. God fulfilled His own requirement of reconciliation in the manner He instructions for us to do it:

[Matthew 5:23-24](#) (MEV)

“Therefore, if you bring your gift to the altar and there remember that your brother has something against you, 24 leave your gift there before the altar and go on your way. First be reconciled ([G1259](#)) to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.

Thoughts: We have to remember that God will not instruct us to do something He Himself doesn’t do. Thus, when we view this verse through the perspective of God, we can see how He and Christ did this process.

Jesus was the gift ([G1435](#), sacrifice) that God was bringing to the alter. But knew that His brother (humanity) had something against Him—this is an important part, because it is not saying that God had something against humanity, it is that humanity had something against God (in our imaginations... [Colossians 1:21](#)). So, before Jesus was sacrificed for us, He went about through Jesus, demonstrating He was not against humanity, but brought humanity nearer to Him. He showed us His true character and nature to overcome those imaginations we had against Him; and only then did He proceed with sacrificing His only Son for us.

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

INTENTION:

We should never believe that who we are is what we do.

As a believer, regardless of what you do, it cannot take away your God-Gifted Title of Righteous.

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Righteousness, as well as Holiness and Sanctification.

For me, I grew up believing righteousness was my responsibility...that I had a duty to perform to a standard of righteousness. Yet, every time I tried to live a life never sinning (i.e. breaking an old-testament Law), I failed. And this failure always led to extreme feelings of self-disappointment, guilt, and shame. What I tried to do I did in the confidence of my own ability...confidence in my own flesh's ability to achieve it.

But righteousness is not some moral compass or means to achieve something; righteousness must be viewed as what it really is: a state of existence. This existence can never be achieved through our own means-and-methods, it can only manifest itself upon you in believing in Christ Jesus. When you believe and are "Born-Again", you are justified ([G1344](#) – to render righteous, to declare, pronounce, one to be just, righteous). This Righteousness is gifted upon you, not because you "earned" it, but because you deserve it as a child of God! This is how much He truly Loves you—that He crowns you with righteousness and defines you as Holy. You are given these titles that cannot change based on your behaviour; as it is not based on what you do or don't do, but it is based on whom Jesus Christ is. Our behaviour cannot change that Jesus Christ is Holy and Righteous...for "as He is in this world, so are we" ([1 John 4:17](#)).

This is how we can see true Christians falter in their behaviours, yet still seem blessed and cared for by the Lord. For we can live the most sinful life as a Born-Again believer and still experience the complete presence of the Lord in our life. Sin can never undo the titles of Righteousness and Holiness. We covered much of this in previous lessons regarding our already-forgiven sins of the flesh at the Cross; and the forgiven Sin of Unbelief at being Born-Again. As well as the three types of Christians Jesus spoke of with the parable of the seeds and sower ([Mark 4:1-20](#)).

As a non-believer (non-Christian), we can never reach a level of "right living" that will elevate us into heaven or some "higher plain of existence" with the Lord; nor can it bring about our salvation. The first mistake we make in life takes away any righteousness, which can never be undone—except by belief in Christ Jesus, inheriting His Righteousness.

And as Christians, we must never see our personal self as anything short of (less than) Righteous and Holy. Let us stop trying to achieve those through actions or inactions (of the flesh) when we already have been made them.

This is what we will see in Paul's life as he shares in [Philippians 3](#) (following). As a "Pharisee of Pharisees", he attempted salvation by self-righteousness through his flesh. But came to realize that his self-attempt was but worthless (garbage) to the achievement of inheriting Christ's Righteousness.

II. READING: [Philippians 3:1-11](#) (AMP)

Finally, my fellow believers, continue to rejoice and delight in the Lord. To write the same things again is no trouble for me, and it is a safeguard for you.

2 Look out for the dogs [the Judaizers, the legalists], look out for the troublemakers, look out for the false circumcision [those who claim circumcision is necessary for salvation]; 3 for we [who are born-again have been reborn from above—spiritually transformed, renewed, set apart for His purpose and] are the true circumcision, who worship in the Spirit of God and glory and take pride and exult in Christ Jesus and place no confidence [in what we have or who we are] in the flesh— 4 though I myself might have [some grounds for] confidence in the flesh [if I were pursuing salvation by works]. If anyone else thinks that he has reason to be confident in the flesh [that is, in his own efforts to achieve salvation], I have far more: 5 circumcised when I was eight days old, of the nation of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews [an exemplary Hebrew]; as to the [observance of the] Law, a Pharisee; 6 as to my zeal [for Jewish tradition], a persecutor of the church; and as to righteousness [supposed right living] which [my fellow Jews believe] is in the Law, I proved myself blameless.

7 But whatever former things were gains to me [as I thought then], these things [once regarded as advancements in merit] I have come to consider as loss [absolutely worthless] for the sake of Christ [and the purpose which He has given

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



my life]. 8 But more than that, I count everything as loss compared to the priceless privilege and supreme advantage of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord [and of growing more deeply and thoroughly acquainted with Him—a joy unequalled]. For His sake I have lost everything, and I consider it all garbage, so that I may gain Christ, 9 and may be found in Him [believing and relying on Him], not having any righteousness of my own derived from [my obedience to] the Law and its rituals, but [possessing] that [genuine righteousness] which comes through faith in Christ, the righteousness which comes from God on the basis of faith. 10 And this, so that I may know Him [experientially, becoming more thoroughly acquainted with Him, understanding the remarkable wonders of His Person more completely] and [in that same way experience] the power of His resurrection [which overflows and is active in believers], and [that I may share] the fellowship of His sufferings, by being continually conformed [inwardly into His likeness even] to His death [dying as He did]; 11 so that I may attain to the resurrection [that will raise me] from the dead.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Many of the opening lines in the letters of the New Testament contain the phrase “to the saints in”. This word saint does not refer to some select believers or higher-up Christians. This word saint is the word holy—the exact same word in the Greek: *hagios* (G40) – most holy. Also called Sanctified: *hagiazō* (G37, derived from G40) – to make holy. As a Born-Again believer, you have been Sanctified and are perpetually Most Holy!

1 Corinthians 1:2 (AMP)

To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified (set apart, made holy) in Christ Jesus, who are selected and called as saints (God’s people), together with all those who in every place call on and honour the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord and ours.

Ephesians 1:1 (AMP)

Paul, an apostle (special messenger, personally chosen representative) of Christ Jesus (the Messiah, the Anointed), by the will of God [that is, by His purpose and choice], to the saints (God’s people) who are at Ephesus and are faithful and loyal and steadfast in Christ Jesus.

Jude 1:1 (AKJV)

Jude, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called.

Question: Do you think and consider yourself as Holy?

Response:

- B. We personally cannot sanctify ourselves (make ourself holy), it is only Christ Jesus that can. The book of Hebrews shares that process done by Christ and how we as believers inherit this upon being Born-Again.

Hebrews 2:9-11 (AMP)

But we do see Jesus, who was made lower than the angels for a little while [by taking on the limitations of humanity], crowned with glory and honour because of His suffering of death, so that by the grace of God [extended to sinners] He might experience death for [the sins of] everyone.

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



10 For it was fitting for God [that is, an act worthy of His divine nature] that He, for whose sake are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, should make the author and founder of their salvation perfect through suffering [bringing to maturity the human experience necessary for Him to be perfectly equipped for His office as High Priest]. 11 Both Jesus who sanctifies and those who are sanctified [that is, spiritually transformed, made holy, and set apart for God’s purpose] are all from one Father; for this reason He is not ashamed to call them brothers and sisters.

[Hebrews 10:10](#) (AMP)

And in accordance with this will [of God] we [who believe in the message of salvation] have been sanctified [that is, set apart as holy for God and His purposes] through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed) once for all.

[Hebrews 10:14](#) (AKJV)

For by one offering he hath perfected forever them that are sanctified.

Question: What does it mean to you that you have been sanctified [that is, spiritually transformed, made holy, and set apart for God’s purpose]?

Response:

- C. When we look at the word Holy, we must accept and acknowledge in our hearts that there is only one kind of Holy. This is not only what is and is defined by the Lord, but is the same Holy applied to us as Born-Again believers. As such, there are not varying types or levels of “holiness”, there is only one Holy. So, when we are made Holy, it is the exact same Holiness that exists for God the Father, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit. We all (whether male/female, young/old, Jew/Gentile) share that same Holiness! We have the Spirit of God indwelling us (as His Holy Temple)—He could not do so if we did not have His Holiness; nor if it could not be maintained.

[Ephesians 1:3-4](#) (AMP)

Blessed and worthy of praise be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly realms in Christ, 4 just as [in His love] He chose us in Christ [actually selected us for Himself as His own] before the foundation of the world, so that we would be holy [that is, consecrated, set apart for Him, purpose-driven] and blameless in His sight. In love.

[Colossians 1:19-23](#) (AMP)

For it pleased the Father for all the fullness [of deity—the sum total of His essence, all His perfection, powers, and attributes] to dwell [permanently] in Him (the Son), 20 and through [the intervention of] the Son to reconcile all things to Himself, making peace [with believers] through the blood of His cross; through Him, [I say,] whether things on earth or things in heaven.

21 And although you were at one time estranged and alienated and hostile-minded [toward Him], participating in evil things, 22 yet Christ has now reconciled you [to God] in His physical body through death, in order to present you before the Father holy and blameless and beyond reproach— 23 [and He will do this] if you continue in the faith, well-grounded and steadfast, and not shifting away from the [confident] hope [that is a

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



result] of the gospel that you have heard, which was proclaimed in all creation under heaven, and of which [gospel] I, Paul, was made a minister.

[1 Corinthians 3:16-17](#) [PoG]

Do you not know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? If anyone defiles the temple of God, this *defilement* shall God destroy; for you are that holy temple of God.

Question: How can I still be Holy if I still sin?

Response:

- D. Just as we are made Holy when we believe and are Born-Again, the same is true for Righteousness. This understanding that our own means-and-methods to try and obtain self-righteousness cannot in any way compare to the righteousness we receive from Christ Jesus. This is a free gift from Him—gifted out to anyone whom wants it, but only manifest upon the people whom chose to believe in Him [“unto all and upon all them that believe” ([Romans 3:22 AKJV](#))].

[Romans 3:20-24](#) (AMP)

For no person will be justified [freed of guilt and declared righteous] in His sight by [trying to do] the works of the Law. For through the Law we become conscious of sin [and the recognition of sin directs us toward repentance, but provides no remedy for sin].

21 But now the righteousness of God has been clearly revealed [independently and completely] apart from the Law, though it is [actually] confirmed by the Law and the [words and writings of the] Prophets. 22 This righteousness of God comes through faith in Jesus Christ for all those [Jew or Gentile] who believe [and trust in Him and acknowledge Him as God’s Son]. There is no distinction, 23 since all have sinned and continually fall short of the glory of God, 24 and are being justified [declared free of the guilt of sin, made acceptable to God, and granted eternal life] as a gift by His [precious, undeserved] grace, through the redemption [the payment for our sin] which is [provided] in Christ Jesus.

[Matthew 25:46](#) (AMP)

Then these [unbelieving people] will go away into eternal (unending) punishment, but those who are righteous and in right standing with God [will go, by His remarkable grace] into eternal (unending) life.”

Question: As Jesus shares in Matthew above, righteousness is the requirement for “eternal unending life” with the Lord. Yet, not one’s own personal righteousness (right-doing), but an inheritance (a right-standing) of His Righteousness upon believing in Him. Do you believe in Jesus Christ?

Response:

RIGHTEOUSNESS IS NOT A BEHAVIOUR!

Bible Study: Lesson 022



IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. When you study-out all the verses pertaining to righteousness (including sanctification and holiness), it may seem like it is talking about an action, not an identity. Some of this can be seen in a few passages in 1 John. And as such, want to tackle them to help clarify the meanings of them. I will be looking at the AKJV / NKJV versions with PoG definitions and *clarifications* (not using the AMP version as have for this lesson). And when I mention the phrases “*that is to continue in belief*” and “*abides as righteous*”, I am referring to the state of remaining and continuing to be Born-Again (which happened upon believing in Christ Jesus). As John defines abiding: “Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he [*abides*] in God.” ([1 John 4:15](#))

[1 John 2:1-2](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

My little children [*fellow believers with John whom he disciples*], these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father [*a comforting reminder to us and the Father that Christ bore all our sins of the flesh*], Jesus Christ the righteous [*having also obtained that same righteous title as believers*]. 2 And He Himself is the propitiation [*an appeasing atonement*] for our sins, and not for ours only [*believers*], but also for the whole world [*non-believers*].

[1 John 2:26-29](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you. 27 But the anointing [*Holy Spirit*] which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing [*Holy Spirit*] teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide [*remain in a state or condition*] in Him.

28 And now, little children, abide [*remain in a state or condition—that is to continue in belief*] in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. 29 If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who [~~practices righteousness~~] has been made and abides as righteous—*that is having been Born-Again*] is born of Him.

[1 John 3:4-9](#) (NKJV) [PoG]

Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. 5 And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. 6 Whoever abides [*remains in a state or condition—that is to continue in belief*] in Him does not sin [*that being the sin of not believing in Him*]. Whoever sins [*that being the sin of not believing in Him*] has neither seen Him nor known Him.

7 Little children, let no one deceive you. He who [~~practices righteousness~~] has been made and abides as righteous] is righteous, just as He is righteous. 8 He who sins [*that is the sin of not believing in Him*] is of the devil, for the devil has sinned [*not believed God*] from the beginning. For this purpose, the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. 9 Whoever has been born of God does not sin [*that is the sin of not believing in Him*], for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin [*that is the sin of not believing in Him*], because he has been born of God [*Born Again*].

Thoughts: When we understand that righteousness is not something achieved or lost through action/inaction, we can acknowledge it as a state of existence. Our IDENTITY is righteous, and as a believer, we always (perpetually) abide in Him as righteous (exist as righteous).

SALVATION / SAVED

INTENTION:

No matter what you are facing in this life, you can be freed (saved) from its power over you.

Our Salvation into Eternal Life with the Lord is brought to us by Christ Jesus for us to believe into that Salvation.

But also, we are and can be Saved from the perils, diseases, strongholds, and obstacles we face on this earth—we just need to allow Him into those aspects of our Spirit, Heart, Soul, Mind, and Body.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Salvation, including the term Saved.

It is Christ Jesus who did what He did through the completion of the Cross and sending of the Holy Spirit that brings Salvation and His desire for us to be Saved.

I am using two different words and definitions here to go into what it means for both in scripture. Let's start with their meanings in the Greek:

Salvation – G4991: sōtēria

1. deliverance, preservation, safety, salvation
 - a. deliverance from the molestation of enemies
 - b. in an ethical sense, that which concludes to the soul's safety or salvation
 - i. of Messianic salvation
2. salvation as the present possession of all true Christians
3. future salvation, the sum of benefits and blessings which the Christians, redeemed from all earthly ills, will enjoy after the visible return of Christ from heaven in the consummated and eternal kingdom of God.

Saved – G4982: sōzō

1. to save, keep safe and sound, to rescue from danger or destruction
 - a. one (from injury or peril)
 - i. to save a suffering one (from perishing), i.e. one suffering from disease, to make well, heal, restore to health
 - ii. to preserve one who is in danger of destruction, to save or rescue
 - b. to save in the technical biblical sense
 - i. negatively
 - to deliver from the penalties of the Messianic judgment
 - to save from the evils which obstruct the reception of the Messianic deliverance

When we go through the different readings and related verses, we will see how both Salvation and Saved applies to us in the right NOW, in the future, and in both the physical and spiritual. We must not just see these terms as happening in the “distant future”, but how it uniquely and personally relates to all my being (Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit). In this sense, we are: saved, being saved, and reserved for salvation.

We will also tackle the notion of whether we can “lose” our salvation.

II. READING: Salvation / Saved is only through Jesus Christ:

John 12:44-50 (NABRE)

Jesus cried out and said, “Whoever believes in me believes not only in me but also in the one who sent me, 45 and whoever sees me sees the one who sent me. 46 I came into the world as light, so that everyone who believes in me might not remain in darkness. 47 And if anyone hears my words and does not observe them, I do not condemn him, for I did not come to condemn the world but to save (G4982) the world. 48 Whoever rejects me and does not accept my words has something to judge him: the word that I spoke, it will condemn him on the last day, 49 because I did not speak on my own, but the Father who sent me commanded me what to say and speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is eternal life. So what I say, I say as the Father told me.”

Acts 4:8-12 (NABRE) [PoG]

Then Peter, filled with the holy Spirit, answered them, “Leaders of the people and elders: 9 If we are being examined today about a good deed done to a cripple, namely, by what means he was saved (G4982), 10 then all of you and all the people of Israel should know that it was in the name of Jesus Christ the Nazorean whom you crucified, whom God raised from the dead; in his name this man stands before you healed [(G5199: restored to health)]. 11 He is ‘the stone

rejected by you, the builders, which has become the cornerstone.’ 12 There is no salvation ([G4991](#)) through anyone else, nor is there any other name under heaven given to the human race by which we are to be saved ([G4982](#)).”

[Romans 1:16-17](#) (NABRE)

For I am not ashamed of the gospel. It is the power of God for the salvation ([G4991](#)) of everyone who believes: for Jew first, and then Greek. 17 For in it is revealed the righteousness of God from faith to faith; as it is written, “The one who is righteous by faith will live.”

[Ephesians 1:7-14](#) (NABRE)

In him we have redemption by his blood, the forgiveness of transgressions, in accord with the riches of his grace 8 that he lavished upon us. In all wisdom and insight, 9 he has made known to us the mystery of his will in accord with his favour that he set forth in him 10 as a plan for the fullness of times, to sum up all things in Christ, in heaven and on earth.

11 In him we were also chosen, destined in accord with the purpose of the One who accomplishes all things according to the intention of his will, 12 so that we might exist for the praise of his glory, we who first hoped in Christ. 13 In him you also, who have heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation ([G4991](#)), and have believed in him, were sealed with the promised holy Spirit, 14 which is the first instalment of our inheritance toward redemption as God’s possession, to the praise of his glory.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. When we believe, we are sealed with the Holy Spirit; and through Christ Jesus is that means to Salvation. We are placed into Salvation when we believe, and fully inherit it upon the completion of our life here on earth—that is either when we die (Christian ‘sleep’), or when the Lord comes again. In that sense, with our time here on earth, we “work out our salvation”—in that we hold onto that hope of salvation (preserving it) until it becomes fulfilled at the end of our life; and while doing so, embrace the deliverance Christ Jesus has given us in the now.

[Romans 13:11](#) (NABRE)

And do this because you know the time; it is the hour now for you to awake from sleep. For our salvation is nearer now than when we first believed.

[Philippians 2:12-13](#) (NABRE)

So then, my beloved, obedient as you have always been, not only when I am present but all the more now when I am absent, work out your salvation with fear and trembling. 13 For God is the one who, for his good purpose, works in you both to desire and to work.

[1 Thessalonians 5:8-10](#) (NABRE)

But since we are of the day, let us be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love and the helmet that is hope for salvation. 9 For God did not destine us for wrath, but to gain ([G4047](#): preserve) salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, 10 who died for us, so that whether we are awake or asleep we may live together with him.

[Hebrews 9:26b-28](#) (NABRE)

But now once for all he has appeared at the end of the ages to take away sin by his sacrifice. 27 Just as it is appointed that human beings die once, and after this the judgment, 28 so also Christ, offered once to take away the sins of many, will appear a second time, not to take away sin but to bring salvation to those who eagerly await him.

[1 Peter 1:3-9](#) (NABRE)

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who in his great mercy gave us a new birth to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 to an inheritance that is imperishable, undefiled, and unfading, kept in heaven for you 5 who by the power of God are safeguarded through faith, to a salvation that is ready to be revealed in the final time. 6 In this you rejoice, although now for a little while you may have to suffer through various trials, 7 so that the genuineness of your faith, more precious than gold that is perishable even though tested by fire, may prove to be for praise, glory, and honour at the revelation of Jesus Christ. 8 Although you have not seen him you love him; even though you do not see him now yet believe in him, you rejoice with an indescribable and glorious joy, 9 as you attain the goal of [your] faith, the salvation of your souls.

Question: In the meaning of the word Salvation it says: “deliverance, preservation, safety, salvation—deliverance from the molestation of enemies”. What does that mean to you in the ‘here and now’?

Response:

- B. This Salvation is because we are Saved by believing in Jesus Christ, which leads us to that fulfilment of Salvation.

[Romans 10:9-13](#) (NABRE)

For, if you confess with your mouth that Jesus is Lord and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For one believes with the heart and so is justified, and one confesses with the mouth and so is saved. 11 For the scripture says, “No one who believes in him will be put to shame.” 12 For there is no distinction between Jew and Greek; the same Lord is Lord of all, enriching all who call upon him. 13 For “everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”

[Ephesians 2:4-8](#) (NABRE)

But God, who is rich in mercy, because of the great love he had for us, 5 even when we were dead in our transgressions, brought us to life with Christ (by grace you have been saved), 6 raised us up with him, and seated us with him in the heavens in Christ Jesus, 7 that in the ages to come he might show the immeasurable riches of his grace in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace you have been saved through faith, and this is not from you; it is the gift of God.

[2 Timothy 4:18](#) (NABRE)

The Lord will rescue me from every evil threat and will bring me safe ([G4982](#)) to his heavenly kingdom. To him be glory forever and ever. Amen.

Question: What can we personally do to recognise this Saving in our life now—aspects of being Saved that do or can manifest themselves in our day-to-day lives?

Response:

- C. The saving that comes from Jesus Christ encompasses anything to do with one's being (Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit). As we read in Acts 4:8-12 above, we see this saving of the crippled man was physical (in his body). We must not reject that Christ wants us to be healed in the physical; as "healing" and "saving" are often shared in meaning in the context of a physical healing (of which Christ took upon Himself).

[1 Peter 2:24](#) (NABRE)

He himself bore our sins in his body upon the cross, so that, free from sin, we might live for righteousness. By his wounds you have been healed ([G2390](#)).

[Mark 5:25-34](#) (NABRE)

There was a woman afflicted with haemorrhages for twelve years. 26 She had suffered greatly at the hands of many doctors and had spent all that she had. Yet she was not helped but only grew worse. 27 She had heard about Jesus and came up behind him in the crowd and touched his cloak. 28 She said, "If I but touch his clothes, I shall be cured ([G4982](#))." 29 Immediately her flow of blood dried up. She felt in her body that she was healed ([G2390](#)) of her affliction. 30 Jesus, aware at once that power had gone out from him, turned around in the crowd and asked, "Who has touched my clothes?" 31 But his disciples said to him, "You see how the crowd is pressing upon you, and yet you ask, 'Who touched me?'" 32 And he looked around to see who had done it. 33 The woman, realizing what had happened to her, approached in fear and trembling. She fell down before Jesus and told him the whole truth. 34 He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has saved ([G4982](#)) you. Go in peace and be cured ([G5199](#)) of your affliction."

[Mark 6:55-56](#) (NABRE)

They scurried about the surrounding country and began to bring in the sick on mats to wherever they heard he was. 56 Whatever villages or towns or countryside he entered, they laid the sick in the marketplaces and begged him that they might touch only the tassel on his cloak; and as many as touched it were healed ([G4982](#)).

Question: Does your heart and mind accept or reject that the Lord wants you to have physical healing?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. Can we "lose" our Salvation? No, not in the sense of it being as though we misplace it (i.e. like we would "lose" a coin). But we can reject Salvation; even after being Saved. What this means is that it is our choice to believe in Christ Jesus to be Saved; and thus, also our choice to un-believe even after we chose to believe on Him and are Born-Again. It is not a result of "losing" something by mistake or error, but by literally choosing to reject Jesus Christ in His entirety to no longer be Born-Again. No sin of the flesh can do this; we don't lose our Holiness or Salvation when we commit a sin of the flesh. Remember, those were all bore at the Cross once-and-for-all-time. It is only the Sin of again not believing in Him for Salvation that will remove us from being Saved unto Salvation.

This is addressed specifically in Hebrews 6:1-6 which describes what we have to experience before knowingly rejecting Jesus Christ outright after believing. We cannot Crucify Christ a second time; nor, in that sense, be "Born-Again-Again". Ephesians talks about unsealing ourselves from the Holy Spirit. Hebrews 10 and 2 Peter 2 talks about rejecting Him; with Romans 11 discussing the analogy of Olive Branches being "grafted in" through belief, and "cut off" in unbelief (being cut off even after being grafted in through belief).

[Romans 11:19-24](#) (NABRE)

Indeed you will say, “Branches were broken off so that I might be grafted in.” 20 That is so. They were broken off because of unbelief, but you are there because of faith. So do not become haughty, but stand in awe. 21 For if God did not spare the natural branches, [perhaps] he will not spare you either. 22 See, then, the kindness and severity of God: severity toward those who fell, but God’s kindness to you, provided you remain in his kindness; otherwise you too will be cut off. 23 And they also, if they do not remain in unbelief, will be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again. 24 For if you were cut from what is by nature a wild olive tree, and grafted, contrary to nature, into a cultivated one, how much more will they who belong to it by nature be grafted back into their own olive tree.

[Ephesians 1:13-14; 4:30](#) (NABRE) [PoG]

13 In him you also, who have heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and have believed in him, were sealed with the promised holy Spirit, 14 which is the first instalment of our inheritance toward redemption as God’s possession, to the praise of his glory.

30 And do not grieve the holy Spirit of God [*through the Sin of un-believing in Jesus Christ*], with which you were sealed for the day of redemption.

[Hebrews 6:1-6](#) (NABRE)

Therefore, let us leave behind the basic teaching about Christ and advance to maturity, without laying the foundation all over again: repentance from dead works and faith in God, 2 instruction about baptisms and laying on of hands, resurrection of the dead and eternal judgment. 3 And we shall do this, if only God permits. 4 For it is impossible in the case of those who have once been enlightened and tasted the heavenly gift and shared in the holy Spirit 5 and tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, 6 and then have fallen away, to bring them to repentance again, since they are re-crucifying the Son of God for themselves and holding him up to contempt.

[Hebrews 10:26-29](#) (NABRE) [PoG]

If we sin [*the Sin of un-believing in Jesus Christ*] deliberately after receiving knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains sacrifice for sins 27 but a fearful prospect of judgment and a flaming fire that is going to consume the adversaries. 28 Anyone who rejects the law of Moses is put to death without pity on the testimony of two or three witnesses. 29 Do you not think that a much worse punishment is due the one who has contempt for the Son of God, considers unclean the covenant-blood by which he was consecrated, and insults the spirit of grace?

[2 Peter 2:20-22](#) (NABRE) [PoG]

For if they, having escaped the defilements of the world through the [precise and correct knowledge of our] Lord and saviour Jesus Christ, again become entangled and overcome by them, their last condition is worse than their first. 21 For it would have been better for them not to have known [to be fully acquainted with] the way of righteousness than after knowing it to turn back from the holy commandment handed down to them. 22 What is expressed in the true proverb has happened to them, “The dog returns to its own vomit,” and “A bathed sow returns to wallowing in the mire.”

Thoughts: It is that we can reject Salvation after being Born-Again; but have confidence (because God keeps us sealed) that you cannot accidentally “lose” it by mistake. Nor will He Himself reject you or remove you from Salvation because we might think He is “unhappy” with us (your sins are perpetually forgiven). We must believe and remain in that belief, for us to reach (achieve) Salvation at His coming or our death (Christian ‘sleep’). Just as you accept Him in your heart into Salvation, you have to reject Him in your heart to deny your Salvation.

GOD ALLOWED IT?

INTENTION:

Don't blame God for the misfortunes of this world.

He is the Author of Life, not hardship or death.

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the saying about whether or not “God Allowed It”.

Sometimes we see this as said in the questions: “Why does evil exist?” or “Why does God allow evil?”.

But these questions boil down to humanity trying to understand the Character and Nature of God and questioning whether He is in control or even exists. We would like to think that God “sovereignly” chooses when things happen, if it is to happen, and why it happens—whether it be a natural disaster (like a hurricane or earthquake), sickness, accident, or unanswered prayer.

To ask the question, “Why does God allow evil?”, is usually in the context of harm done to us or others. We want God to keep people and things from hurting other people (and hurting us personally). Yet, with that question, do we also ask ourself, “Why does God allow ME to do evil?”

From the beginning of Creation, God has only wanted the best for us. He designed a world free from hurt and pain and evil. And in that perfect place, did not design us as programmed robots. He designed us with Free Will: the ability to make our own decision to choose Him (Life) or choose death ([Genesis 2:16-17](#) and [Deuteronomy 30:11-20](#))—further giving us understanding that it’s the Thief that comes to Kill, Steal, and Destroy—not Him ([John 10:10](#)).

This same God-Given means to chose for ourselves, regardless of the consequences, is still active now. We make choices for ourself that bring us in alignment (or not) with His Will, affecting both ourselves and those around us.

In the desire to want God to be All-Powerful, we make it as though we do not have to take responsibility for our own actions. That way, when something doesn’t go the way WE want it to, there is someone to blame but ourselves (blame as an individual or humanity as a whole). And if we don’t like what we see, or do not want to believe God is All Good, we create doctrines and confusions of God—even though Christ Jesus demonstrated to us the exact identity of who God is. We may even deny the existence of God because we can’t fathom a God who would allow a person to have a Free Will to do harm (disguised in the question of God allowing evil).

The term “evil” above, is used as a verb with the actions of being: morally reprehensible, arising from actual or imputed bad character or conduct... ([Merriam-Webster](#)). But in the context of the Bible, that definition is just talking about the sins that people commit. When Jesus used the word ‘evil’, He referenced people that do not believe in Him for Salvation—‘evil’ as a state of being ([Matthew 7:11](#)); just as we saw with Righteousness as a state of being.

As such, when we question God as to why He allows bad things to happen, we are talking about why sin exists—because, regardless of whether you are a Born-Again believer or not, we still commit sins (as we have discussed in previous Bible Lessons). Sin is anything God does not want for us. But these sins of the flesh, as we know, were forever taken away at the Cross. The Sin of not believing (being Evil) is only removed upon believing in Jesus Christ.

But that is not what we are discussing here—we are here to really talk about whether God can somehow control us (violating our Free Will) and thus “allows” things to happen or not based on a decision He makes in that specific moment. Implying that God was witness to something He could alter with His Power, but for some reason “chose” not to. Or more specifically, this is asking the question: can God make someone do sinful “evil” things?

In short, the answer to these questions is that He cannot violate our Free Will; instead, He instructs us in what to do, even providing us the power and ability to choose Life over Death. And does so through guidance; not forcing, not hardening, not coercing, not manipulating, not bullying. The choice is ours.

II. READING: We limit God in and through us.

[Ephesians 3:4-21](#) (MSG)

As you read over what I have written to you, you’ll be able to see for yourselves into the mystery of Christ. None of our ancestors understood this. Only in our time has it been made clear by God’s Spirit through his holy apostles and

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



prophets of this new order. The mystery is that people who have never heard of God and those who have heard of him all their lives (what I've been calling outsiders and insiders) stand on the same ground before God. They get the same offer, same help, same promises in Christ Jesus. The Message is accessible and welcoming to everyone, across the board.

7-8 This is my life work: helping people understand and respond to this Message. It came as a sheer gift to me, a real surprise, God handling all the details. When it came to presenting the Message to people who had no background in God's way, I was the least qualified of any of the available Christians. God saw to it that I was equipped, but you can be sure that it had nothing to do with my natural abilities.

8-10 And so here I am, preaching and writing about things that are way over my head, the inexhaustible riches and generosity of Christ. My task is to bring out in the open and make plain what God, who created all this in the first place, has been doing in secret and behind the scenes all along. Through followers of Jesus like yourselves gathered in churches, this extraordinary plan of God is becoming known and talked about even among the angels!

11-13 All this is proceeding along lines planned all along by God and then executed in Christ Jesus. When we trust in him, we're free to say whatever needs to be said, bold to go wherever we need to go. So don't let my present trouble on your behalf get you down. Be proud!

14-19 My response is to get down on my knees before the Father, this magnificent Father who parcels out all heaven and earth. I ask him to strengthen you by his Spirit—not a brute strength but a glorious inner strength—that Christ will live in you as you open the door and invite him in. And I ask him that with both feet planted firmly on love, you'll be able to take in with all followers of Jesus the extravagant dimensions of Christ's love. Reach out and experience the breadth! Test its length! Plumb the depths! Rise to the heights! Live full lives, full in the fullness of God.

20-21 God can do anything, you know—far more than you could ever imagine or guess or request in your wildest dreams! He does it not by pushing us around but by working within us, his Spirit deeply and gently within us.

Glory to God in the church!

Glory to God in the Messiah, in Jesus!

Glory down all the generations!

Glory through all millennia! Oh, yes!

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. God cannot force us to believe in Him, nor can He force us to follow Him. This is something we even saw in the life and ministry of Jesus. He demonstrated Himself as Christ, and represented fully who God the Father was, yet people still chose not to believe Him—even when witnessing all His miracles. People had hardened hearts to Him—and it wasn't God doing the hardening. It wasn't even God who hardened Pharaoh's heart—it is the miracles and Righteousness of God that people react to in a hardened state. The disciples of Jesus "couldn't believe" some of the things Jesus did—their hearts were hardened.

[Mark 3:1-6](#) (MSG) [PoG]

Then he went back in the meeting place where he found a man with a crippled hand. The Pharisees had their eyes on Jesus to see if he would heal him, hoping to catch him in a Sabbath violation. He said to the man with the crippled hand, "Stand here where we can see you."

4 Then he spoke to the people: "What kind of action suits the Sabbath best? Doing good or doing evil? Helping people or leaving them helpless?" No one said a word.

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



5-6 He looked them in the eye, one after another, angry now, furious at their hard-nosed religion [hardness of their hearts]. He said to the man, “Hold out your hand.” He held it out—it was as good as new! The Pharisees got out as fast as they could, sputtering about how they would join forces with Herod’s followers and ruin him.

[Mark 16:9-16](#) (MSG) [PoG]

After rising from the dead, Jesus appeared early on Sunday morning to Mary Magdalene, whom he had delivered from seven demons. She went to his former companions, now weeping and carrying on, and told them. When they heard her report that she had seen him alive and well, they didn’t believe her.

12-13 Later he appeared, but in a different form, to two of them out walking in the countryside. They went back and told the rest, but they weren’t believed either.

14-16 Still later, as the Eleven were eating supper, he appeared and took them to task most severely for their stubborn unbelief [and hardness of heart], refusing to believe those who had seen him raised up. Then he said, “Go into the world. Go everywhere and announce the Message of God’s good news to one and all. Whoever believes and is baptized is saved; whoever refuses to believe is damned.

[Hebrews 3:7-11](#) (MSG) [PoG]

That’s why the Holy Spirit says,

Today, please listen;
don’t turn a deaf ear [harden your heart] as in “the bitter uprising,”
that time of wilderness testing!
Even though they watched me at work for forty years,
your ancestors refused to let me do it my way;
over and over they tried my patience.
And I was provoked, oh, so provoked!
I said, “They’ll never keep their minds on God;
they refuse to walk down my road.”
Exasperated, I vowed,
“They’ll never get where they’re going,
never be able to sit down and rest.”

Question: Is it a choice to believe in Him?

Response:

- B. We are given instruction not to be led “astray”—a choice. Jesus warned people to watch out for the deception of the Pharisees who lead people away from the Lord—all the while the Lord wanting to have relationship with them. He can only instruct us, not force us: “Don’t let people do that to you” [i.e., our choice]. This shows how we have a choice to whom we follow and whom we believe. God can only lead us to Himself, not make people.

[Matthew 23:1-13](#) (MSG)

Now Jesus turned to address his disciples, along with the crowd that had gathered with them. “The religion scholars and Pharisees are competent teachers in God’s Law. You won’t go wrong in following their teachings on

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



Moses. But be careful about following them. They talk a good line, but they don't live it. They don't take it into their hearts and live it out in their behaviour. It's all spit-and-polish veneer.

4-7 "Instead of giving you God's Law as food and drink by which you can banquet on God, they package it in bundles of rules, loading you down like pack animals. They seem to take pleasure in watching you stagger under these loads, and wouldn't think of lifting a finger to help. Their lives are perpetual fashion shows, embroidered prayer shawls one day and flowery prayers the next. They love to sit at the head table at church dinners, basking in the most prominent positions, preening in the radiance of public flattery, receiving honorary degrees, and getting called 'Doctor' and 'Reverend.'

8-10 "Don't let people do that to you, put you on a pedestal like that. You all have a single Teacher, and you are all classmates. Don't set people up as experts over your life, letting them tell you what to do. Save that authority for God; let him tell you what to do. No one else should carry the title of 'Father'; you have only one Father, and he's in heaven. And don't let people manoeuvre you into taking charge of them. There is only one Life-Leader for you and them—Christ.

11-12 "Do you want to stand out? Then step down. Be a servant. If you puff yourself up, you'll get the wind knocked out of you. But if you're content to simply be yourself, your life will count for plenty.

13 "I've had it with you! You're hopeless, you religion scholars, you Pharisees! Frauds! Your lives are roadblocks to God's kingdom. You refuse to enter, and won't let anyone else in either.

Question: Is God the one keeping you out of God's Kingdom?

Response:

- C. The Lord is always doing His utmost to lead us to "greener pastures", providing for us and keeping us safe from harm. However, He also makes it clear that, as Christians, we will face persecution. Paul faced much harm from Alexander the coppersmith ([2 Timothy 4:14-15](#)); whom I believe was Paul's "thorn in the flesh" as a "messenger of Satan" ([2 Corinthians 12:7-9](#)). This is because God cannot violate a person's own free will to be the one doing the persecuting. He, as God in the Flesh, couldn't even keep Himself from persecution.

[Mark 10:29-31](#) (MSG)

Jesus said, "Mark my words, no one who sacrifices house, brothers, sisters, mother, father, children, land—whatever—because of me and the Message will lose out. They'll get it all back, but multiplied many times in homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children, and land—but also in troubles. And then the bonus of eternal life! This is once again the Great Reversal: Many who are first will end up last, and the last first."

Question: Have you ever done something hurtful (intentionally or by mistake) to someone?

Response:

GOD ALLOWED IT?

Bible Study: Lesson 024



D. What are other areas in life where the Lord instructs us to do—not Him being the one doing:

[Matthew 18:18](#) (PoG) – Don't Limit Heaven on Earth.

I am truly telling you: that whatever *you choose* to bind [forbid] on earth, it will be also be bound in Heaven [forbidden *from coming to earth*]; and whatever *you choose* to loose on [set free into this] earth, it will be loosed [set free] in Heaven [*to be able to come to earth*].

[Mark 11:22-24](#) (MSG) – Speak to your Mountain.

Jesus was matter-of-fact: “Embrace this God-life. Really embrace it, and nothing will be too much for you. This mountain, for instance: Just say, ‘Go jump in the lake’—no shuffling or hemming and hawing—and it’s as good as done. That’s why I urge you to pray for absolutely everything, ranging from small to large. Include everything as you embrace this God-life, and you’ll get God’s everything.

[John 20:30-31](#) (MSG) – You Must Chose to Believe in Him.

Jesus provided far more God-revealing signs than are written down in this book. These are written down so you will believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God, and in the act of believing, have real and eternal life in the way he personally revealed it.

[Romans 12:1-2](#) (MSG) – You Need to Renew Your Mind.

So here’s what I want you to do, God helping you: Take your everyday, ordinary life—your sleeping, eating, going-to-work, and walking-around life—and place it before God as an offering. Embracing what God does for you is the best thing you can do for him. Don’t become so well-adjusted to your culture that you fit into it without even thinking. Instead, fix your attention on God. You’ll be changed from the inside out. Readily recognize what he wants from you, and quickly respond to it. Unlike the culture around you, always dragging you down to its level of immaturity, God brings the best out of you, develops well-formed maturity in you.

[James 4:7-10](#) (MSG) – We Have to Resist the Devil.

So let God work his will in you. Yell a loud no to the Devil and watch him make himself scarce. Say a quiet yes to God and he’ll be there in no time. Quit dabbling in sin. Purify your inner life. Quit playing the field. Hit bottom, and cry your eyes out. The fun and games are over. Get serious, really serious. Get down on your knees before the Master; it’s the only way you’ll get on your feet.

[1 John 4:1-3](#) (MSG) – We are Instructed to Test the Spirits.

My dear friends, don’t believe everything you hear. Carefully weigh and examine what people tell you. Not everyone who talks about God comes from God. There are a lot of lying preachers loose in the world.

2-3 Here’s how you test for the genuine Spirit of God. Everyone who confesses openly his faith in Jesus Christ—the Son of God, who came as an actual flesh-and-blood person—comes from God and belongs to God. And everyone who refuses to confess faith in Jesus has nothing in common with God. This is the spirit of antichrist that you heard was coming. Well, here it is, sooner than we thought!

Question: Do you find you would rather have God do for you, than do what He wants you to do?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. A sad reality to some Bible translations is that when done incorrectly, it can cause confusion and create unnecessary doctrines to try and resolve implied conflict in God's Word. In the following verses, most translations have contributed "hardness of heart" to something that God does to us (that He is the One hardening our heart); from which He then scolds us for having that hardened heart. But when we look at these verses in both the Greek and quoted Hebrew, it does not say that it is God doing the hardening. And the Message translation correctly shares this in John:

[John 12:35-40](#) (MSG)

35-36 Jesus said, "For a brief time still, the light is among you. Walk by the light you have so darkness doesn't destroy you. If you walk in darkness, you don't know where you're going. As you have the light, believe in the light. Then the light will be within you, and shining through your lives. You'll be children of light."

36-40 Jesus said all this, and then went into hiding. All these God-signs he had given them and they still didn't get it, still wouldn't trust him. This proved that the prophet Isaiah was right:

God, who believed what we preached?

Who recognized God's arm, outstretched and ready to act?

First, they wouldn't believe, then they couldn't—again, just as Isaiah said:

Their eyes are blinded, their hearts are hardened,

So that they wouldn't see with their eyes and perceive with their hearts,

And turn to me, God, so I could heal them.

This is how it would read in a corrected AKJV translation for both John and Isaiah:

[John 12:40](#) (PoG)

~~He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart;~~

Their eyes are blind, and their hearts are hardened.

And because of this, they are not able see, nor understand with their heart; to be converted.

So that I, the Lord, would indeed heal ([G2390](#)) them.

[Isaiah 6:10](#) (PoG)

~~Make the heart of this people fat,~~

~~and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes;~~

The hearts of these people are fat (waxed),

And their ears are heavy (dulled), and their eyes are shut (smear'd shut / blinded);

Otherwise, they would see with their eyes, and hear with their ears,

and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed ([H7495](#)).

Thoughts: If it is the Lord's desire that they be converted and be healed, why is it that He would be the one hardening their hearts? Why would God's Will be keeping people away from Him when it is Will that all would come to Him?

We must not accept this contradiction—either we must believe He doesn't want people to come to Him, or that He does want people to come to Him. Jesus showed that it is God's Will that everyone would choose to come to Him for Salvation. Yet, Jesus also let us know that not all would. The Lord's wants everyone saved:

[2 Timothy 2:4-7](#) (MSG)

He wants not only us but everyone saved, you know, everyone to get to know the truth we've learned: that there's one God and only one, and one Priest-Mediator between God and us—Jesus, who offered himself in exchange for everyone held captive by sin, to set them all free. Eventually the news is going to get out. This and this only has been my appointed work: getting this news to those who have never heard of God, and explaining how it works by simple faith and plain truth.

- B. Let's tackle [Romans 9](#) including where it says, "Therefore He has mercy on whom He wills, and whom He wills He hardens". Does it really say God does violate our free will; and that it is Him who pre-chooses who gets Saved?

We won't read this chapter together, as it can be its own lesson. But want to bring some insight as to being able to read it from the perspective of God not controlling people.

We cannot discard all that we have now previously read through (and all the previous lessons) because of this one section of the Bible. We must instead evaluate what Paul is saying and the context from which he is saying it.

In general, the context of Romans 9 is written from a Jewish perspective towards Gentiles. For the Jews, they believed that because they were the "chosen" people, only they themselves had access to God. Yet God's plan was to always bring the Gentiles into that access—to "graft them in" ([Romans 11](#)).

This upset the Jews, because they didn't feel like the Gentiles "deserved" God's mercy. Just as Jonah lamented that God showed Nineveh mercy ([Jonah 4](#)). Or that the Disciples James and John wanted to "call fire down from Heaven" to destroy the Samaritan village ([Luke 9:54](#)). Our human nature tends to want to inflict a punishing justice for "evils". Yet Jesus did not come to Judge, but to bring Mercy and Forgiveness.

God doesn't pick based on our works—like humans do (or as we create Santa Claus to be)—He picks outside of our works because He Loves us and wants to give each of us a chance to come to Him and see how much Grace and Mercy He has for us. Esau was the "natural" choice in human eyes, but God chose outside of our way of doing things. It wasn't that He had anything against Esau, He just wanted to demonstrate compassion to Jacob.

David was an illegitimate son of Jesse (born from another woman than his brothers). This is how David looked nothing like his striking brothers. God chose the "red-headed step-child", disregarding the sin Jesse had committed. Our religious judgements would not let a bastard child be made king. Yet God did.

Jesus's lineage is through sinners we wouldn't want associated with our own "good name"; yet it was those sinners Jesus frequently hung out with. Those sins are not in issue with God (as we learned before).

What about Pharaoh then? We need to look at it from the perspective of God not being able to violate our free will (not the other way around). When we make this the truth, we can see that Pharaoh's heart (like the Pharisees and Disciples) were hardened already to the Lord—and that the miracles (plagues) revealed this hardness.

Hardened hearts tend to react negatively to the Lord's Righteousness.

For Pharaoh, the Lord knew he had a hardened heart, and furthermore, that it would remain hard. Thus, the Lord used what was available to demonstrate His existence and superiority over the god's of Egypt.

To delve into Romans 9 more, here are a couple of resources:

<http://lhim.org/blog/2014/04/11/a-free-will-perspective-on-romans-9-and-predestination/>

<https://graceandfaithministries.org/wp-content/uploads/2012/04/Romans-9.pdf>

- C. To study out further the notion of the "Sovereignty" of God and how He cannot violate our free will, please read:

<https://newcreations.org/sovereignty-of-god/>

THE LORD'S PRAYER

INTENTION:

Lord, "Teach us how to pray".

Let's not pray as in the Old Testament. But let's pray as confident God will hear us and answer us.

If we find our prayers are not answered, it's best to self-evaluate what you are praying; and if He has directed you to do something before that you have not finished doing.

But know, anytime you are in need, He is there to help. And prayer is just conversations with your Father.

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at what is typically titled: The Lord's Prayer.

These verses are something, that from a young age in Sunday School, I began to memorize. I am sure many of you are also familiar with it if you grew up in a church. But one thing I never really learned from that time, was the meaning of it. I could recite it, but it didn't mean much to me beyond something I was taught to do (as rote).

I was struck one day though when I read someone saying that this isn't really a prayer by the Lord—and as such, isn't really the Lord's prayer. Instead, it should be considered "The Disciple's Prayer". And this made sense to me.

Even though Jesus spoke it, it was given as a response to what the Disciples asked Him: "Master, teach us to pray, as John (the Baptist) taught his disciples". Jesus was giving them *their* prayer to say—not a prayer that Jesus was saying He prayed. Given too at a specific time in their Discipleship with Jesus. If we want to read what Jesus prayed, we need to read His prayers in [John 17](#). It is here that He prayed for Himself, His Disciples, and all Believers that were to exist.

So then, let's delve into some of the meaning and purpose behind this prayer for the Disciples. And then ask ourselves: can we apply it to our lives today? Yes and no.

In general, Jesus was teaching them a "new" way of relating to God. One that probably shook them to the core as to how they viewed or believed God—not as some distant figure, but a trusting and caring Father. Jesus took the religion out of prayer, making it a personal relationship; and one that didn't require a lot of "vain repetitions". However, some of what is said in the prayer has already been fulfilled. It's these aspects which we will dig into.

There are two accounts of this prayer for the Disciples—one in Matthew, the other in [Luke 11:1-4](#). They match almost word-for-word. But for our lesson here, we will focus on the Matthew account—breaking down each section afterwards in the related verses and questions section.

II. READING: "The Disciple's Prayer" (commonly referred to as "The Lord's Prayer"):

[Matthew 6:7-13](#) (NMB)

And when you pray, do not use vain repetitions like the heathen do. For they think that they will be heard for their many words. 8 Be not like them therefore. For your Father knows what you need before you ask of him. 9 Pray therefore in this manner:

O our Father who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

For thine is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever.

Amen.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. "Our Father who art in heaven". This opening line is one of the most dramatic changes in how the Disciple's would pray. When Jesus referred to God as His Father, it infuriated the Pharisees because they had never related to God that way (nor felt they had any right to). Yet Jesus broke that religious misconception and forever imparted that understanding of God as a Father to His Disciples and us. He is not distant and uncaring, He is responsible, protecting, caring, and in us as believers. We should never see ourselves as not being born of God and equal to Him (as Jesus demonstrated for us).

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



[John 5:15-18](#) (NMB) [PoG]

The man [*who had been healed by Jesus*] departed and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him whole. 16 And therefore the Jews persecuted Jesus, and sought means to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day.

17 And Jesus told them, My Father works until now, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought all the more to kill him, not only because he had broken the Sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, and made himself equal with God.

[1 Corinthians 8:5-6](#) (NMB)

And though there be what are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth (as there be gods many and lords many), 6 yet to us there is but one God, who is the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

Question: Do you see God as a Father? Do you see and relate to Him like you see and relate to your own dad?

Response:

- B. "Hallowed be thy name". Tied in with the notion of God as a Father, is that God is only a Good God. One who does not cause chaos, calamity, sickness/disease, natural disasters, and the like. The term "hallowed" ([G37](#)) here is representative of this characteristic of God that the disciples may not have understood. For them, reading what we call the "Old Testament", they would see a confusing God who gets blamed for much of the hardships faced in earth's history. Yet, Jesus demonstrated how untrue that was. And that God only wants to bring us Life. To be "hallowed" is to be separate from "profane things" (that is to treat someone with abuse); as meaning God is not the one bringing bad things upon people. But instead purifies and cleanses. He is Holy and Sanctified, just as He makes us Holy and Sanctified. And because He does this (not leading us to destruction), we can trust Him.

[Hebrews 2:10-18](#) (NMB)

For it was fitting for him, for whom all things are and by whom all things are, in accordance with the way that he brought many sons to glory, to make the Lord of their salvation perfect through suffering. 11 For he who sanctifies and those who are sanctified are all of one, for which sake he is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12 saying: I will declare your name to my brethren, and in the midst of the congregation I will praise you. 13 And again: I will put my trust in him. And again: Behold, here am I and the children that God has given me.

14 Considering then that the children were partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part with them, in order to put down through death him that had lordship over death – that is to say, the devil – 15 and to deliver those who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. 16 For in no place does he take on him the angels, but he takes the seed of Abraham on him. 17 Therefore it was fitting for him to be made like his brethren in all things, so that he could be merciful, and a faithful high priest in things concerning God, in order to purge the people's sins. 18 For in that he himself suffered and was tried, he is able to succour those who are tried.

Question: Do you trust God enough to consider Him worthy of being called "hallowed"?

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



Response:

- C. "Thy kingdom come". It has come! And for us as believers, we have immediate access to this with the Holy Spirit. His Kingdom is not some distant thing to happen when Jesus comes again (of which we have to pray towards) but is something we can embrace now. Jesus spoke in His ministry about that Kingdom being in the midst of them, it is now gifted to us. It is in us. We can access it for our life when we need it. And if we are having difficulty seeing it in our lives, we can just ask the Lord to show what we have access to. For it has power in us!

[Luke 17:20-21](#) (NMB)

When he was asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God does not come with watching for it. 21 Neither may men say, See here, look there! For behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

[Romans 14:17](#) (NMB)

For the kingdom of God is not food and drink, but righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Spirit.

[1 Corinthians 4:20](#) (NMB)

For the kingdom of God is not in words, but in power.

Question: Are you waiting for the Kingdom of God; or do you know you have it?

Response:

- D. "Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven". The Lord works through us. So what we chose to limit on this earth, becomes a limit to what the Lord can do from Heaven. We are supposed to bring Heaven down to earth and do all He desires to be done—in the way He wants it done. Not forcing us out of anger or vengeance, but instructing out of Love and a true heart longing to provide us with the best life possible (an "Abundant Life").

[Matthew 18:18](#) (PoG)

I am truly telling you: that whatever *you choose* to bind [forbid] on earth, it will be also be bound in Heaven [forbidden *from coming to earth*]; and whatever *you choose* to loose on [set free into this] earth, it will be loosed [set free] in Heaven [*to be able to come to earth*].

[Ephesians 3:20](#) (NMB)

Now to him who is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think by the power that works in us.

[Philippians 2:13](#) (NMB)

For it is God who works in you both the will and also the deed, of his own good will.

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



Question: Do you feel you limit God in your life and towards those around you?

Response:

- E. "Give us this day our daily bread". This is both a physical and Spiritual need. Jesus is the Word of Life that is our Daily Bread (Spiritually). We are also told not to worry about life, because the Lord knows how to provide for us in the everyday. He is continuously providing for us, even if we aren't even asking directly for it. Think of all the stress we put upon ourselves for the things the Lord wants to freely provide for us.

[Matthew 6:31-33](#) (NMB)

Therefore do not be anxious, saying, What will we eat? or, What will we drink? or, How will we be clothed? 32 After all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. 33 But rather seek ye first the kingdom of heaven and its righteousness, and all these things will be ministered unto you.

[John 6:32-35](#) (NMB)

Jesus said to them, Truly truly I say to you, Moses did not give you bread from heaven, but my Father gives you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is he who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.

34 Then they said to him, Lord, give us this bread forevermore.

35 And Jesus said to them, I am that bread of life. He who comes to me shall not hunger, and he who believes on me shall never thirst.

Question: What are areas of your life that you can "let go and let God"?

Response:

- F. "And forgive us our trespasses". As we have looked at before, Christ took all our sins of the flesh at the Cross. The sin of not believing in Him is removed when we do choose to believe in Jesus Christ. We don't need to ask for his forgiveness to cleanse away our sins; but we can ask to help clear any guilt we may have in our hearts.

[Hebrews 10:10](#) (NMB)

In accordance with this God's will, we are sanctified by the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once and for all.

[James 5:13-16](#) (NMB) [PoG]

If any of you be vexed with sorrows, let him pray. If any of you be merry, let him sing psalms. 14 If any be diseased among you, let him call for the elders of the congregation, and let them pray over him, and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord will raise him up; and if he has committed sins, [they are] forgiven him.

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



16 Confess your faults to one another. And pray for one another, that you may be healed: The fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

Question: Does something change in you when you confess the mistakes you make to others (or the Lord)?

Response:

- G. “as we forgive them that trespass against us”. The “as” ([G2532](#)) translates to “indeed”. That since the Lord has forgiven us, we indeed forgive others. This may be hard to do, but the Lord also helps provide the means necessary for us to be able to forgive others. When we hold onto unforgiveness, our hearts can become hardened and bitter—we don’t let God deal with our own pain by taking responsibility for us and the other person. The Lord has forgiven both their sins committed against you, and your sins committed against others. And when we forgive, we can gain a peace in our hearts and minds. Note: this does not mean God won’t forgive us if we chose not to forgive others—He cannot unforgive a sin that has already been forgiven at the Cross.

[Colossians 3:12-15](#) (NMB)

Now therefore, as chosen by God, holy and beloved, put on tender mercy, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, and longsuffering, 13 forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if anyone has a quarrel against another. Just as Christ forgave you, so also should you do.

14 Above all these things, put on love, which is the bond of perfectness. 15 And may the peace of God rule in your hearts, to which peace you are called in one body. And see that you be thankful.

Question: Do you hold unforgiveness against someone else—even if they have already died?

Response:

- H. “And lead us not into temptation”. They believed God was the one who would create the temptations. Whether in our own personal lives, or when reading the “Old Testament”, it can almost seem like God leads people into hardship and trouble to “try” them. But as the Lord said, it was Israel that “tried” Him ([Hebrews 3:7-11](#)). Even when we encounter persecution in our walk with the Lord, know it is not the Lord that brought the persecution—but that others persecute you for following the Lord.

[James 1:13-17](#) (NMB)

Let no one say when he is tempted, that he is tempted by God. For God tempts not to evil, nor does he tempt anyone, 14 but every person is tempted, drawn away, and enticed by his own fleshly nature and evil desire. 15 Then when desire has conceived, she brings forth sin, and sin when it is full-grown brings forth death.

16 Do not be mistaken, my dear brethren. 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of light, with whom is no variableness nor turning to darkness.

Question: Do you sometimes distance yourself from God in persecution/hardship because you blame Him for it?

Response:

- I. “but deliver us from evil”. In a continuation of the pervious section of verse, we can think God is the one trying us to then fail at the trial and sin. In essence, thinking that He is delivering us INTO sin. This change is that He is leading us out and away from sin. We can see that He will always provide a way out when temptation comes our way. We too have authority over Satan and the devil. And even moreso, God has made available a deliverance from evil that is both Satan [“evil one”] and the evil spoken of as not believing on Jesus Christ for Salvation—for when we do believe in Jesus Christ to Salvation, we are no longer deemed evil.

[John 17:13-19](#) (NMB)

Now I come to you. And I speak these words in the world so that they may have my joy full in them. 14 I have given them your words. And the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. 15 I ask not that you take them out of the world, but that you keep them from evil. 16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctify them with your truth. Your word is truth. 18 As you sent me into the world, so have I sent them into the world. 19 And for their sakes I sanctify myself, so that they also may be sanctified through the truth.

[1 Corinthians 10:13](#) (NMB)

No trial has taken you but such as follows the nature of man. But God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tried above your strength, but will in the midst of the trial make a way to escape out.

[Galatians 1:3-4](#) (NMB)

Grace be with you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, 4 who gave himself for our sins to deliver us from this present evil world according to the will of God our Father.

Question: How can we recognise we are facing evil—and then use our authority or seek the Lord for help?

Response:

- J. “For thine is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.” This places God above all else. He is “the Kingdom”, “the Power”, “the Glory”, and “the Forever”. Through Jesus and all Creation, He has demonstrated that His authority is the greatest of all. That there is none higher than Him. He bows to no one. His rule is far greater than Satan’s, having stripped him of any power or authority. And we must not confuse God’s Kingdom with Satan’s kingdom—nor can they intermix. And all this power and authority lives in us!

[Colossians 1:9-17](#) (NMB)

For this reason we also, since the day we heard of it, have not ceased praying for you, and asking that you be fulfilled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding, 10 so that you may walk worthy of the Lord in all things that please him, being fruitful in all good works and increasing in the knowledge of God,

THE LORD'S PRAYER

Bible Study: Lesson 025



11 strengthened with all might through his glorious power to have all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness, 12 and giving thanks to the Father, who has made us fit to be partakers of the inheritance of saints in light. 13 He has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son, 14 in whom we have redemption through his blood; that is to say, the forgiveness of sins.

15 He is the image of the invisible God, and the first begotten of all creatures. 16 For by him were all things created: things that are in heaven and things that are in earth, things visible and things invisible, whether they be majesty, or lordship, or rule, or power. All things are created by him and in him, 17 and he is before all things, and in him all things have their being.

Question: How can we use all that the Lord has given us, being that He is alive and living inside of us?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. From that time the Disciples asked Jesus how they should pray, they learned of their Identity in Christ. Their prayer life went from one of questioning, to one of utmost BOLDNESS. This is how the Disciples prayed after they understood what they had been given from Christ Jesus: a powerful, confident prayer of authority!

[Acts 4:23-30](#) (NMB)

As soon as they were let go, they went to their companions and told them all that the high priests and elders had said to them. 24 And when they heard that, they lifted up their voices to God with one accord and said, Lord, you are God who has made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that is in them, 25 who by the mouth of your servant David has said: Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? 26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers came together against the Lord and against his Christ. 27 For of a truth, against your holy child Jesus, whom you have anointed, both Herod and also Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, gathered themselves together, 28 to do whatever your hand and your counsel determined before to be done. 29 And now, Lord, look upon their threatenings, and grant to your servants to speak your word with all confidence, 30 and stretch forth your hand so that healing and signs and wonders may be done by the name of the holy child Jesus.

31 And as soon as they had prayed, the place moved where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke the word of God boldly.

Thoughts: For me, this "Lord's Prayer" was asking something from God that I never really felt I could obtain. My belief was that I could ask, but that I was never good enough to actually receive it from Him—how could He give me what I ask for if I have never met His high expectations of me. I was always beggarly towards Him.

I did not realize until late in my life, that what I was trying to pray for had already been given me. The defeated Christian I was, I didn't have to live anymore. I could accept that He infused into me His Spirit and His entire Kingdom for me to have free access to. Not because I could meet my expectations of what I thought He wanted from me, but because He wanted to give it all to me, outside of my own self-judgement and debilitating critiques of self-righteous expectation. He gives to me because I deserve it for just being His child! You do too!

As a Christian, we should pray with an assurance of what we already have: [Ephesians](#). Yet, no matter how you feel and how much "faith" or "belief" you think you have or don't have, you can come to Him AS YOU ARE—for He does not judge you nor condemn you—He only will lift you up and out of where you are.

BAPTISMS

INTENTION:

Continually immerse yourself in who He correctly is; and in His Righteousness.

We need not worry about ritualistic washing, but to know that we can have a “clear conscience” before the Lord.

BAPTISMS

Bible Study: Lesson 026

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Baptisms.

I use the plural word here because we want to look at more than just water baptism, but other types as well.

Often, for people believing in Christ, the church leads them to be water baptized. Yet, there is more than one type of baptism discussed in the New Testament. There are three related Greek words assigned to the word Baptize.

- [G907: baptizō](#) – to dip repeatedly, to immerse, to submerge (of vessels sunk).
- [G908: baptisma](#) – immersion, submersion.
- [G909: baptisimos](#) – a washing, purification effected by means of water.

You can read the full definitions online, but in general, [G907](#) and [G908](#) represent the nature of the baptism being one of “immersion, submersion, and repeated dipping”. This plays a role in not only how we see water baptism, but also the baptism of the Holy Spirit and Fire (by Jesus), and baptism into the body of Jesus Christ (by the Holy Spirit).

We are immediately baptised by the Holy Spirit into the Body of Christ when we choose to believe in Christ Jesus. After that, we can proceed by choice for the other baptisms (in no particular order). And sometimes more than one baptism can happen (manifest) at the same time.

Firstly, we will read following in Mark about the requirement of salvation being that a person “believes and is baptized”. This baptism though is not about a water baptism, but of a person being baptised into the Body of Christ.

II. READING: [Mark 16:1-18](#) (GWT)

When the day of rest—a holy day, was over, Mary from Magdala, Mary (the mother of James), and Salome bought spices to go and anoint Jesus.

2 On Sunday they were going to the tomb very early when the sun had just come up. 3 They said to one another, “Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance to the tomb?” 4 When they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away. It was a very large stone. 5 As they went into the tomb, they saw a young man. He was dressed in a white robe and sat on the right side. They were panic-stricken.

6 The young man said to them, “Don’t panic! You’re looking for Jesus from Nazareth, who was crucified. He has been brought back to life. He’s not here. Look at the place where they laid him. 7 Go and tell his disciples and Peter that he’s going ahead of them to Galilee. There they will see him, just as he told them.”

8 They went out of the tomb and ran away. Shock and trembling had overwhelmed them. They didn’t say a thing to anyone, because they were afraid.

9 After Jesus came back to life early on Sunday, he appeared first to Mary from Magdala, from whom he had forced out seven demons. 10 She went and told his friends, who were grieving and crying. 11 They didn’t believe her when they heard that he was alive and that she had seen him.

12 Later Jesus appeared to two disciples as they were walking to their home in the country. He did not look as he usually did. 13 They went back and told the others, who did not believe them either. 14 Still later Jesus appeared to the eleven apostles while they were eating. He put them to shame for their unbelief and because they were too stubborn to believe those who had seen him alive.

15 Then Jesus said to them, “So wherever you go in the world, tell everyone the Good News. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized ([G907](#)) will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.

17 “These are the miraculous signs that will accompany believers: They will use the power and authority of my name to force demons out of people. They will speak new languages. 18 They will pick up snakes, and if they drink any deadly poison, it will not hurt them. They will place their hands on the sick and cure them.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. John’s Baptism. This was a water-baptism of repentance (that is a change of mindset). Its purpose was to help change the mindset of people to help open up their hearts into accepting Christ Jesus. In a way, allowing them to let go of their sin-hindrane (or religious-hindrane) of the heart that would pose an obstacle to believing in Jesus Christ. To rethink how they viewed sin and its perceived impact on a relationship with God—for we were only “enemies in our mind” ([Colossians 1:21](#)) *thinking* that sin impacts our relationship with God. Jesus even demonstrated to the people how sin was a non-issue; often freeing their hearts/minds up to experience healing.

[Mark 1:4-5](#) (GWT)

John the Baptizer was in the desert telling people about a baptism ([G908](#)) of repentance for the forgiveness of sins. 5 All Judea and all the people of Jerusalem went to him. As they confessed their sins, he baptized ([G907](#)) them in the Jordan River.

[Acts 19:1-7](#) (GWT)

While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul travelled through the interior provinces to get to the city of Ephesus. He met some disciples in Ephesus 2 and asked them, “Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?”

They answered him, “No, we’ve never even heard of the Holy Spirit.”

3 Paul asked them, “What kind of baptism ([G907](#)) did you have?” They answered, “John’s baptism ([G908](#)).”

4 Paul said, “John’s baptism ([G907](#)) was a baptism ([G908](#)) of repentance. John told people to believe in Jesus, who was coming later.”

5 After they heard this, they were baptized ([G907](#)) in the name of the Lord Jesus. 6 When Paul placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came to them, and they began to talk in other languages and to speak what God had revealed. 7 About twelve men were in the group.

Question: Does a change of mindset help us come to Christ (whether a believer or non-believer)?

Response:

B. Jesus’s Baptism. Have you ever asked yourself why Jesus was Baptised? Jesus went to John the Baptist who was doing a water baptism of repentance. So, what did Jesus repent of if He didn’t have any sin?

We can look at this process being an internal and external demonstration of His commitment to fulfilling the Will of the Father. Jesus had the same choice we have—to accept the Father and His Will, or to follow our own flesh.

Christ's baptism of repentance was not of turning from "sin" (which He had none of) but turning from a life of His own (self) to live the life that He was called by God the Father to do. And He did it by His own Faith (not yet filled with the Holy Spirit). It was not something He saw or committed to by seeing in the flesh, but through the “Old Testament” Scripture as His witness to do so. For Jesus found Himself to be Christ through the Scripture.

Jesus studied the same scripture we have to find His Identity in the Father—and confirmation that He was the Christ. He found Himself as being human... “in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross” ([Philippians 2:8](#))—“for even Christ pleased not himself” ([Romans 15:3](#)). And it took Jesus his whole life leading up to that point to prepare Himself for what was to come—but that choice was fully His to make. His flesh resisting God’s Will in the garden ([Luke 22:42-44](#)).

BAPTISMS

Bible Study: Lesson 026



His baptism by John cemented this obedience in Jesus, giving up His own body's want to do as its flesh desired (survival, and not taking the sins of the world upon Himself). This moment also established the start of His ministry with the demonstration of the Holy Spirit that was poured upon Him (as a dove)—His water baptism coming with it the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. Both of which were demonstrations of what we ourselves receive when Jesus baptises us in this same Holy Spirit. We get the same in-filling as He does!

[John 1:14;29-34](#) (GWT)

The Word became human and lived among us. We saw his glory. It was the glory that the Father shares with his only Son, a glory full of kindness and truth.

29 John saw Jesus coming toward him the next day and said, "Look! This is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world. 30 He is the one I spoke about when I said, 'A man who comes after me was before me because he existed before I did.' 31 I didn't know who he was. However, I came to baptize (G907) with water to show him to the people of Israel."

32 John said, "I saw the Spirit come down as a dove from heaven and stay on him. 33 I didn't know who he was. But God, who sent me to baptize (G907) with water, had told me, 'When you see the Spirit come down and stay on someone, you'll know that person is the one who baptizes (G907) with the Holy Spirit.' 34 I have seen this and have declared that this is the Son of God."

Question: Do you see the human side of Jesus?

Response:

- C. Holy Spirit Baptises us into Jesus Christ when we believe. In the Mark 16:15 baptism we read about above, what transpires is that when a person believes in Christ Jesus, they are immediately taken by the Holy Spirit and Baptised into Christ Jesus. Born Again by being in and of Christ Jesus, no longer as from Adam or our ancestors. This is the first and foremost baptism to take place for a believer as a believer—the "one baptism" that truly matters for salvation. You need not participate in any other baptism to be saved; just like the thief on the cross wasn't water baptised, yet was saved ([Luke 23:39-43](#)). When we see in Acts how 3,000 people came to believe and were baptised, it wasn't that they all went down to the river to be water baptised, it was that they were instantly baptised into the Body of Christ by the Holy Spirit.

[Acts 2:38-40](#) (GWT)

Peter answered them, "All of you must turn to God and change the way you think and act, and each of you must be baptized (G907) in the name of Jesus Christ so that your sins will be forgiven. Then you will receive the Holy Spirit as a gift. 39 This promise belongs to you and to your children and to everyone who is far away. It belongs to everyone who worships the Lord our God."

40 Peter said much more to warn them. He urged, "Save yourselves from this corrupt generation." 41 Those who accepted what Peter said were baptized (G907). That day about 3,000 people were added to the group.

[1 Corinthians 12:13](#) (GWT) [PoG]

By one Spirit [the Holy Spirit] we were all baptized (G907) into one body [the Body of Christ]. Whether we are Jewish or Greek, slave or free, God gave all of us one Spirit to drink.

[Ephesians 4:1-6](#) (GWT)

1, a prisoner in the Lord, encourage you to live the kind of life which proves that God has called you. 2 Be humble and gentle in every way. Be patient with each other and lovingly accept each other. 3 Through the peace that ties you together, do your best to maintain the unity that the Spirit gives. 4 There is one body and one Spirit. In the same way you were called to share one hope. 5 There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism (G908), 6 one God and Father of all, who is over everything, through everything, and in everything.

Question: As a believer, you are baptised (into Christ Jesus)! Do you fear that because you maybe haven't been water baptised (after believing in Jesus) that you aren't completely saved?

Response:

- D. Jesus baptises us with the Holy Spirit. The reason Jesus never baptised anyone in His ministry on earth was that if He had, the Holy Spirit would have come upon them. He instead had to wait until after the Cross. And we can see the impact that being baptised with the Holy Spirit (filled with the Holy Spirit) has on a believer. We gain a power only the Lord can provide. You can genuinely ask the Lord for this without hesitation or doubt.

This is something I have seen happen in my own life when I asked and received the Baptism of the Holy Spirit on 28 May 2014. From then, so much changed—from the way I saw scripture, to speaking in Tongues, to seeing Gifts of the Holy Spirit flow, to no longer being a defeated Christian. Experiencing this has so impacted my life and my desire for everyone else to experience it too! *We will expand on this more in the next Bible Lesson.*

[Matthew 3:11](#) (GWT)

I baptize (G907) you with water so that you will change the way you think and act. But the one who comes after me is more powerful than I. I am not worthy to remove his sandals. He will baptize (G907) you with the Holy Spirit and fire.

[Acts 1:4-8](#) (GWT)

Once, while he was meeting with them, he ordered them not to leave Jerusalem but to wait there for what the Father had promised. Jesus said to them, "I've told you what the Father promises: 5 John baptized (G907) with water, but in a few days you will be baptized (G907) with the Holy Spirit."

6 So when the apostles came together, they asked him, "Lord, is this the time when you're going to restore the kingdom to Israel?"

7 Jesus told them, "You don't need to know about times or periods that the Father has determined by his own authority. 8 But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes to you. Then you will be my witnesses to testify about me in Jerusalem, throughout Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

[Acts 2:1-4](#) (GWT)

When Pentecost, the fiftieth day after Passover, came, all the believers were together in one place. 2 Suddenly, a sound like a violently blowing wind came from the sky and filled the whole house where they were staying. 3 Tongues that looked like fire appeared to them. The tongues arranged themselves so that one came to rest on each believer. 4 All the believers were filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other languages as the Spirit gave them the ability to speak.

[Acts 9:17-19a](#) (GWT)

Ananias left and entered Judas’ house. After he placed his hands on Saul, Ananias said, “Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to you on your way to Damascus, sent me to you. He wants you to see again and to be filled with the Holy Spirit.”

18 Immediately, something like fish scales fell from Saul’s eyes, and he could see again. Then Saul stood up and was baptized ([G907](#)). 19 After he had something to eat, his strength came back to him.

Question: Would you like to receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit, with the experiences of Tongues?

Response:

- E. Jesus baptises us with fire. Fire represents a means of destruction that has permanence—just as the end of this current world will be destroyed by fire ([2 Peter 3:7](#)). It is this Fire that destroys the iniquities in our bodies. All that which is not of His Kingdom in our bodies is burnt up as a living sacrifice. Being made clean also by the washing of regeneration that is His Word, being Jesus Christ Himself ([John 15:3](#) and [Titus 3:5](#)).

Christ is our foundation, and when we build on that foundation our own works, doctrines, fleshly ways, or the Law (all that is “wood, hay, and stubble”), we defile that foundation. In turn, we thus defile ourselves as His Temple. But Christ will always keep us continually clean, burning up with fire all our iniquities; never destroying His Temple which is us, but keeping it Holy and clean! And because of this, we can look forward to living a life now without fear and with the expectation of being cleansed continually.

[Luke 3:16](#) (GWT)

John replied to all of them, “I baptize ([G907](#)) you with water. But the one who is more powerful than I is coming. I am not worthy to untie his sandal straps. He will baptize ([G907](#)) you with the Holy Spirit and fire.”

[1 Corinthians 3:12-17](#) (GWT) [PoG]

People may build on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or straw. 13 The day will make what each one does clearly visible because fire will reveal it. That fire will determine what kind of work each person has done. 14 If what a person has built survives, he will receive a reward. 15 If his work is burned up, he will suffer the loss. However, he will be saved, though it will be like going through a fire.

16 Don’t you know that you are God’s temple and that God’s Spirit lives in you? 17 If anyone destroys God’s temple, God will destroy [this *defilement*] because God’s temple is holy. You are that holy temple!

Question: Do you sometimes feel the fire (conflict/anxiety) burning inside you when you pile on things in your life that aren’t of the Lord?

Response:

BAPTISMS

Bible Study: Lesson 026



F. Water baptism by another believer. This water baptism represents, not the removal of filth or sin, but a demand by God for you to have a good-conscience towards Him—a conscience not focused on what you do wrong (sin), but of what Christ did right (your perpetual righteousness from Christ Jesus). We are freed from sin. In essence, we must stop focusing on our sins (and “confessing” them) and start proclaiming our right-standing with God!

There is no need for us to confess sins for forgiveness, all those sins of the flesh were delt with at the Cross. Thus, when we are water baptised, it is not about confessing sins, but accepting that we have been Born-Again as new—our old self dead and gone. We can now live as having been sacrificed once and for all ([Romans 12:1](#)).

[Acts 8:35-39](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Then Philip spoke [to the Eunuch]. Starting with that passage, Philip told the official the Good News about Jesus. 36 As they were going along the road, they came to some water. The official [Eunuch] said to Philip, “Look, there’s some water. What can keep me from being baptized (G907)?” [37 Then Philip said, “If you believe with all your heart, you may.” And he answered and said, “I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.”] 38 The official [Eunuch] ordered the carriage to stop. He and Philip stepped into the water, and Philip baptized (G907) him. 39 When they had stepped out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away. The official [Eunuch] joyfully continued on his way and didn’t see Philip again.

[Romans 6:3-7](#) (GWT)

Don’t you know that all of us who were baptized (G907) into Christ Jesus were baptized (G907) into his death? 4 When we were baptized (G908) into his death, we were placed into the tomb with him. As Christ was brought back from death to life by the glorious power of the Father, so we, too, should live a new kind of life. 5 If we’ve become united with him in a death like his, certainly we will also be united with him when we come back to life as he did. 6 We know that the person we used to be was crucified with him to put an end to sin in our bodies. Because of this we are no longer slaves to sin. 7 The person who has died has been freed from sin.

[1 Peter 3:18-21](#) (GWT) [PoG]

This is true because Christ suffered for our sins once. He was an innocent person, but he suffered for guilty people so that he could bring you to God. His body was put to death, but he was brought to life through his spirit. 19 In it he also went to proclaim his victory to the spirits kept in prison. 20 They are like those who disobeyed long ago in the days of Noah when God waited patiently while Noah built the ship. In this ship a few people—eight in all—were saved by water. 21 Baptism (G908), which is like that water, now saves you. Baptism doesn’t save by removing dirt from the body. Rather, baptism is a [demand for a good conscience toward God] through Jesus Christ, who came back from death to life.

Question: If you have been water baptised, what did it mean to you at the time?

Response:

G. Ritual baptising (washing) – [G909](#). Though this form of cleanliness of washing has its own merits, it is not a requirement of the Law which imposed it. Dirty hands, dishes, or things does not make a person unclean. Jesus stated it is not what goes into a person that makes them unclean, but what comes out ([Mark 7:15](#)). And what Christ did gives us a clear conscience—something ritual gifts, sacrifices, and ceremonial washing could never do.

[Hebrews 9:6-12](#) (GWT) [PoG]

That is how these two parts of the tent were set up. The priests always went into the first part of the tent to perform their duties. 7 But only the chief priest went into the second part of the tent. Once a year he entered and brought blood that he offered for himself and for the things that the people did wrong unintentionally. 8 The Holy Spirit used this to show that the way into the most holy place was not open while the tent was still in use.

9 The first part of the tent is an example for the present time. The gifts and sacrifices that were brought there could not give the worshiper a clear conscience. 10 These gifts and sacrifices were meant to be food, drink, and items used in various purification [washing ([G909](#))] ceremonies. These ceremonies were required for the body until God would establish a new way of doing things.

11 But Christ came as a chief priest of the good things that are now here. Christ went through a better, more perfect tent that was not made by human hands and that is not part of this created world. 12 He used his own blood, not the blood of goats and bulls, for the sacrifice. He went into the most holy place and offered this sacrifice once and for all to free us forever.

Question: Do you have a clear conscience towards God?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Matthew 28:18-20](#) (GWT)

When Jesus came near, he spoke to them. He said, “All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. 19 So wherever you go, make disciples of all nations: Baptize ([G907](#)) them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit. 20 Teach them to do everything I have commanded you.

“And remember that I am always with you until the end of time.”

Thoughts: To be Baptised in the Name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit is not saying that when we water baptise a person that we must repeat this phrase “in the Name of the Father, and of Son, and of the Holy Spirit”. This use of the term baptise is in reference to a person being constantly immersed in the correct understanding of who the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are. A continuous (repeated dipping) teaching of the who the Lord is in a correct way.

“Grace and peace be multiplied to you in the correct knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord” ([2 Peter 1:2](#)).

This multiplication of Grace and Peace is indicative of a person experiencing a correct knowledge of who the Lord is. If what you hear brings guilt, condemnation, rules, disappointment, or the like, then what you have heard is not of the Lord.

Being baptised in water doesn't make disciples. However, this immersing (baptising) of a person repeatedly in this correct knowledge is the key to discipleship, “teaching them to do everything I have commanded you”. All of which includes Love, signs, and wonders, and more—everything Jesus did, we do!

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

INTENTION:

This is the greatest thing in my life and walk with the Lord: to be Baptised and Filled in the Holy Spirit.

No longer was I a cowardly Christian pushed around by just any doctrine—He showed me Himself and with that came the Dynamite Power and Authority He desires so much for us to have and continually walk in.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at being Filled with the Holy Spirit (also referred to as the Baptism of the Holy Spirit).

This is something that truly transformed my life—but didn't know and experience this until late in my Christian life.

After being Born-Again at the age of 16 and being water baptised, I thought that was it—and from then, lived my life trying to be the best religious Christian I could be. And then, of course, failing miserably at that religion.

At around the age of 30, I met a group of young people who were showing a form of fellowship and Godly Love that I had not seen in any church I had been to. And one of these people ministered to me about this "Baptism of the Holy Spirit" that I was not quite familiar with—but because my heart was still hardened to trusting the Lord, I used my best Bible-studied religion to reject it and call out that person as misinterpreting scripture and the Holy Spirit.

It was not him misinterpreting scripture and the Holy Spirit, it was me. I wasn't ready, but seeds were watered.

Of interest was that, when I was 18 years old (a couple years after being Born-Again), I had a chance to personally experience someone speaking in tongues. I was still "new and fresh" in being born-Again and didn't think twice about it happening. My religion hadn't gotten in the way yet. Some early seeds.

But those seeds came to life in me around 38 years old when I started to hear and soften my heart to an un-religious Christianity. My belief changed over the course of a few years of hearing this message; the testimonies of dozens of people sharing their personal experiences in the Holy Spirit, Tongues, healings, gifts, and miracles; and personally, witnessing this infilling of the Holy Spirit with speaking in Tongues. And on the 28th of May 2014, I asked the Lord for this thing called the "Baptism of the Holy Spirit" with the ability (utmost want) to speak in Tongues.

That evening, by myself, in my flat, I put on some sermons on the topic, broke through my flesh's resistance (and the devil's dissuasion), and openly asked the Lord for it. In an instance, I felt inside of me something like a balloon filling, swelling into every part of my being—as though my body would pop (burst) from this inner pressure. I literally didn't burst, but what "popped" out was an outpouring of Tongues. So many different variations. Dialogs that were legitimate, but other-worldly. Languages that sounded foreign, but of this world. Fast, slow; stern, soft; gentle, strong (with a righteous indignation).

My flesh did not know what to think. It wanted to reject this as not being "real" languages or dialog. The devil wanted to convince me that it was of him, not of God. But I kept on!

As I lay on the floor face-down (having started the process walking around), I could physically sense Jesus Himself next to me—"seeing" Him standing there with sandals on and the hem of His white robe. So real was it, that I reached my arm out expecting to touch his feet and ankle with my hand. He confirmed for me that it truly was Him that "Baptises with the Holy Ghost and Fire" ([Luke 3:16](#)).

My experience (which will be different for all people) was an experience that ministered directly to who I was at the time, to confirm in my heart and mind that what had transpired was real and was of the Lord. That what I had felt and now possessed was God's Holy Spirit that filled me up to the point of "exploding" out in Tongues.

From that time, I pray, speak, think, and sing in Tongues—anywhere and everywhere. For myself, for others, for my personal relationship with the Lord and His Angels.

And from that moment, my Christian reality changed—confidence grew, scripture rewrote itself out of a religious book into Christ-words as my "eyes" were opened. There was a power in me that flowed out of me, that wasn't a "me" I had ever known. My Born-Again Holy Spirit was now infused and infilled with God's own Holy Spirit. My vessel was used to be filled up with Him, and as this water was scooped out, it became His wine ([John 2:1-11](#))!

As we look at the scriptures about being "Filled with the Holy Spirit", we will see the simplicity that is involved in receiving it. But first, we will see how important it is as we look at the impact it had on the Disciples (looking at them before receiving Him—with and without Jesus—and after receiving Him).

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



During Jesus's ministry with the "12" and "70", He gave them His authority over sickness/disease and demons. They could perform the same miracles as Jesus did. They did this without the infilling of the Holy Spirit.

But when Jesus "left" them by dying on the Cross and getting buried, they went from celebrating their authority, to fearfully retreating into hiding.

Yet, that all changed when the Holy Spirit came. Jesus "breathed the Holy Spirit" on the 11 disciples ([John 20:21-22](#)) and told them to wait for the Holy Spirit to come to everyone before going out. Having been given the Holy Spirit by Jesus, the now power-filled 11 Disciples boldly and bravely addressed the crowd gathered when the Holy Spirit came at Pentecost. The same power was given to the other disciples gathered, and what we too can gain when "filled up".

II. **READING:** The changes in the Disciples (with Jesus, without Jesus, and with the Holy Spirit):

[Luke 9:1-6; 10:1-2,17-19](#) (VOICE)

1 Jesus convened a gathering of the twelve. He gave them power and authority to free people from all demonic spirits and to heal them of diseases. 2 He sent them out to preach the kingdom of God and to heal the sick. 3-5 These were His instructions:

- a. Travel light on your journey: don't take a staff, backpack, bread, money, or even an extra change of clothes.
- b. When you enter a house, stay there until you leave that city.
- c. If a town rejects you, shake the dust from your feet as you leave as a witness against them.

6 The disciples left on their journeys from village to village. They preached the good news, and they healed the sick everywhere they went.

1 The Lord then recruited and deployed 70 more disciples. He sent them ahead, in teams of two, to visit all the towns and settlements between them and Jerusalem. 2 This is what He ordered.

Jesus: There's a great harvest waiting in the fields, but there aren't many good workers to harvest it. Pray that the Harvest Master will send out good workers to the fields.

17 When the 70 completed their mission and returned to report on their experiences, they were elated.

Seventy: It's amazing, Lord! When we use Your name, the demons do what we say!

Jesus: 18 I know. I saw Satan falling from above like a lightning bolt. 19 I've given you true authority. You can smash vipers and scorpions under your feet. You can walk all over the power of the enemy. You can't be harmed.

[Mark 16:9-14](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

9 After He rose from the dead early on Sunday, Jesus appeared first to Mary Magdalene, a woman out of whom He had cast seven demons. 10 She brought this news back to all those who had followed Him and were still mourning and weeping, 11 but they refused to believe she had seen Jesus alive.

12 After that, Jesus appeared in a different form to two of them as they walked through the countryside, 13 and again the others did not believe it.

14 The eleven did not believe until Jesus appeared to them all as they sat at dinner. He rebuked them for their hard hearts—for their [unbelief]—because they had failed to believe those witnesses who had seen Him after He had risen.

[Acts 2:1-4;37-41](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

When the holy day of Pentecost came 50 days after Passover, they were gathered together in one place.

2 Picture yourself among the disciples: A sound roars from the sky without warning, the roar of a violent wind, and the whole house where you are gathered reverberates with the sound. 3 Then a flame appears, dividing into smaller

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



flames and spreading from one person to the next. 4 All the people present are filled with the Holy Spirit and begin speaking in languages they've never spoken, as the Spirit empowers them.

37 When the people heard this, their hearts were pierced; and they said to Peter and his fellow apostles,

Pilgrims: Our brothers, what should we do?

Peter: 38 Reconsider your lives; change your direction. [Be baptised] in the name of Jesus God's Anointed, the Liberating King. Then your sins will be forgiven, and the gift of the Holy Spirit will be yours. 39 For the promise of the Spirit is for you, for your children, for all people—even those considered outsiders and outcasts—the Lord our God invites everyone to come to Him.

40 Peter was pleading and offering many logical reasons to believe. 41 Whoever made a place for his message in their hearts received the baptism; in fact, that day alone, about 3,000 people joined the disciples.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Here are the many demonstrations in Acts of believers receiving and/or being "filled" with the Holy Spirit. Often, it was a natural process to believing. Other times it was a separate occurrence from first believing in Jesus Christ. In this way, we can experience it for ourselves and others in the same way—upon a person believing in Jesus Christ (being Born-Again), or as a separate experience anytime after a person believes in Jesus Christ (is Born-again). So, this Baptism of the Holy Spirit (infilling of the Holy Spirit) can be simultaneous or separate from Water Baptism and/or Baptism into Jesus Christ (believing in Him). Can be done by hearing or laying on of hands by believers. Many times, the confirmation of this infilling was people speaking in Tongues.

[Acts 2:4](#) (VOICE)

All the people present are filled with the Holy Spirit and begin speaking in languages they've never spoken, as the Spirit empowers them.

[Acts 4:8-10](#) (VOICE)

Peter (filled with the Spirit): 8 Rulers and elders of the people, 9 yesterday a good deed was done. Someone who was sick was healed. If you're asking us how this happened, 10 I want all of you and all of the people of Israel to know this man standing in front of you—obviously in good health—was healed by the authority of Jesus of Nazareth, the Anointed One. This is the same Jesus whom you crucified and whom God raised from the dead.

[Acts 8:14-17](#) (VOICE)

Meanwhile word had reached the Lord's emissaries in Jerusalem that the message of God was welcomed in Samaria—a land of half-breeds and heretics in the minds of many Judeans. They sent Peter and John 15 to pray for the Samaritans. They were especially eager to see if the new believers would receive the Holy Spirit 16 because until this point they had been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus but had not experienced the Holy Spirit. 17 When Peter and John laid hands on the people, the Holy Spirit did indeed come upon them all.

[Acts 9:17-19](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

So Ananias went and entered the house where Saul was staying. He laid his hands on Saul and called to him.

Ananias: Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here, sent me so you can regain your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit.

18 At that instant, something like scales fell from Saul's eyes, and he could see. So he got up, [was baptised], 19 ate some food (remember, he had not eaten for three days), and regained his strength. He spent a lot of time with the disciples in Damascus over the next several days.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



[Acts 10:44-48a](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Peter wasn't planning to stop at this point, but the Holy Spirit suddenly interrupted and came upon all the people who were listening. 45-46 They began speaking in foreign languages (just as the Jewish disciples did on the Day of Pentecost), and their hearts overflowed in joyful praises to God. Peter's friends from Joppa—all of them Jewish, all circumcised—were stunned to see that the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out even on outsiders.

Peter: 47 Can anyone give any good reason not to [baptise them]? After all, it's obvious they have received the Holy Spirit just as we did on the Day of Pentecost.

48 So he had them baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

[Acts 13:9](#) (VOICE)

Saul, who is also known as Paul, was suddenly full of the Holy Spirit. He stared directly into Elymas's face.

[Acts 13:52](#) (VOICE)

The disciples weren't intimidated at all; rather, they were full of joy and the Holy Spirit.

[Acts 19:1-6](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

1 While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul's overland journey brought him back to Ephesus. He encountered a group of about a dozen disciples there.

Paul: 2 Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?

John's Disciples: We've never heard about the Holy Spirit.

Paul: 3 Well then, what kind of [baptism] did you receive?

John's Disciples: We received the [baptism] that John taught.

Paul: 4 John taught the truth—that people should be baptized with renewed thinking and turn toward God. But he also taught that the people should believe in the One whose way he was preparing, that is, Jesus the Anointed.

5 As soon as they heard this, they were baptized, this time in the name of our Lord Jesus. 6 When Paul laid his hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them in the same way the original disciples experienced at Pentecost: they spoke in tongues and prophesied.

Question: If you have not received the Baptism of the Holy Spirit or aren't sure if you have been "Filled with the Holy Spirit", would you like to—even speaking in Tongues?

Response:

- B. "Re-Filled". Here we read about already-filled Disciples being filled again. We don't assume they somehow lost their in-filling, but we can see there is nothing wrong with being "filled" again (or as many times as you need).

[Acts 4:29-31](#) (VOICE)

And now, Lord, take note of their intimidations intended to silence us. Grant us, Your servants, the courageous confidence we need to go ahead and proclaim Your message 30 while You reach out Your hand to heal people, enabling us to perform signs and wonders through the name of Your holy servant Jesus.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



31 They finished their prayer, and immediately the whole place where they had gathered began to shake. All the disciples were filled with the Holy Spirit, and they began speaking God’s message with courageous confidence.

Question: Anyone want a “Re-Filling” of the Holy Spirit?

Response:

- C. For a believer, we don’t need to be filled with the Holy Spirit for our walk with the Lord, but why would we not want it. If there was no benefit to it, the Lord would not have offered it—even Jesus needed the infilling of the Holy Spirit before He could begin His ministry. For the disciples, they first had Jesus to rely on for support and the Holy Spirit was “with them”; but Jesus left them and replaced Himself with an even “better” personal support for us: the Holy Spirit “in them”.

[John 14:16-18](#) (VOICE)

I will ask the Father to send you another Helper, the Spirit of truth, who will remain constantly with you. 17 The world does not recognize the Spirit of truth, because it does not know the Spirit and is unable to receive Him. But you do know the Spirit because He lives with you, and He will dwell in you. 18 I will never abandon you like orphans; I will return to be with you.

[John 16:7](#) (VOICE)

But the truth is that My departure will be a gift that will serve you well, because if I don’t leave, the great Helper will not come to your aid. When I leave, I will send Him to you.

[Romans 8:26-29](#) (VOICE)

A similar thing happens when we pray. We are weak and do not know how to pray, so the Spirit steps in and articulates prayers for us with groaning too profound for words. 27 Don’t you know that He who pursues and explores the human heart intimately knows the Spirit’s mind because He pleads to God for His saints to align their lives with the will of God? 28 We are confident that God is able to orchestrate everything to work toward something good and beautiful when we love Him and accept His invitation to live according to His plan.

Question: Do you feel that having Jesus with you would be better than having the Holy Spirit with/in you?

Response:

- D. I have found that having the infilling (Baptism) of the Holy Spirit has helped me in my everyday walk with the Lord. It is His purpose-given ability to walk in a Godly authority. Some benefits of having the infilling of the Holy Spirit is that He makes living His life easier—a huge power-boost to our own Holy Spirit inside of us. This power-boost is translated as “dynamite power” ([G1411](#) – *dynamis*). Your own Spirit made Holy (Holy Spirit) is infused with dynamic power that gives you a greater abundance than you would have on your own. The same infused power that Jesus used.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



[Luke 4:14](#) (VOICE)

Jesus returned to Galilee in the power ([G1411](#)) of the Holy Spirit, and soon people across the region had heard news of Him.

[Acts 1:8](#) (VOICE)

Here's the knowledge you need: you will receive power ([G1411](#)) when the Holy Spirit comes on you. And you will be My witnesses, first here in Jerusalem, then beyond to Judea and Samaria, and finally to the farthest places on earth.

[Romans 15:13](#) (VOICE)

I pray that God, the source of all hope, will infuse your lives with an abundance of joy and peace in the midst of your faith so that your hope will overflow through the power ([G1411](#)) of the Holy Spirit.

[Ephesians 3:16](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Father, out of Your honourable and glorious riches, strengthen Your people. Fill their [inner man] with the power ([G1411](#)) of [His Spirit].

Question: How would a “dynamite” boost of His Power help you in your everyday walk with Him?

Response:

- E. Here are some of the extra dynamite-power-benefits that He helps us with. It's not that without the infilling, you don't have these gifts and abilities; it is just that He helps you overflow more abundantly with them!

[1 Corinthians 12:1,4-11](#) (VOICE)

Now let me turn to some issues about spiritual gifts, brothers and sisters. There's much you need to learn.

4 Now there are many kinds of grace gifts, but they are all from the same Spirit. 5 There are many different ways to serve, but they're all directed by the same Lord. 6 There are many amazing working gifts in the church, but it is the same God who energizes them all in all who have the gifts.

7 Each believer has received a gift that manifests the Spirit's power and presence. That gift is given for the good of the whole community. 8 The Spirit gives one person a word of wisdom, but to the next person the same Spirit gives a word of knowledge. 9 Another will receive the gift of faith by the same Spirit, and still another gifts of healing—all from the one Spirit. 10 One person is enabled by the Spirit to perform miracles, another to prophesy, while another is enabled to distinguish those prophetic spirits. The next one speaks in various kinds of unknown languages, while another is able to interpret those languages. 11 One Spirit works all these things in each of them individually as He sees fit.

[Galatians 5:16-18;22-26](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Here's my instruction: walk in the Spirit, and let the Spirit bring order to your life. If you do, you will never give in to your selfish and sinful cravings. 17 For everything the flesh desires goes against the Spirit, and everything the Spirit desires goes against the flesh. There is a constant battle raging between them that prevents you from doing the good you want to do. 18 But when you are led by the Spirit, you are no longer subject to the law.

FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 027



22 The Holy Spirit produces a different kind of fruit: unconditional love, joy, peace, patience, kindheartedness, goodness, [faith], 23 gentleness, and self-control. You won't find any law opposed to fruit like this. 24 Those of us who belong to the Anointed One have crucified our old lives and put to death the flesh and all the lusts and desires that plague us.

25 Now since we have chosen to walk with the Spirit, let's keep each step in perfect sync with God's Spirit. 26 This will happen when we set aside our self-interests and work together to create true community instead of a culture consumed by provocation, pride, and envy.

[Ephesians 5:8b-21](#) (VOICE)

...let God fill you with the Holy Spirit. 19 When you are filled with the Spirit, you are empowered to speak to each other in the soulful words of pious songs, hymns, and spiritual songs; to sing and make music with your hearts attuned to God; 20 and to give thanks to God the Father every day through the name of our Lord Jesus the Anointed for all He has done. 21 And the Spirit makes it possible to submit humbly to one another out of respect for the Anointed.

Question: Would you like to have a boost in living as Christ and a boost to all His Gifts—to just “be Him” (the Identity you have been made having been Born-Again)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. This is one thing I want to make clear about the Baptism (infilling) of the Holy Spirit: that this is not a requirement to speak in tongues, perform miracles, healings, and all the Gifts. To do those which Jesus says we can do, all we have to do is believe. The same happened with the Disciples—they did all the same healing and casting-out demons that Jesus did before they themselves had the infilling of the Holy Spirit.

[Mark 16:17-18](#) (VOICE)

And these signs will follow those who believe: they will be able to cast out demons in My name, speak with new tongues, 18 take up serpents, drink poison without being harmed, and lay their hands on the sick to heal them.

Thoughts: There truly is a reason Jesus sent the Holy Spirit down for us to be able to be infilled (overflowing) with Him. Take ahold of that free power for us. And do not fear it or that you could do something to lose that infilling—for He so gladly wants you to have it. His countenance is so happy for you to have it.

Nothing you can do or have done or are doing can keep the Holy Spirit from infilling a believer. You are already made Holy when you believed in Christ Jesus, so no ritual cleansing or forgiveness-asking or sacrifice will make the Holy Spirit come into you. No sin will keep Him from coming into you. He comes into you because you are a Born-Again child of the Living God and Father, not because you don't have sin. You deserve it because you are His child. How awesome is that!

THE HUMANITY OF JESUS

INTENTION:

I think it's easier to view Christ Jesus as God, than it is to see Him as Human.

But right now, a human sits in the Throne Room next to God the Father on Humanity's behalf.

And as a human, He knows exactly what you are facing in your life in this world—He is more than empathetic, He lived it and experience it, and showed us how to overcome it!

THE HUMANITY OF JESUS

Bible Study: Lesson 028



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at The Humanity of Jesus.

Too often we can view Jesus the Christ as God (and only God). Yet, He came as a human being in likeness of us to accomplish the Father's Will. He lived on this earth as a human, experiencing everything that each and every one of us humans experience.

Not only did He face the same challenges we face, but experienced personally any sin we may have committed or had happen to us—He bore every single sin a person can commit on the Cross. As such, He knows the hurt it can cause, the struggle to bear the weight of it, the impact it has on a person, the shame, guilt, condemnation, and temptation; yet with the knowing of how to overcome it in you and against you.

Yes, He had an advantage when He was born, not being born through Adam's sin as we are; but we must know that when we are Born-Again by believing in Him, we become exactly as He is ([1 John 5:17b](#)).

So, let us relate to Him in both fashions... both as a human and, as a believer, Holy and overcoming! He is our sibling (our Brother) and we share the same kind of Loving Father that Loved Him. God Loves us in the same exact way He loved Jesus as a human. This is why God sent Him, to destroy the hindrance of sin that deceives us into thinking we cannot have an intimate relationship with Him.

We will look at the humanity of Jesus and how He relates to us in some everyday situations. But first we will read about how He actually is a human in Hebrews (see also [Romans 5](#) and [1 Corinthians 15](#)).

II. READING: [Hebrews 2:1-18](#) (TPT)

This is why it is so crucial that we be all the more engaged and attentive to the truths that we have heard so that we do not drift off course. 2 For if the message of the law spoken and confirmed by angels brought a just penalty to every disobedient violation; 3 then how would we expect to escape punishment if we despise the very truths that give us life? The Lord himself was the first to announce these things, and those who heard him first-hand confirmed their accuracy. 4 Then God added his witness to theirs. He validated their ministry with signs, astonishing wonders, all kinds of powerful miracles, and by the gifts of the Holy Spirit, which he distributed as he desired.

5 For God will not place the coming world, of which we speak, under the government of angels. 6 But the Scriptures affirm: What is man that you would even think about him, or care about Adam's race.

7 You made him lower than the angels for a little while. You placed your glory and honour upon his head as a crown. And you have given him dominion over the works of your hands, 8 For you have placed everything under his authority.

This means that God has left nothing outside the control of his Son, even if presently we have yet to see this accomplished. 9 But we see Jesus, who as a man, lived for a short time lower than the angels and has now been crowned with glorious honour because of what he suffered in his death. For it was by God's grace that he experienced death's bitterness on behalf of everyone!

10 For now he towers above all creation, for all things exist through him and for him. And that God made him, pioneer of our salvation, perfect through his sufferings, for this is how he brings many sons and daughters to share in his glory. 11 Jesus, the Holy One, makes us holy. And as sons and daughters, we now belong to his same Father, so he is not ashamed or embarrassed to introduce us as his brothers and sisters! 12 For he has said,

"I will reveal who you really are to my brothers and sisters, and I will glorify you with praises in the midst of the congregation."

13 And, "My confidence rests in God!"

And again he says, "Here I am, one with the children Yahweh has given me."

14 Since all his “children” have flesh and blood, so Jesus became human to fully identify with us. He did this, so that he could experience death and annihilate the effects of the intimidating accuser who holds against us the power of death. 15 By embracing death Jesus sets free those who live their entire lives in bondage to the tormenting dread of death. 16 For it is clear that he didn’t do this for the angels, but for all the sons and daughters of Abraham. 17 This is why he had to be a man and take hold of our humanity in every way. He made us his brothers and sisters and became our merciful and faithful King-Priest before God; as the One who removed our sins to make us one with him. 18 He suffered and endured every test and temptation, so that he can help us every time we pass through the ordeals of life.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. Jesus faced His flesh, just as we do (putting it to death to Live in Spirit). He had to resist starvation and the Cross:

[Matthew 4:1-2](#) (TPT)

Afterward, the Holy Spirit led Jesus into the wilderness to experience the ordeal of testing by the accuser. 2 And after fasting for forty days, Jesus was extremely hungry.

[Mark 14:32-36](#) (TPT)

Then Jesus led his disciples to an orchard called “The Oil Press.” He told them, “Sit here while I pray awhile.” 33 He took Peter, Jacob, and John with him. An intense feeling of great horror plunged his soul into deep sorrow. 34 And he said to them, “My heart is overwhelmed with anguish and crushed with grief. It feels as though I’m dying. Stay here and keep watch with me.”

35 He walked a short distance away, and being overcome with grief, he threw himself facedown on the ground. He prayed that if it were possible, he would not have to experience this hour of suffering. 36 He prayed, “Abba, my Father, all things are possible for you. Please—remove this cup of suffering! Yet what I want is not important, for I only desire to fulfill your plan for me.”

[Hebrews 12:3-4](#) (TPT)

So consider carefully how Jesus faced such intense opposition from sinners who opposed their own souls, so that you won’t become worn down and cave in under life’s pressures. 4 After all, you have not yet reached the point of sweating blood in your opposition to sin.

Question: We all face our own flesh; what parts of the flesh are you asking the Lord to expose that you may overcome and change that part of your humanity?

Response:

B. He also faced temptations—all temptations appeal to the flesh. The first one Jesus faced from the Devil was to stop His fasting (key to overcoming unbelief). The second was for Him to commit suicide (jumping off the tower). The third was for Him to inherit the kingdoms of the earth without needing to go through the anguish of the Cross and all of humanity’s sins (worshiping the Devil instead of God). And these all fall into the three categories. Additionally, we are told to “resist the devil and he will flee from you” ([James 4:7](#)); this Jesus demonstrated. But also that He will help provide a way out from temptation ([1 Corinthians 10:13](#)).

[Matthew 4:1-10](#) (TPT)

Afterward, the Holy Spirit led Jesus into the wilderness to experience the ordeal of testing[a] by the accuser. 2 And after fasting for forty days, Jesus was extremely hungry. 3 Then the tempter came to him and said, “How can you possibly be the Son of God and go hungry? Just command these stones to be turned into loaves of bread.”

4 He answered, “The Scriptures say: Bread alone will not satisfy, but true life is found in every word that constantly goes forth from God’s mouth.”

5 Then the accuser transported Jesus to the holy city of Jerusalem and perched him at the highest point of the temple 6 and said to him, “If you’re really God’s Son, jump, and the angels will catch you. For it is written in the Scriptures: He will command his angels to protect you and they will lift you up so that you won’t even bruise your foot on a rock.”

7 Once again Jesus said to him, “The Scriptures say: You must never put the Lord your God to a test.”

8 And the third time the accuser lifted Jesus up onto a very high mountain range and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and all the splendour that goes with it. 9 “All of these kingdoms I will give to you,” the accuser said, “if only you will kneel down before me and worship me.”

10 But Jesus said, “Go away, Satan! For the Scriptures say: Kneel before the Lord your God and worship only him.”

[1 John 2:15-18](#) (TPT)

Don’t set the affections of your heart on this world or in loving the things of the world. The love of the Father and the love of the world are incompatible. 16 For all that the world can offer us—the gratification of our flesh, the allurements of the things of the world, and the obsession with status and importance—none of these things come from the Father but from the world. 17 This world and its desires are in the process of passing away, but those who love to do the will of God live forever.

Question: What tempts your flesh?

Response:

- C. Jesus (and His family) had to rely on the Lord financially; just as He asks of us. As a baby, their family had to escape Herod by travelling to Egypt and other areas. The gold/gifts they received from the ‘Wise Men’ allowed for their passage, need, and survival. Then, as a ‘carpenter’ ([G5045](#): builder / ship builder / craftsman / planner / author) with his dad ([Mark 6:3](#)), one can argue that their business was blessed and quite successful. Then, as an adult, Jesus had enough funds to have a house in Capernaum ([Mark 2:1](#)). Then during His ministry, He had enough funds to take care of all His Disciples with places to stay, daily food to eat, boats to rent, clothes to wear, and even the large “Last Supper” banquet—all the while Judas was stealing money from Him (the Disciples Treasury). The Father took care of Him and all His needs, just as Jesus shared with us to seek His Kingdom first and all our living necessities will be added to us ([Matthew 6:25-34](#)).

[Matthew 2:11](#) (TPT)

When they came into the house and saw the young child with Mary, his mother, they fell to the ground at his feet and worshiped him. Then they opened their treasure chests full of gifts and presented him with gold, frankincense, and myrrh.

[Matthew 4:13-16](#) (TPT)

Jesus moved from Nazareth to make his home in Capernaum, which is by Lake Galilee in the land of Zebulun and Naphtali. 14 He did this to make the prophecy of Isaiah come true:

15 Listen, you who live in the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, along the road to the sea and on the other side of the Jordan, and Galilee—the land of the Gentiles!

16 You who spend your days shrouded in darkness can now say, “We have seen a brilliant Light.” And those who live in the dark shadow land of death can now say, “The Dawning Light arises on us.”

[John 12:4-6](#) (TPT)

But Judas the locksmith, Simon’s son, the betrayer, spoke up and said, 5 “What a waste! We could have sold this perfume for a fortune and given the money to the poor!”

6 (In fact, Judas had no heart for the poor. He only said this because he was a thief and in charge of the money case. He would steal money whenever he wanted from the funds given to support Jesus’ ministry.)

[Mark 14:12-16](#) (TPT) [PoG]

On the first day of Unleavened Bread, when the Passover Lamb is sacrificed, Jesus’ disciples asked him, “Where would you like us to prepare the Passover meal for you?”

13 So he sent two of his disciples ahead into Jerusalem with these instructions: “Make your way into the city and watch for a man carrying a pitcher of water. Follow him, 14 and say to the owner of whatever house he enters, ‘The Teacher wants to ask you: “Do you have my room [lodging place] ready where I can eat the Passover meal with my disciples?’” 15 And he will show you a large upstairs room ready and with a table set. Make preparations for us there.”

16 So they went into the city and found everything to be exactly like Jesus had prophesied, and they prepared for him the Passover meal.

Question: Do you feel the Lord can provide for your needs to fulfil His Will just as He did for Jesus?

Response:

- D. We should never deny that we experience emotions. They are given from the Lord as “made in Their Image”. As such, Jesus had the exact emotions we have. He loved, He cried, He got frustrated, and He got angry (Righteous Indignation). His soul (emotional realm) was tormented like ours gets. For Him and us, it’s not about having those emotions, it’s about what we feel like doing as a result of those emotions—do we let our flesh take over or the Holy Spirit in us. *I’d recommend that you take time to look for His emotions when you read the Bible.*

[Matthew 17:14-18](#) (TPT) – Frustration

They came to where a large crowd had gathered to wait for Jesus. A man came and knelt before him 15 and said, “Lord, please show your tender mercy toward my son. He has a demon who afflicts him. He has epilepsy, and he suffers horribly from seizures. He often falls into the cooking fire or into the river. 16 I brought him to your followers, but they weren’t able to heal him.”

17 Jesus replied, “Where is your faith? Can’t you see how wayward and wrong this generation is? How much longer do I stay with you and put up with your doubts? Bring your son to me.”

18 Then Jesus rebuked the demon and it came out of him and the boy was instantly healed!

[Mark 6:31-34;45-46](#) (TPT) – Compassion and Burnout

There was such a swirl of activity around Jesus, with so many people coming and going, that they were unable to even eat a meal. So Jesus said to his disciples, “Come, let’s take a break and find a secluded place where you can rest a while.” 32 They slipped away and left by sailboat for a deserted spot. 33 But many of the people saw them leaving and realized where they were headed, so they took off running along the shore. Then people from the surrounding towns joined them in the chase, and a large crowd got there ahead of them.

34 By the time Jesus came ashore, a massive crowd was waiting. At the sight of them, his heart was filled with compassion, because they seemed like wandering sheep who had no shepherd. So he taught them many wonderful things.

45 After everyone had their meal, Jesus instructed his disciples to get back into the boat and go on ahead of him and sail to the other side to Bethsaida. 46 So he dispersed the crowd, said good-bye to his disciples, then slipped away to pray on the mountain.

[John 12:27-28](#) (TPT) – Turmoil in His Soul

“Even though I am torn within, and my soul is in turmoil, I will not ask the Father to rescue me from this hour of trial. For I have come to fulfil my purpose—to offer myself to God. 28 So, Father, bring glory to your name!” Then suddenly a booming voice was heard from the sky, “I have glorified my name! And I will glorify it through you again!”

Question: Do you feel you relate to His emotions; and Him to your emotions?

Response:

- E. Jesus knows what pain of the body is too—and the sickness you face. He took the most horrible beating anyone could bear going to the Cross. And with that beating, “by His stripes we are healed” as he bore all our sickness and curses upon Himself. And on top of that, He took upon Himself every sin of humanity with their emotions.

[Romans 15:3](#) (TPT)

For not even the most powerful one of all, the Anointed One, lived to please himself. His life fulfilled the Scripture that says: All the insults of those who insulted you fall upon me.

[1 Peter 2:23-24](#) (TPT)

When he was verbally abused, he did not return with an insult; when he suffered, he would not threaten retaliation. Jesus faithfully entrusted himself into the hands of God, who judges righteously. 24 He himself carried our sins in his body on the cross so that we would be dead to sin and live for righteousness. Our instant healing flowed from his wounding.

Question: Do you believe that Jesus heals your body, mind, soul, heart, spirit, and your sins?

Response:

F. Jesus had to also learn like we do for hope, trust, humility, trials, persecution, and patience.

[Hebrews 5:1-10](#) (TPT)

For every High Priest was chosen from among the people and appointed to represent them before God by presenting their gifts to God and offering sacrifices on their behalf. 2 Since the High Priest is also one who is clothed in weakness, he humbles himself by showing compassion to those who are ignorant of God’s ways and stray from them. 3 And for this reason, he has to not only present the sin offerings of others, but also to bring a sin offering for himself. 4 And no one takes this honour upon himself by being self-appointed, but God is the one who calls each one, just as Aaron was called.

5 So also, Christ was not self-appointed and did not glorify himself by becoming a high priest, but God called and glorified him! For the Father said to him, “You are my favoured Son. Today I have fathered you.”

6 And in another Scripture he says about this new priestly order, “You are a Priest like Melchizedek, a King-Priest forever!”

7 During Christ’s days on earth he pleaded with God, praying with passion and with tearful agony that God would spare him from death. And because of his perfect devotion his prayer was answered and he was delivered. 8 But even though he was a wonderful Son, he learned to listen and obey through all his sufferings. 9 And after being proven perfect in this way he has now become the source of eternal salvation to all those who listen to him and obey. 10 For God has designated him as the King-Priest who is over the priestly order of Melchizedek.

Question: How can you learn to trust the Lord in every aspect of life—obeying even when faced with hardships?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. Even as a human being, we have access to the same Spirit He lived in. When we believe (as Jesus believed), we have: God in us, Christ in us, Holy Spirit in us. We can do all that He demonstrated and more ([John 14:12-14](#))! So even though He experiences humanity with us, we can experience Spirituality with Him.

[Ephesians 3:14-21](#) (TPT)

So I kneel humbly in awe before the Father of our Lord Jesus, the Messiah, 15 the perfect Father of every father and child in heaven and on the earth. 16 And I pray that he would unveil within you the unlimited riches of his glory and favour until supernatural strength floods your innermost being with his divine might and explosive power.

17 Then, by constantly using your faith, the life of Christ will be released deep inside you, and the resting place of his love will become the very source and root of your life.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

INTENTION:

We live in a world where there are many things out there to want to steal from us. Some, because they are jealous and want what you have. Others because of their own lack. And others because they don't want you to have it.

It is the "thief that comes to steal, kill, and destroy" anything the Lord has Life in for you. This thief does not want you to succeed in the Lord of what He has planned for you. But the thief may not be who you think it is.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at The Thief (Discernment & Battle).

When we look at the verse about it being “a thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy” ([John 10:10](#)), we can easily say that this is talking about Satan. It can be—but more specifically, it is not just him, but anything that opposes the Lord (or us with the Lord). Thief translates from the Greek ([G2812](#)) as: *an embezzler, pilferer*.

This is what we want to study out. What is the “thief” that is taking away from you a relationship with the Lord, or the doing of His Will as our own? How do we discern the “thief”? And what is our battle against the “thief”?

Since we know that Christ Jesus destroyed (disarmed) the power of Satan ([Luke 10:17-20](#) and [Colossians 2:15](#)), we can acknowledge that he is not the greatest enemy to the Lord—he never was a threat to God, only a threat to humanity. And Jesus, as a human, defeated Satan for us!

So, although Satan can still oppose us, we are also opposed by other things we may want to credit to Satan (or the Devil). But the Devil ([G1228](#)) is simply: *a calumniator (to utter maliciously false statements, charges, or imputations about; to injure the reputation of by ‘misrepresentation’), false accuser, slanderer*. So, anything that does those things against God or whom you are in Christ is what you must discern and battle. This includes:

- Our own flesh.
- Our unrenewed mind (strongholds).
- Our filtered (veiled) or hardened heart.
- The Law.
- Fear.
- Other spirits.
- False teachings/teachers.
- Unbelief.

For me, I have had to overcome each of these in my Christian life—from false beliefs to my own flesh. The flesh being the biggest obstacle against whom we are in Christ; for it is our own flesh (learned nurture/nature from this world) that is our worst enemy. Even for Jesus, it wasn’t Satan keeping Him from the Cross, but His own flesh.

It’s an opportunity to come to an understanding that just because it feels right, does not mean it’s from God. Test the spirits and what your flesh is trying to do: their motives, adversary, tradition, want, emotion, character, nature, habits, influence, pressure, etc). Look how often Jesus corrected His Disciples on what they thought was the right thing to do in the moment—like call down fire from heaven to punish a city, or keep Jesus from getting arrested and crucified. Even the Pharisees felt they were doing right by objecting to how Jesus ministered and healed people.

What you submit yourselves to (the flesh or the Lord), you become slaves to—so choose the Lord ([Romans 6:16](#)).

II. READING: [Romans 8:1-39](#) (CSB)

Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those in Christ Jesus, 2 because the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and death. 3 For what the law could not do since it was weakened by the flesh, God did. He condemned sin in the flesh by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh as a sin offering, 4 in order that the law’s requirement would be fulfilled in us who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit. 5 For those who live according to the flesh have their minds set on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit have their minds set on the things of the Spirit. 6 Now the mindset of the flesh is death, but the mindset of the Spirit is life and peace. 7 The mindset of the flesh is hostile to God because it does not submit to God’s law. Indeed, it is unable to do so. 8 Those who are in the flesh cannot please God. 9 You, however, are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God lives in you. If anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to him. 10 Now if Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit gives life because of righteousness. 11 And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives in you, then he who raised Christ from the dead will also bring your mortal bodies to life through his Spirit who lives in you.

12 So then, brothers and sisters, we are not obligated to the flesh to live according to the flesh, 13 because if you live according to the flesh, you are going to die. But if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



14 For all those led by God's Spirit are God's sons. 15 For you did not receive a spirit of slavery to fall back into fear. Instead, you received the Spirit of adoption, by whom we cry out, "Abba, Father!" 16 The Spirit himself testifies together with our spirit that we are God's children, 17 and if children, also heirs—heirs of God and coheirs with Christ—if indeed we suffer with him so that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worth comparing with the glory that is going to be revealed to us. 19 For the creation eagerly waits with anticipation for God's sons to be revealed. 20 For the creation was subjected to futility—not willingly, but because of him who subjected it—in the hope 21 that the creation itself will also be set free from the bondage to decay into the glorious freedom of God's children. 22 For we know that the whole creation has been groaning together with labour pains until now. 23 Not only that, but we ourselves who have the Spirit as the firstfruits—we also groan within ourselves, eagerly waiting for adoption, the redemption of our bodies. 24 Now in this hope we were saved, but hope that is seen is not hope, because who hopes for what he sees? 25 Now if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with patience.

26 In the same way the Spirit also helps us in our weakness, because we do not know what to pray for as we should, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with inexpressible groanings. 27 And he who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because he intercedes for the saints according to the will of God.

28 We know that all things work together for the good of those who love God, who are called according to his purpose. 29 For those he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, so that he would be the firstborn among many brothers and sisters. 30 And those he predestined, he also called; and those he called, he also justified; and those he justified, he also glorified.

31 What, then, are we to say about these things? If God is for us, who is against us? 32 He did not even spare his own Son but gave him up for us all. How will he not also with him grant us everything? 33 Who can bring an accusation against God's elect? God is the one who justifies. 34 Who is the one who condemns? Christ Jesus is the one who died, but even more, has been raised; he also is at the right hand of God and intercedes for us. 35 Who can separate us from the love of Christ? Can affliction or distress or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or sword? 36 As it is written:

Because of you we are being put to death all day long; we are counted as sheep to be slaughtered.

37 No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him who loved us. 38 For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor rulers, nor things present nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Our flesh is always at war with our Born-Again Spirit! And we can easily discern some of what is the flesh and what is the Spirit through the passage below. But sometimes we get deceived by the flesh in the things not listed—ways we grew up and learned about discrimination, prejudices, xenophobia, racism, gender inequality, or even our own personality types that go against the Spirit.

[Galatians 5:13-26](#) (CSB) [PoG]

For you were called to be free, brothers and sisters; only don't use this freedom as an opportunity for the flesh, but serve one another through love. 14 For the whole law is fulfilled in one statement: Love your neighbour as yourself. 15 But if you bite and devour one another, watch out, or you will be consumed by one another.

16 I say, then, walk by the Spirit and you will certainly not carry out the desire of the flesh. 17 For the flesh desires what is against the Spirit, and the Spirit desires what is against the flesh; these are opposed to each other, so that you don't do what you want. 18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



19 Now the works of the flesh are obvious: sexual immorality, moral impurity, promiscuity, 20 idolatry, sorcery, hatreds, strife, jealousy, outbursts of anger, selfish ambitions, dissensions, factions, 21 envy, drunkenness, carousing, and anything similar. I am warning you about these things—as I warned you before—that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, [faith], 23 gentleness, and self-control. The law is not against such things. 24 Now those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. 25 If we live by the Spirit, let us also keep in step with the Spirit. 26 Let us not become conceited, provoking one another, envying one another.

Question: Can the Lord help us expose our flesh and overcome it?

Response:

- B. Our minds are often trained by this world to focus on the negative (just watch much of the news). When we think in opposition to the Spirit, we can hinder the Will of the Lord through our lives as “vessels of the Holy Spirit”. Our mind can even deceive us into thinking that sins make us enemies to God ([Colossians 1:21-22](#))—it doesn’t. This is why it is so important to renew our minds to be moulded in the correct knowledge of the Lord, and allowing Him (through the Spirit) to be the “Stronger man” that overpowers your strongholds!

[Luke 11:21-22](#) (CSB) [PoG]

When a strong man, fully armed, guards his estate, his possessions are secure. 22 But when one stronger [*the Holy Spirit*] than he attacks and overpowers him, he takes from him all his weapons [*strongholds*] he trusted in [*his flesh*], and divides up his plunder [*strips away his weapons and valuables*].

[Romans 12:2](#) (CSB)

Do not be conformed to this age, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, so that you may discern what is the good, pleasing, and perfect will of God.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-6](#) (CSB) [PoG]

For although we live in the flesh, we do not wage war according to the flesh, 4 since the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh, but are powerful through God for the demolition of strongholds. We demolish arguments 5 and every proud thing that is raised up against the knowledge of God, and we [lead away] every thought captive to obey Christ. 6 And we are ready to punish any disobedience, once your obedience is complete.

[2 Peter 1:2](#) (CSB) [PoG]

May grace and peace be multiplied to you through the [correct] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

Question: What are some of the things the Lord has renewed in your mind and thinking?

Response:

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



- C. Our hardened hearts also disrupt our walk with the Lord. The hardened heart of an unbeliever does not let the Lord in; while the hardened heart of a believer does not let the Lord out from in them. We essentially block Heaven from coming down and manifesting in this world and a person ([Matthew 16:19](#)).

[2 Corinthians 3:14-16](#) (CSB)

but their minds were hardened. For to this day, at the reading of the old covenant, the same veil remains; it is not lifted, because it is set aside only in Christ. 15 Yet still today, whenever Moses is read, a veil lies over their hearts, 16 but whenever a person turns to the Lord, the veil is removed.

[Hebrews 3:12-15](#) (CSB)

Watch out, brothers and sisters, so that there won't be in any of you an evil, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. 13 But encourage each other daily, while it is still called today, so that none of you is hardened by sin's deception. 14 For we have become participants in Christ if we hold firmly until the end the reality that we had at the start. 15 As it is said: Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion.

Question: Have you ever hardened your heart to something the Lord is speaking to you about?

Response:

- D. The Law will always bring death, because it appeals to the flesh for the flesh to seek its own self-righteousness and reward. For us to submit to the Law, we are removing ourselves from the Grace of the Lord into self-works!

[1 Corinthians 15:56-57](#) (CSB)

The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ!

[2 Corinthians 3:6-9](#) (CSB)

He has made us competent to be ministers of a new covenant, not of the letter, but of the Spirit. For the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life. 7 Now if the ministry that brought death, chiselled in letters on stones, came with glory, so that the Israelites were not able to gaze steadily at Moses's face because of its glory, which was set aside, 8 how will the ministry of the Spirit not be more glorious? 9 For if the ministry that brought condemnation had glory, the ministry that brings righteousness overflows with even more glory.

[Galatians 3:10-14](#) (CSB)

For all who rely on the works of the law are under a curse, because it is written, Everyone who does not do everything written in the book of the law is cursed. 11 Now it is clear that no one is justified before God by the law, because the righteous will live by faith. 12 But the law is not based on faith; instead, the one who does these things will live by them. 13 Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, because it is written, Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree. 14 The purpose was that the blessing of Abraham would come to the Gentiles by Christ Jesus, so that we could receive the promised Spirit through faith.

Question: Have you ever tried to live up to the impossibility of the Law (even if just the 10 Commandments)?

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



Response:

- E. Fear opposes the Lord—for the Lord specifically says He does not give us a “spirit of fear” ([2 Timothy 1:7](#)). Since fear is not from Him, then it becomes a hindrance in our lives. Instead, His Spirit gives us Boldness!

[Philippians 1:12-14](#) (CSB)

Now I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that what has happened to me has actually advanced the gospel, 13 so that it has become known throughout the whole imperial guard, and to everyone else, that my imprisonment is because I am in Christ. 14 Most of the brothers have gained confidence in the Lord from my imprisonment and dare even more to speak the word fearlessly.

[1 John 4:18a](#) (CSB)

There is no fear in love; instead, perfect love drives out fear, because fear involves punishment.

Question: Has fear ever kept you from ministering to other people as directed by the Holy Spirit?

Response:

- F. “Test the spirits to see if they are from God” ([1 John 4:1](#)). There are differing spiritual forces at work in our lives. We have our own spirit we are born with, then Born-Again Spirit, Holy Spirit, the spirit of this world, and the spirit of our minds. All have something to say, but it is the Spirit of the Lord that we must discern and follow; knowing that the Spiritual realm of God is not the same as (nor in cooperation with) the spiritual realm of Satan.

[Matthew 12:25-28](#) (CSB)

Knowing their thoughts, he told them, “Every kingdom divided against itself is headed for destruction, and no city or house divided against itself will stand. 26 If Satan drives out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then will his kingdom stand? 27 And if I drive out demons by Beelzebul, by whom do your sons drive them out? For this reason they will be your judges. 28 If I drive out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.

[Ephesians 2:1-2](#) (CSB)

And you were dead in your trespasses and sins 2 in which you previously walked according to the ways of this world, according to the ruler of the power of the air, the spirit now working in the disobedient.

[Ephesians 4:22-24](#) (CSB)

to take off your former way of life, the old self that is corrupted by deceitful desires, 23 to be renewed in the spirit of your minds, 24 and to put on the new self, the one created according to God’s likeness in righteousness and purity of the truth.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



[Ephesians 6:10-18](#) (CSB)

Finally, be strengthened by the Lord and by his vast strength. 11 Put on the full armour of God so that you can stand against the schemes of the devil. 12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the cosmic powers of this darkness, against evil, spiritual forces in the heavens. 13 For this reason take up the full armour of God, so that you may be able to resist in the evil day, and having prepared everything, to take your stand. 14 Stand, therefore, with truth like a belt around your waist, righteousness like armour on your chest, 15 and your feet sandaled with readiness for the gospel of peace. 16 In every situation take up the shield of faith with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit—which is the word of God. 18 Pray at all times in the Spirit with every prayer and request, and stay alert with all perseverance and intercession for all the saints.

Question: Have you ever pondered the different spiritual realms and the affects they can have on you?

Response:

- G. We are instructed to beware of false teachings (as of the Pharisees and Sadducees), or the mixing of the Law and Grace [Old Covenant / New Covenant ([Mark 2:22](#))]. Paul got quite upset with the Galatians and others for this.

[Mark 7:6-8;13](#) (CSB)

He answered them, “Isaiah prophesied correctly about you hypocrites, as it is written:

This people honours me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 They worship me in vain, teaching as doctrines human commands.

8 Abandoning the command of God, you hold on to human tradition.”

You nullify the word of God by your tradition that you have handed down. And you do many other similar things.”

[Galatians 1:6-9; 3:1-5](#) (CSB)

I am amazed that you are so quickly turning away from him who called you by the grace of Christ and are turning to a different gospel— 7 not that there is another gospel, but there are some who are troubling you and want to distort the gospel of Christ. 8 But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, a curse be on him! 9 As we have said before, I now say again: If anyone is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, a curse be on him!

You foolish Galatians! Who has cast a spell on you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ was publicly portrayed as crucified? 2 I only want to learn this from you: Did you receive the Spirit by the works of the law or by believing what you heard? 3 Are you so foolish? After beginning by the Spirit, are you now finishing by the flesh? 4 Did you experience so much for nothing—if in fact it was for nothing? 5 So then, does God give you the Spirit and work miracles among you by your doing the works of the law? Or is it by believing what you heard.

[Colossians 2:4-10](#) (CSB)

I am saying this so that no one will deceive you with arguments that sound reasonable. 5 For I may be absent in body, but I am with you in spirit, rejoicing to see how well ordered you are and the strength of your faith in Christ.

6 So then, just as you have received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to walk in him, 7 being rooted and built up in him and established in the faith, just as you were taught, and overflowing with gratitude.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



8 Be careful that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deceit based on human tradition, based on the elements of the world, rather than Christ. 9 For the entire fullness of God's nature dwells bodily in Christ, 10 and you have been filled by him, who is the head over every ruler and authority.

Question: Have you ever shared something about the Lord that turned out to be not from or of Him?

Response:

H. "Help me in my unbelief" ([Mark 9:14-29](#)). Unbelief is simply believing in something that is opposite of God. It's not about how much you believe God, but the part of you that also believes contrary to a true belief in Him.

[Matthew 13:57-58](#) (CSB)

And they were offended by him. Jesus said to them, "A prophet is not without honour except in his hometown and in his household." 58 And he did not do many miracles there because of their unbelief

[Mark 16:14-18](#) (CSB)

Later he appeared to the Eleven themselves as they were reclining at the table. He rebuked their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who saw him after he had risen. 15 Then he said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. 17 And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; 18 they will pick up snakes; if they should drink anything deadly, it will not harm them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will get well."

Question: What have you come to believe about the Lord that you didn't believe before (removing unbelief)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Philippians 1:9-10](#) [PoG]

And this I pray, that your Agape Love may abundantly exceed, even more by far, in [correct] knowledge and all cognition [through thought, experience, and the senses]; that you may recognize as genuine (after examination / testing) the things that are different and of importance (to distinguish between good and evil); that you may be sincere and without offence (not stumbling or being caused to stumble, nor troubled by a consciousness of sin) till the day of Christ.

Thoughts: Recognize those things which are Good (of God) and those things which are Evil (not of God).

For me, I'm tired of God getting blamed for something He had nothing to do with! I am tired of religion and doctrines to make God out to be something He is not. I desire the Truth to be known about who Jesus Christ showed God to be: an Agape Loving Father to us all. Not only striving so for myself, but wanting for others too.

THE THIEF (DISCERNMENT & BATTLE)

Bible Study: Lesson 029



This is my "Righteous Indignation"! And I have this because I was tricked and lied to so much in my 40+ years of life by Christians and Christianity. I was taught about a God who doesn't really exist as the "God" I have now learned about. These lies came through people in my life, in authority, family, churches, and horrible Bible translations. It is those evils that I want to bring into the Light so that others do not have to go down that same path of being the helpless Christian I was; which I had even preached unto others that false Christianity.

But Christianity, Jesus Christ, God the Father, and the Holy Ghost did not accomplish all they did for me to be helpless—a messed up life where I just waiting to die or the Lord to show up again. NO! He came to give me LIFE right now in this life. His authority. His Hope. His breakthrough. His Health. His confidence. I never knew that was even possible growing up. And it took the Truth to set me free.

Now is a time in my life that I can actually Rest in the Sabbath of His Work (what the Sabbath really means). Now is the time I am seeing Him as an Agape Loving Father. Now is the time I have His Faith in and through me. Now is a time I have no fear of Him. And now is a time where I know what is Him (Good) and what is not Him (evil), because I recognize the spirits at work in this world and in life. I can sit in His throne room without hindrance.

We are to test if something is good or evil; recognizing the difference between the Goodness of God the Father and that which is not of Him (evil). When we don't know the Truth of His Nature and Character (as defined by everything Jesus Christ did and showed), then we are deceived. Likewise, if we believe God controls everything, we allow ourselves to submit to "false prophets" who change the True Nature and Character of God the Father into their own doctrines—through manipulating scriptures out of context, to changing Bible translations to fit their doctrine, to even rewriting the Bible (taking away the very Love-Nature of God). This is the definition of what a false prophet is: one who denies that the Gospel is actually that which Paul preached and wrote about; the completeness of Christ's accomplishments for us...a Gospel of Power, not of words. When the Gospel just becomes words and placid comfort, without Power, it's no longer the Gospel. Test what the preacher, article, or translation says. Test what you are told! Test what I even write or say.

This "spirit of our mind" is our mental way of thinking (our thoughts and imaginations). When our thinking is wrong, it creates all kinds of false doctrines and forced false-beliefs in who God is. This is what I was trapped in.

To say that God is the one causing calamity or sickness / disease in a person's life is to not test the spirits. To say that God violates our free will to believe by pre-selecting some, and rejecting others, is not truly knowing Him! And to not believe in the Gifts and Miracle workings of the Holy Spirit now, is to reject your authority in Christ.

So this is what I am highly passionate about through these Lessons—to break through the lies, falsities, deception, and discouragement of false doctrines that can plague Christianity and Bible interpretations / translations. I want you to experience the freedom I am experiencing! Christ came to set us free for the sake of being free. This is what I strive for; this is what I long for. So I pray you can be free too!

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

INTENTION:

One of the most difficult things I have to do in life, is let go of trying and doing, and just submit to the Lord.

Many things in this world fight for your attention and submission. Who are you offering yourself to?

For, “the one to whom you offer yourself—he will take you and be your master, and you will be his slave.”

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Humility, Obedience, and Trust (in relation to the Lord).

The word 'obedience' for me used to be heavy-laden with guilt and shame—that if I wasn't obedient to God's Law, then I was apt to be punished. Just as I was when I didn't obey my mom or dad. But, as we have learned, that is not God's character and nature to punish us ([Romans 5:1](#)), but to bless us. And His desire is that we align with Him.

This kind of "obedience" is just choosing Him over choosing anything else: our God-Given free-will ability to choose Life or Death ([Deuteronomy 30:19-20](#)). We all have the free-will choice to believe in Him (Jesus Christ) or to not. We, even as believers, have a free-will choice to do as He does (just as Jesus fully demonstrated). Jesus was humbly obedient even unto death ([Philippians 2:8](#)).

That humility that is required to be obedient (which Jesus had) is summed up as: "humility is not thinking less of yourself, but of God more". When we make ourselves less than who God says we are, we are neglecting His Life for us. We humans are the valuable pearl and treasure He gave it all up for ([Matthew 13:44-46](#)). We must always embrace ourselves as who we really are as believers... "for as Jesus is, so are we in this world" ([1 John 4:17](#)).

Furthermore, we as believers have been given ALL Spiritual Blessings ([Ephesians 1:3](#)); let's not "humble" ourselves so lowly that we don't use what He already gave us. As soon as you believe and are Born-Again, you receive it all from Him. Our obedience to Him as believers does not entail more blessings—we don't "give to get"; He gave it all Himself and gifted it to us because He says we deserve it as just being His Children. The obedience here is that we were obedient to believe in Jesus Christ as our Saviour, and God as our Father.

Thus, as a believer, obedience isn't about "getting from God", but about alignment. He always desires to work in us, through us, and with us to manifest His Will on earth as it is in Heaven ([Matthew 6:10](#)). When we align with Him in obedience, what we gain is the lack of conflict in one's soul, overcoming the flesh. That Kingdom of God in our life manifests as Righteousness, Peace, and Joy in the Holy Spirit ([Romans 14:17](#)). And from that, His Blessings flow through and out of us as gifts to those who need it—giving out each and every Gift of the Holy Spirit.

God is also providing us with the ability to be obedient to Him (us acting in Faith)—**Faith literally is just the manifestation of God in your life**. Having that want of faith (that desire to do of God), but not have it manifest as an action (demonstrating God) is a "dead faith" ([James 2:17-20](#)). And when you do something that is not of faith, it is considered sin because it is not something from God ([Romans 14:23b](#)). This is because Faith is a Fruit of the Holy Spirit. Faith is not what we demonstrate toward God (doing for Him to "move"), it's actually what God is doing through you. God the Father manifested Himself through Jesus Christ, and it was credited to Jesus Christ as Faith ([Hebrews 12:1-2](#)). Jesus demonstrated this for us, gifting us the exact same ability to do so as well ([Romans 12:3](#)).

Don't fall into the "works" trap (even the "faith works" trap) that approaches God in an "if I do, He will"; thinking that His blessings (or healings/miracles) only come upon me if "I have faith", or if "I do good", or do "something" that God may want of me to do. This isn't obedience, this is works. We are free from having to work for our salvation or blessings. He wants us to be obedient because He just wants us to live the best life that has been set before us that is in Christ Jesus. How He lived is how we can live (doing God's Will even through persecution).

Jesus's human struggle toward obedience was to deny his human flesh. When he denied his human flesh, he maintained that obedience to God the Father. Through all the persecution that tested Him, it was testing Him to see if He would break and be obedient to His flesh rather than to God—as per His prayer in the Garden ([Luke 22:39-46](#)).

Humility involves change. Change involves growth. Growth involves action. Action involves obedience. Obedience involves submission. Submission involves humility (putting aside one's own wants at the cost of self—our old self).

Who (what) we submit ourselves to we become slaves to. Let us become "slaves" to righteousness! Let's use our free-will ability to choose an alignment with Him, not of sin, not the Law, nor our flesh.

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



II. **READING:** [Romans 6:1-23](#) (TLB)

Well then, shall we keep on sinning so that God can keep on showing us more and more kindness and forgiveness?

2-3 Of course not! Should we keep on sinning when we don't have to? For sin's power over us was broken when we became Christians and were baptized to become a part of Jesus Christ; through his death the power of your sinful nature was shattered. 4 Your old sin-loving nature was buried with him by baptism when he died; and when God the Father, with glorious power, brought him back to life again, you were given his wonderful new life to enjoy.

5 For you have become a part of him, and so you died with him, so to speak, when he died; and now you share his new life and shall rise as he did. 6 Your old evil desires were nailed to the cross with him; that part of you that loves to sin was crushed and fatally wounded, so that your sin-loving body is no longer under sin's control, no longer needs to be a slave to sin; 7 for when you are deadened to sin you are freed from all its allure and its power over you. 8 And since your old sin-loving nature "died" with Christ, we know that you will share his new life. 9 Christ rose from the dead and will never die again. Death no longer has any power over him. 10 He died once for all to end sin's power, but now he lives forever in unbroken fellowship with God. 11 So look upon your old sin nature as dead and unresponsive to sin, and instead be alive to God, alert to him, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Do not let sin control your puny body any longer; do not give in to its sinful desires. 13 Do not let any part of your bodies become tools of wickedness, to be used for sinning; but give yourselves completely to God—every part of you—for you are back from death and you want to be tools in the hands of God, to be used for his good purposes. 14 Sin need never again be your master, for now you are no longer tied to the law where sin enslaves you, but you are free under God's favour and mercy.

15 Does this mean that now we can go ahead and sin and not worry about it? (For our salvation does not depend on keeping the law but on receiving God's grace!) Of course not!

16 Don't you realize that you can choose your own master? You can choose sin (with death) or else obedience (with acquittal). The one to whom you offer yourself—he will take you and be your master, and you will be his slave. 17 Thank God that though you once chose to be slaves of sin, now you have obeyed with all your heart the teaching to which God has committed you. 18 And now you are free from your old master, sin; and you have become slaves to your new master, righteousness.

19 I speak this way, using the illustration of slaves and masters, because it is easy to understand: just as you used to be slaves to all kinds of sin, so now you must let yourselves be slaves to all that is right and holy.

20 In those days when you were slaves of sin you didn't bother much with goodness. 21 And what was the result? Evidently not good, since you are ashamed now even to think about those things you used to do, for all of them end in eternal doom. 22 But now you are free from the power of sin and are slaves of God, and his benefits to you include holiness and everlasting life. 23 For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

III. **RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:**

- A. Obeying God rather than men or the wisdom of this world. There are so many "forces" trying to pull us away from the Lord, that we can easily get caught up in unbelief (whether a doctrine, teaching, religion, hate, or "fact"). God's utmost desire is that we come to Him through belief in Christ Jesus. And when we do, we receive of Him His Holy Spirit. And from there, not get deceived into forms of unbelief (hardened heart) or of works.

[Acts 5:28-32](#) (TLB)

"Didn't we tell you never again to preach about this Jesus?" the High Priest demanded. "And instead you have filled all Jerusalem with your teaching and intend to bring the blame for this man's death on us!"

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



29 But Peter and the apostles replied, “We must obey God rather than men. 30 The God of our ancestors brought Jesus back to life again after you had killed him by hanging him on a cross. 31 Then, with mighty power, God exalted him to be a Prince and Saviour, so that the people of Israel would have an opportunity for repentance, and for their sins to be forgiven. 32 And we are witnesses of these things and so is the Holy Spirit, who is given by God to all who obey him.”

Romans 10:1-4 (TLB)

Dear brothers, the longing of my heart and my prayer is that the Jewish people might be saved. 2 I know what enthusiasm they have for the honour of God, but it is misdirected zeal. 3 For they don’t understand that Christ has died to make them right with God. Instead they are trying to make themselves good enough to gain God’s favour by keeping the Jewish laws and customs, but that is not God’s way of salvation. 4 They don’t understand that Christ gives to those who trust in him everything they are trying to get by keeping his laws. He ends all of that.

Galatians 3:1-5 (TLB)

Oh, foolish Galatians! What magician has hypnotized you and cast an evil spell upon you? For you used to see the meaning of Jesus Christ’s death as clearly as though I had waved a placard before you with a picture on it of Christ dying on the cross. 2 Let me ask you this one question: Did you receive the Holy Spirit by trying to keep the Jewish laws? Of course not, for the Holy Spirit came upon you only after you heard about Christ and trusted him to save you. 3 Then have you gone completely crazy? For if trying to obey the Jewish laws never gave you spiritual life in the first place, why do you think that trying to obey them now will make you stronger Christians? 4 You have suffered so much for the Gospel. Now are you going to just throw it all overboard? I can hardly believe it!

5 I ask you again, does God give you the power of the Holy Spirit and work miracles among you as a result of your trying to obey the Jewish laws? No, of course not. It is when you believe in Christ and fully trust him

Galatians 5:1-8 (TLB)

So Christ has made us free. Now make sure that you stay free, and don’t get all tied up again in the chains of slavery to Jewish laws and ceremonies. 2 Listen to me, for this is serious: if you are counting on circumcision and keeping the Jewish laws to make you right with God, then Christ cannot save you. 3 I’ll say it again. Anyone trying to find favour with God by being circumcised must always obey every other Jewish law or perish. 4 Christ is useless to you if you are counting on clearing your debt to God by keeping those laws; you are lost from God’s grace.

5 But we by the help of the Holy Spirit are counting on Christ’s death to clear away our sins and make us right with God. 6 And we to whom Christ has given eternal life don’t need to worry about whether we have been circumcised or not, or whether we are obeying the Jewish ceremonies or not; for all we need is faith working through love.

7 You were getting along so well. Who has interfered with you to hold you back from following the truth? 8 It certainly isn’t God who has done it, for he is the one who has called you to freedom in Christ.

Question: What does obedience mean to you?

Response:

- B. Being humble is not being weak (nor humiliating). It is a matter of giving yourself to the Lord to give Him the right to help and assist you in life. His blessings are not based on our “works” or our “faith”, but based on His generosity. Thus, even though we have all spiritual blessings, we make sure He gets the glory, not ourselves.

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



[Luke 14:11](#) (TLB)

“For everyone who tries to honour himself shall be humbled; and he who humbles himself shall be honoured.”

[James 4:6b&7a](#) (TLB)

As the Scripture says, God gives strength to the humble ... 7 So give yourselves humbly to God.

[1 Peter 5:6-7](#) (TLB)

If you will humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, in his good time he will lift you up. 7 Let him have all your worries and cares, for he is always thinking about you and watching everything that concerns you.

Question: What does humility mean to you?

Response:

C. Sometimes, being humble and obedient comes at the cost of self; and sometimes comes with persecution.

[Colossians 3:12-13](#) (TLB) [PoG]

Since you have been chosen by God who has given you this new kind of life, and because of his deep love and concern for you, you should practice tender-hearted [mercies, kindness, humility, and meekness] to others. Don't worry about making a good impression on them, but be ready to suffer quietly and patiently. 13 Be gentle and ready to forgive; never hold grudges. Remember, the Lord forgave you, so you must forgive others.

[Hebrews 5:4-9](#) (TLB)

Another thing to remember is that no one can be a high priest just because he wants to be. He has to be called by God for this work in the same way God chose Aaron.

5 That is why Christ did not elect himself to the honour of being High Priest; no, he was chosen by God. God said to him, “My Son, today I have honoured you.” 6 And another time God said to him, “You have been chosen to be a priest forever, with the same rank as Melchizedek.”

7 Yet while Christ was here on earth he pleaded with God, praying with tears and agony of soul to the only one who would save him from premature death. And God heard his prayers because of his strong desire to obey God at all times.

8 And even though Jesus was God's Son, he had to learn from experience what it was like to obey when obeying meant suffering. 9 It was after he had proved himself perfect in this experience that Jesus became the Giver of eternal salvation to all those who obey him.

Question: Does the cost of self and of persecution make you hesitant to do as the Lord says?

Response:

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



D. Trusting is not always something that comes naturally to our being. Learning to Trust the Lord is something that I have had to develop in me. And I have found it a very important aspect in my relationship with Him—so much so that the title of these Bible Study books is: Trusting the Father. If we don't trust God (like I did for most of my life), why would I want to submit myself to Him. If all He was doing was waiting for me to mess up, so as to punish me, then I'd rather just stay clear of Him and my perceived expectations of following the Law for Him. But this kind of trust entails joy, hopefulness, safety, security, and full confidence ([H982](#) and [G1679](#)).

[Proverbs 3:5b-6](#) (TLB)

trust the Lord completely; don't ever trust yourself. 6 In everything you do, put God first, and he will direct you and crown your efforts with success.

[Romans 8:24-28](#) (TLB)

We are saved by trusting. And trusting means looking forward to getting something we don't yet have—for a man who already has something doesn't need to hope and trust that he will get it. 25 But if we must keep trusting God for something that hasn't happened yet, it teaches us to wait patiently and confidently.

26 And in the same way—by our faith—the Holy Spirit helps us with our daily problems and in our praying. For we don't even know what we should pray for nor how to pray as we should, but the Holy Spirit prays for us with such feeling that it cannot be expressed in words. 27 And the Father who knows all hearts knows, of course, what the Spirit is saying as he pleads for us in harmony with God's own will. 28 And we know that all that happens to us is working for our good if we love God and are fitting into his plans.

Question: Do you find yourself easily trusting the Lord?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [1 Peter 1:14a](#) (TLB)

Obey God because you are his children.

Thoughts: I like to simply believe that: *Humility = Agreeing with God*. And the way I have learned this is through simply obeying Him when He says do something—whether for myself and my own growth, or when it is for someone else. Yet in both humility and obedience, one has to first trust.

One part of my journey with the Lord was learning to trust Him and then humbly be obedient to what He was telling me. Early on, this involved getting healed from something that had plagued my life from my teenage years into my adulthood at almost 40 years old: acne. Not only is having acne as a teenager something I felt shameful of; having it as an adult also carried a shame. I was very self-conscious. So, the Lord used that for me to start trusting Him, and not my "own understanding".

For some people, acne treatments and scripts (including Dermatologists) help the person's condition. However, it was not working for me—even though I was trusting that it eventually would, not knowing anything different.

HUMILITY, OBEDIENCE, & TRUST

Bible Study: Lesson 030



The Holy Spirit then placed on my heart the notion of trusting Him in how He knew best for my own personal self and treatment I needed apart from what I held onto. He didn't condemn me for what I was relying on—no, all He wanted to do was tell me I have a different way specifically for you.

This was extremely hard for me and my flesh. Not only was it about trusting that I was hearing Him correctly, but also just being humble enough to “let go” of what I held to be true for me. What I held was that I had to use the special soaps and creams, because that is what is programmed into me from what I see on acne commercials and such. That the only way to treat it was to go that route; and doing anything else would make it worse. A big fear for me. Yet, I obeyed.

What that looked like was listening to Him about what my skin actually needed and wanted—not the chemical treatments I was used to, but all-natural soaps and lotions that were free from many of the ingredients found in those other products. I went out and bought an olive-oil based moisturising soap. This seemed to opposite to what I held onto; in that to add oil and moisturiser to my face would only have me break out more!

But I didn't break out. I cleared up. What I had been resisting is what was best for me. The Lord knew that, not me. And that little bit of trust brought about a change to my life. It wasn't to do with me “having faith”, nor me “believing more”, but just listening and obeying Him in trust. From then on, I have never had to use the things that may help others. He set me personally free from my fear and shame. This is His Love for me!

And He has the same Love for you in wanting to bring about a specific change in your life. Sometimes it just takes trust, humbleness, and obedience. He wants to see you free from fear, shame, sickness, disease, emotional pain and so much more. And that journey for you will look different than others. You can listen to testimonies of healing shared by so many to help you gain the trust you need in the Lord (as I did). But whether He shares with you to go to a doctor, get medication, counselling, or prayer, just obey Him in whichever path He leads you.

I Hope you find that for each and every part of your being that you need His Life!

B. Ask yourself these questions when it comes to trust:

- How does the Lord act that enables you to trust Him?

Response:

- How do you act with others that enable them to trust you—whether a co-worker, spouse, child, parent, friend, stranger, leader, pastor, or just as a human being?

Response:

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

INTENTION:

“Take my yolk, it is easy” says the Lord. An invitation to be along-side Him as you journey in this world. He never wants you to do life alone. You are His personal child, and He wants to take care of you with you.

He will lead the way, but we must act into that direction He needs us to go in. He cannot force us, we must move as He stays by our side. We have responsibilities here on earth that He asks us to do, so let’s do it with Him, not alone, and neither doing it “for Him” for some kind of acceptance or reward.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at what is Our Responsibility (With the Lord).

The Lord shares with us what we have to take charge of in our lives—things we must choose to do. But in each and every situation, He does it with us. We must never think that what we are instructed to do, we are left alone to do it—the Lord always teams-up with us to help us make the choice that He desires of us.

Sadly, I wrongly believed that it was MY own responsibility to live holy, to be righteous, to be obedient. And I did try, but failed miserably at it each time. This was because I really did try to do it on my own to “please” the Lord. I have since learned that He wants to do with me and through me using His strength and ability in me!

So, when I am instructed to do something—either directly by the Holy Spirit or in reading scripture—I now know that He will provide me that ability to do so. All I need to do (as we learned in the previous lesson) is to be humble, obedient, and trust Him.

If we don’t have this kind of unified relationship with Him, we end up struggling to do it ourselves or praying to the Lord that He do it Himself. But in doing these latter two, the efforts become futile; and we thus remove ourselves from that intimate relationship we have with Him.

Have you ever prayed to the Lord to “move”, only to find He doesn’t? Maybe it’s because He has instructed us to be the ones to “move” (and with Him)—to be the one’s initiating the action with Him. Just as, when He left this earth, He instructed for us to do (acting from belief):

II. READING: [Mark 16:1-20](#) (CEB) [PoG]

When the Sabbath was over, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices so that they could go and anoint Jesus’ dead body. 2 Very early on the first day of the week, just after sunrise, they came to the tomb. 3 They were saying to each other, “Who’s going to roll the stone away from the entrance for us?” 4 When they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away. (And it was a very large stone!) 5 Going into the tomb, they saw a young man in a white robe seated on the right side; and they were startled. 6 But he said to them, “Don’t be alarmed! You are looking for Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has been raised. He isn’t here. Look, here’s the place where they laid him. 7 Go, tell his disciples, especially Peter, that he is going ahead of you into Galilee. You will see him there, just as he told you.” 8 Overcome with terror and dread, they fled from the tomb. They said nothing to anyone, because they were afraid.

9 After Jesus rose up early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons. 10 She went and reported to the ones who had been with him, who were mourning and weeping. 11 But even after they heard the news, they didn’t believe that Jesus was alive and that Mary had seen him.

12 After that he appeared in a different form to two of them who were walking along in the countryside. 13 When they returned, they reported it to the others, but they didn’t believe them. 14 Finally he appeared to the eleven while they were eating. Jesus criticized their unbelief and stubbornness [hardness of heart] because they didn’t believe those who saw him after he was raised up. 15 He said to them, “Go into the whole world and proclaim the good news to every creature. 16 Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever doesn’t believe will be condemned. 17 These signs will be associated with those who believe: they will throw out demons in my name. They will speak in new languages. 18 They will pick up snakes with their hands. If they drink anything poisonous, it will not hurt them. They will place their hands on the sick, and they will get well.”

19 After the Lord Jesus spoke to them, he was lifted up into heaven and sat down on the right side of God. 20 But they went out and proclaimed the message everywhere. The Lord worked with them, confirming the word by the signs associated with them.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Our first responsibility is actually to make the choice to believe in Jesus Christ (and God the Father) for salvation. He desires that everyone would come to Him ([1 Timothy 2:3-4](#)); although He knows not everyone will.

[John 3:16-18](#) (CEB)

God so loved the world that he gave his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him won't perish but will have eternal life. 17 God didn't send his Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved through him. 18 Whoever believes in him isn't judged; whoever doesn't believe in him is already judged, because they don't believe in the name of God's only Son.

Question: Have you believed in Him to be Born-Again for Salvation?

Response:

- B. We are to "work out our own salvation". This is not that we can saved ourselves (make ourselves right with God), but being "saved" in the parts of your being that don't yet align with how the Lord does things.

[Philippians 2:12-13](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Therefore, my loved ones, just as you always obey me, not just when I am present but now even more while I am away, carry out [work out] your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13 God is the one who enables you both to want and to actually live out his good purposes.

Question: What areas of your life do you need to acknowledge and have the Lord help you to make right?

Response:

- C. This goes along with the instructions for us to "renew our minds". There are strongholds in our minds that go against the way the Lord operates. Thus, we have to allow Him into our minds to help to think as He thinks.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-5](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Although we live in the world, we don't fight our battles with human methods. 4 Our weapons that we fight with aren't human, but instead they are powered by God for the destruction of fortresses [strongholds]. They destroy arguments, 5 and every defense that is raised up to oppose the knowledge of God. They capture every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

[Ephesians 4:21-24](#) (CEB)

Since you really listened to him and you were taught how the truth is in Jesus, 22 change the former way of life that was part of the person you once were, corrupted by deceitful desires. 23 Instead, renew the thinking in your

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



mind by the Spirit 24 and clothe yourself with the new person created according to God’s image in justice and true holiness.

Question: What thinking do you have that you need the Spirit to help you with?

Response:

- D. We are told to focus on the good, not on the bad. To keep our thoughts from “going down the rabbit hole” into those worst-case scenarios that our mind and imagination can lead us to.

[Philippians 4:8-9](#) (CEB)

From now on, brothers and sisters, if anything is excellent and if anything is admirable, focus your thoughts on these things: all that is true, all that is holy, all that is just, all that is pure, all that is lovely, and all that is worthy of praise. 9 Practice these things: whatever you learned, received, heard, or saw in us. The God of peace will be with you.

Question: Do you find it easier to think and dwell on the negative versus the positive?

Response:

- E. We are to address our own unbelief by exposing and removing it. And we can do this through fasting and prayer.

[Matthew 17:19-21](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Then the disciples came to Jesus in private and said, “Why couldn’t we throw the demon out?”

20 “Because you have [unbelief],” he said. “I assure you that if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you could say to this mountain, ‘Go from here to there,’ and it will go. There will be nothing that you can’t do. This kind [*of unbelief*] doesn’t come out except through prayer and fasting.

Question: What does prayer and fasting signify to you?

Response:

- F. Our flesh has a desire of its own. Yet we are told to be “living sacrifices”—not that we must sacrifice ourselves everyday, but that we were sacrificed once and for all time at the Cross when we believed. Our duty now is to live as someone that HAS sacrificed their “old self”, living now as a “resurrected new self” (raised with Christ). For we live as Jesus in the here and now ([1 John 4:17b](#)).

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



[Romans 6:13b](#) (CEB)

present yourselves to God as people who have been brought back to life from the dead, and offer all the parts of your body to God to be used as weapons to do right.

[Romans 12:1-2](#) (CEB)

So, brothers and sisters, because of God’s mercies, I encourage you to present your bodies as a living sacrifice that is holy and pleasing to God. This is your appropriate priestly service. 2 Don’t be conformed to the patterns of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your minds so that you can figure out what God’s will is— what is good and pleasing and mature.

Question: Do you consider your “old self” (flesh) already dead and without power in your life?

Response:

- G. Anything that goes against the Lord (and us in Him) is the Devil. We must resist those opposing, slanderous, maliciously false accusations (statements), and the injury faced by misrepresentation.

[James 4:7](#) (CEB)

Therefore, submit to God. Resist the devil, and he will run away from you.

Question: Do you find it hard to discern what you hear as being opposing and misrepresenting to the Lord?

Response:

- H. To help against those attacks by the devil, we must put on the Armour of God. He provides it for us (His Armour), but it is up to us to wear it!

[Ephesians 6:10-17](#) (CEB)

Finally, be strengthened by the Lord and his powerful strength. 11 Put on God’s armour so that you can make a stand against the tricks of the devil. 12 We aren’t fighting against human enemies but against rulers, authorities, forces of cosmic darkness, and spiritual powers of evil in the heavens. 13 Therefore, pick up the full armour of God so that you can stand your ground on the evil day and after you have done everything possible to still stand. 14 So stand with the belt of truth around your waist, justice as your breastplate, 15 and put shoes on your feet so that you are ready to spread the good news of peace. 16 Above all, carry the shield of faith so that you can extinguish the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is God’s word.

Question: Are you dressed for battle?

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



Response:

- I. We are to demonstrate the Gifts of the Spirit. We can operate in each and every one (as Jesus did), but we have to choose to listen to the Holy Spirit to gift each one out to the people who need it.

[1 Corinthians 12:4-11](#) (CEB)

There are different spiritual gifts but the same Spirit; 5 and there are different ministries and the same Lord; 6 and there are different activities but the same God who produces all of them in everyone. 7 A demonstration of the Spirit is given to each person for the common good. 8 A word of wisdom is given by the Spirit to one person, a word of knowledge to another according to the same Spirit, 9 faith to still another by the same Spirit, gifts of healing to another in the one Spirit, 10 performance of miracles to another, prophecy to another, the ability to tell spirits apart to another, different kinds of tongues to another, and the interpretation of the tongues to another. 11 All these things are produced by the one and same Spirit who gives what he wants to each person.

Question: Have you seen yourself ministering any Gifts of the Spirit to anyone?

Response:

- J. As our previous Bible Lesson shared, we are to submit to the Lord, humbly, and in trust. And when in partnership with the Gifts of the Holy Spirit, we will be doing "as on earth as it is in heaven" ([Matthew 6:10](#)). And though we have the freedom to do anything we want, we have to choose to submit all we do in line with the Lord.

[Romans 6:16](#) (CEB)

Don't you know that if you offer yourselves to someone as obedient slaves, that you are slaves of the one whom you obey? That's true whether you serve as slaves of sin, which leads to death, or as slaves of the kind of obedience that leads to righteousness

[1 Corinthians 6:12](#) (CEB)

I have the freedom to do anything, but not everything is helpful. I have the freedom to do anything, but I won't be controlled by anything.

Question: Who or what do you find yourself submitting to (obeying) over the Lord?

Response:

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



K. As our opening scripture says in [Mark 16](#), we must heal the sick, cast out demons, and all the things Jesus showed us to do (and more). All we have to do is believe, ask, and act.

[Luke 10:19b](#) (CEB)

I have given you authority over all the power of the enemy. Nothing will harm you

[John 14:12-14](#) (CEB)

I assure you that whoever believes in me will do the works that I do. They will do even greater works than these because I am going to the Father. 13 I will do whatever you ask for in my name, so that the Father can be glorified in the Son. 14 When you ask me for anything in my name, I will do it.

Question: Have you performed any of the same “signs and wonders” that Jesus demonstrated for us?

Response:

L. We manifest the Fruit of the Spirit ([Galatians 5:22-23](#)) by staying connected to Jesus and feed from His vine!

[John 15:1-8](#) (CEB) [PoG]

“I am the true vine, and my Father is the vineyard keeper. 2 He [raises up] any of my branches that don’t produce fruit, and he [cleanses] any branch that produces fruit so that it will produce even more fruit. 3 You are already trimmed because of the word I have spoken to you. 4 Remain in me, and I will remain in you. A branch can’t produce fruit by itself, but must remain in the vine. Likewise, you can’t produce fruit unless you remain in me. 5 I am the vine; you are the branches. If you remain in me and I in you, then you will produce much fruit. Without me, you can’t do anything. 6 If you don’t remain in me, you will be like a branch that is thrown out and dries up. Those branches are gathered up, thrown into a fire, and burned. 7 If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask for whatever you want and it will be done for you. 8 My Father is glorified when you produce much fruit and in this way prove that you are my disciples.”

Question: As a branch, are you drawing from the vine to produce much fruit?

Response:

M. We must also forgive—not only others, but ourselves. The Lord has completely forgiven you and the others who have hurt you or been hurt by you; so, let us also forgive as He did. Forgiving yourself can also let go of guilt.

[Colossians 3:12-14](#) (CEB)

Therefore, as God’s choice, holy and loved, put on compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience. 13 Be tolerant with each other and, if someone has a complaint against anyone, forgive each other. As the Lord forgave you, so also forgive each other. 14 And over all these things put on love, which is the perfect bond of unity.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



Question: Is it difficult for you to forgive others or even yourself?

Response:

N. We all make mistakes. To help us and others heal from pain caused, we need to admit to our mistakes.

[James 5:13-16](#) (CEB)

If any of you are suffering, they should pray. If any of you are happy, they should sing. 14 If any of you are sick, they should call for the elders of the church, and the elders should pray over them, anointing them with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 Prayer that comes from faith will heal the sick, for the Lord will restore them to health. And if they have sinned, they will be forgiven. 16 For this reason, confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of the righteous person is powerful in what it can achieve.

Question: Do you find that unforgiveness or guilt affects your mental, emotional, or physical health?

Response:

O. When we do find ourselves making mistakes, we must never be “troubled by a consciousness of sin” ([G677](#)).

[Acts 24:16](#) (CEB)

On account of this, I have committed myself to maintaining a clear conscience before God and with all people.

Question: Do you feel you focus more on your sins and trying not to; or on your Christ-given righteousness?

Response:

P. It is also from a clear heart that we should give, knowing that the Lord will supply for your giving.

[2 Corinthians 9:5-8](#) (CEB)

This is why I thought it was necessary to encourage the brothers to go to you ahead of time and arrange in advance the generous gift you have already promised. I want it to be a real gift from you. I don't want you to feel like you are being forced to give anything. 6 What I mean is this: the one who sows a small number of seeds will also reap a small crop, and the one who sows a generous amount of seeds will also reap a generous crop. 7 Everyone should give whatever they have decided in their heart. They shouldn't give with hesitation or because of pressure. God loves a cheerful giver. 8 God has the power to provide you with more than enough of every kind of grace. That way, you will have everything you need always and in everything to provide more than enough for every kind of good work.

OUR RESPONSIBILITY (WITH THE LORD)

Bible Study: Lesson 031



Question: Is it sometimes hard for you to give, especially when you feel you don't have enough to give?

Response:

Q. Prayer is a necessity. Remember, even Jesus prayed. So, let us pray too!

[Acts 4:29-31](#) (CEB)

Now, Lord, take note of their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with complete confidence. 30 Stretch out your hand to bring healing and enable signs and wonders to be performed through the name of Jesus, your holy servant." 31 After they prayed, the place where they were gathered was shaken. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began speaking God's word with confidence.

Question: Why do you think prayer is important?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Hebrews 5:11-13; 6:1-2](#) (CEB) [PoG]

We have a lot to say about this topic, and it's difficult to explain, because you have been lazy and you haven't been listening. 12 Although you should have been teachers by now, you need someone to teach you an introduction to the basics about God's message. You have come to the place where you need milk instead of solid food. 13 Everyone who lives on milk is not used to the word of righteousness, because they are babies.

So let's press on to maturity, by moving on from the basics about Christ's word. Let's not lay [all over again] a foundation of turning away from dead works, of faith in God, 2 of teaching about ritual ways to wash with water, laying on of hands, the resurrection from the dead, and eternal judgment.

Thoughts: We are always growing in our relationship with the Lord. We come to new or deeper understandings. We start living the Life of Christ in and through us. We do with Him the things He asks. We even commune with others in our progression.

In doing so, we become mature (growing) in our knowledge of the Lord—getting past the milk that is the "elementary principles of Christ" and eating real "meat". And as we grow, we can also immerse (baptise) others in the same correct knowledge of the Lord; thus, making disciples as we are instructed to do as well:

[Matthew 28:18-20](#) (CEB) [PoG]

Jesus came near and spoke to them, "I've received all authority in heaven and on earth. 19 Therefore, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing [immersing] them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 20 teaching them to obey everything that I've commanded you. Look, I myself will be with you every day until the end of this present age."

MONEY, TITHE, & GIVING

INTENTION:

If you felt guilty reading that title, then this is what you need to hear.

So, be free from that guilt!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Money, Tithe, and Giving.

Money is simply a tool. It doesn't matter how much or how little money you make or have—it is how you use it, and what your heart-condition is about money. And if the Lord personally wants you to give or to tithe or to save, then just do. This is not about some magic formula or doctrine, but about your personal relationship with the Lord.

Money is not evil; but it can be used for good and for bad. This is why the Lord asks us to be responsible in both His Kingdom affairs and the worldly affairs we deal in. He understands that money is a reality of this world and uses it for us and for others. If having a lot of money was a sin, then Solomon would be the greatest money-sinner ever.

When our focus becomes on the money we have (wealth) or do not have (poverty), then we are making it a god above the Lord. We cannot serve two masters (the Lord and money). Thus, we must always let Him provide and be our Financial Advisor; allowing Him to use us as vessels to contain or distribute as He desires. When we put money first, we limit God. When we put God first (seeking His Kingdom first), He provides for ALL our needs.

He wants to provide for us that we become a blessing and provider to others as Abraham was ([Genesis 12:2b](#)). Everywhere Abraham went, he left the place better off than it was when he got there; gaining more as he went.

Let us do the same by leaving things in a better condition than when we got there. And allow the Lord's blessings to flow through you as He provides for both the person giving and the person receiving. He instructs us to ask Him for whatever; so, ask. He will give in connection with His Kingdom responsibility. You just need to be responsible for what He gives you. When you learn to take care of little, then don't be surprised when He has you take care of much.

II. READING: [Luke 16:1-15](#) (NLT)

Jesus told this story to his disciples: "There was a certain rich man who had a manager handling his affairs. One day a report came that the manager was wasting his employer's money. 2 So the employer called him in and said, 'What's this I hear about you? Get your report in order, because you are going to be fired.'

3 "The manager thought to himself, 'Now what? My boss has fired me. I don't have the strength to dig ditches, and I'm too proud to beg. 4 Ah, I know how to ensure that I'll have plenty of friends who will give me a home when I am fired.'

5 "So he invited each person who owed money to his employer to come and discuss the situation. He asked the first one, 'How much do you owe him?' 6 The man replied, 'I owe him 800 gallons of olive oil.' So the manager told him, 'Take the bill and quickly change it to 400 gallons.'

7 "'And how much do you owe my employer?' he asked the next man. 'I owe him 1,000 bushels of wheat,' was the reply. 'Here,' the manager said, 'take the bill and change it to 800 bushels.'

8 "The rich man had to admire the dishonest rascal for being so shrewd. And it is true that the children of this world are more shrewd in dealing with the world around them than are the children of the light. 9 Here's the lesson: Use your worldly resources to benefit others and make friends. Then, when your possessions are gone, they will welcome you to an eternal home.

10 "If you are faithful in little things, you will be faithful in large ones. But if you are dishonest in little things, you won't be honest with greater responsibilities. 11 And if you are untrustworthy about worldly wealth, who will trust you with the true riches of heaven? 12 And if you are not faithful with other people's things, why should you be trusted with things of your own?

13 "No one can serve two masters. For you will hate one and love the other; you will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and be enslaved to money."

14 The Pharisees, who dearly loved their money, heard all this and scoffed at him. 15 Then he said to them, "You like to appear righteous in public, but God knows your hearts. What this world honours is detestable in the sight of God.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Offerings and sacrifices are something that has been done throughout the course of the Bible. It is also something we see in many cultures and other religions in a worship or appeasement of a god. Before it became a requirement of the Law for the Israelites to do, it was done voluntarily by Cain and Abel, as well as Job. What got Cain in trouble was his heart condition behind his offering—not because it was grain versus meat. Both grain and meat offerings are a pleasant aroma to the Lord ([Leviticus 2 & 3](#)). But even though Cain’s gift wasn’t accepted, the Lord did not remove His Grace and Love from Cain, protecting him with a mark, and blessing his son Enoch. Job, who lived shortly after the Flood, offered for his children without instruction from the Lord to do so.

[Genesis 4:1-5](#) (NLT)

Now Adam had sexual relations with his wife, Eve, and she became pregnant. When she gave birth to Cain, she said, “With the Lord’s help, I have produced a man!” 2 Later she gave birth to his brother and named him Abel.

When they grew up, Abel became a shepherd, while Cain cultivated the ground. 3 When it was time for the harvest, Cain presented some of his crops as a gift to the Lord. 4 Abel also brought a gift—the best portions of the firstborn lambs from his flock. The Lord accepted Abel and his gift, 5 but he did not accept Cain and his gift. This made Cain very angry, and he looked dejected.

[Hebrews 11:4-5](#) (NLT)

It was by faith that Abel brought a more acceptable offering to God than Cain did. Abel’s offering gave evidence that he was a righteous man, and God showed his approval of his gifts. Although Abel is long dead, he still speaks to us by his example of faith.

5 It was by faith that Enoch was taken up to heaven without dying—“he disappeared, because God took him.” For before he was taken up, he was known as a person who pleased God.

[Job 1:4-5](#) (NLT)

Job’s sons would take turns preparing feasts in their homes, and they would also invite their three sisters to celebrate with them. 5 When these celebrations ended—sometimes after several days—Job would purify his children. He would get up early in the morning and offer a burnt offering for each of them. For Job said to himself, “Perhaps my children have sinned and have cursed God in their hearts.” This was Job’s regular practice.

[Job 42:7-9](#) (NLT)

After the Lord had finished speaking to Job, he said to Eliphaz the Temanite: “I am angry with you and your two friends, for you have not spoken accurately about me, as my servant Job has. 8 So take seven bulls and seven rams and go to my servant Job and offer a burnt offering for yourselves. My servant Job will pray for you, and I will accept his prayer on your behalf. I will not treat you as you deserve, for you have not spoken accurately about me, as my servant Job has.” 9 So Eliphaz the Temanite, Bildad the Shuhite, and Zophar the Naamathite did as the Lord commanded them, and the Lord accepted Job’s prayer.

Question: Why do you think these people made offerings to the Lord before the Law mandated it?

Response:

- B. Abraham also gave without mandate to the priest, Melchizedek. This giving of 10% of the spoils of war is defined as a tithe: meaning ten percent of something ([H4643](#)). Abraham gave, not because it was a tithe, but because he gave from his heart to the man of God. There was no requirement to give 10% (he could have given 4% or 40%), but he chose from his own heart that it be 10% (thus, literally a tithe). We too also only see this done once, not again and again out of repetition, command, or tradition. It was a one-and-done matter. Thus, when we look at Abraham as tithing, it is not necessary for us to do the same. Likewise for Jacob's tithe. We don't have the Law requirement to tithe, nor do we have to tithe based on what Abraham or Jacob did.

[Genesis 14:17-20](#) (NLT)

After Abram returned from his victory over Kedorlaomer and all his allies, the king of Sodom went out to meet him in the valley of Shaveh (that is, the King's Valley).

18 And Melchizedek, the king of Salem and a priest of God Most High, brought Abram some bread and wine. 19 Melchizedek blessed Abram with this blessing:

“Blessed be Abram by God Most High, Creator of heaven and earth.

20 And blessed be God Most High who has defeated your enemies for you.”

Then Abram gave Melchizedek a tenth of all the goods he had recovered.

[Genesis 28:16-22](#) (NLT)

Then Jacob awoke from his sleep and said, “Surely the Lord is in this place, and I wasn't even aware of it!” 17 But he was also afraid and said, “What an awesome place this is! It is none other than the house of God, the very gateway to heaven!”

18 The next morning Jacob got up very early. He took the stone he had rested his head against, and he set it upright as a memorial pillar. Then he poured olive oil over it. 19 He named that place Bethel (which means “house of God”), although it was previously called Luz.

20 Then Jacob made this vow: “If God will indeed be with me and protect me on this journey, and if he will provide me with food and clothing, 21 and if I return safely to my father's home, then the Lord will certainly be my God. 22 And this memorial pillar I have set up will become a place for worshiping God, and I will present to God a tenth of everything he gives me.”

Question: Why do you think Abraham and Jacob gave 10% of what they had?

Response:

- C. The Laws of Moses commanded a tithe. But we must remember that the Law was not given to all the peoples of the earth, but to a selected group of people: the Israelites. Anyone outside of the Israelites (the “Uncircumcised” / Gentiles) were never under the Law; thus, it was not a requirement of them to tithe or do offerings and sacrifices. Furthermore, the entire world now lives post-Cross. Jesus Christ fulfilled the Law and all its curses, making it null and void for the Israelites (or anyone). Jesus was the tithe, offering, and sacrifice for all humanity.

[Leviticus 27:30-33](#) (NLT)

“One-tenth of the produce of the land, whether grain from the fields or fruit from the trees, belongs to the Lord and must be set apart to him as holy. 31 If you want to buy back the Lord's tenth of the grain or fruit, you must

pay its value, plus 20 percent. 32 Count off every tenth animal from your herds and flocks and set them apart for the Lord as holy. 33 You may not pick and choose between good and bad animals, and you may not substitute one for another. But if you do exchange one animal for another, then both the original animal and its substitute will be considered holy and cannot be bought back.”

[Galatians 3:10-14](#) (NLT)

But those who depend on the law to make them right with God are under his curse, for the Scriptures say, “Cursed is everyone who does not observe and obey all the commands that are written in God’s Book of the Law.” 11 So it is clear that no one can be made right with God by trying to keep the law. For the Scriptures say, “It is through faith that a righteous person has life.” 12 This way of faith is very different from the way of law, which says, “It is through obeying the law that a person has life.”

13 But Christ has rescued us from the curse pronounced by the law. When he was hung on the cross, he took upon himself the curse for our wrongdoing. For it is written in the Scriptures, “Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree.” 14 Through Christ Jesus, God has blessed the Gentiles with the same blessing he promised to Abraham, so that we who are believers might receive the promised Holy Spirit through faith.

[Ephesians 2:11-19](#) (NLT)

Don’t forget that you Gentiles used to be outsiders. You were called “uncircumcised heathens” by the Jews, who were proud of their circumcision, even though it affected only their bodies and not their hearts. 12 In those days you were living apart from Christ. You were excluded from citizenship among the people of Israel, and you did not know the covenant promises God had made to them. You lived in this world without God and without hope. 13 But now you have been united with Christ Jesus. Once you were far away from God, but now you have been brought near to him through the blood of Christ.

14 For Christ himself has brought peace to us. He united Jews and Gentiles into one people when, in his own body on the cross, he broke down the wall of hostility that separated us. 15 He did this by ending the system of law with its commandments and regulations. He made peace between Jews and Gentiles by creating in himself one new people from the two groups. 16 Together as one body, Christ reconciled both groups to God by means of his death on the cross, and our hostility toward each other was put to death.

17 He brought this Good News of peace to you Gentiles who were far away from him, and peace to the Jews who were near. 18 Now all of us can come to the Father through the same Holy Spirit because of what Christ has done for us.

19 So now you Gentiles are no longer strangers and foreigners. You are citizens along with all of God’s holy people. You are members of God’s family.

Question: Does being free of obligation (the Law) change how you view money, possessions, or giving?

Response:

- D. Jesus criticized the Pharisees for their tithing. The Pharisees never gave out of heart or want, but of ritual. They saw it as an accomplishment to brag about in their plenty when so many others were struggling to just provide an offering. Jesus even saw how the money exchangers took advantage of the poor and chased them out of the Temple twice ([John 2:13-16](#) and [Matthew 21:12-13](#))!

[Matthew 23:23](#) (NLT)

“What sorrow awaits you teachers of religious law and you Pharisees. Hypocrites! For you are careful to tithe even the tiniest income from your herb gardens, but you ignore the more important aspects of the law—justice, mercy, and faith. You should tithe, yes, but do not neglect the more important things.

[Mark 12:41-11](#) (NLT)

Jesus sat down near the collection box in the Temple and watched as the crowds dropped in their money. Many rich people put in large amounts. 42 Then a poor widow came and dropped in two small coins.

43 Jesus called his disciples to him and said, “I tell you the truth, this poor widow has given more than all the others who are making contributions. 44 For they gave a tiny part of their surplus, but she, poor as she is, has given everything she had to live on.”

[Luke 18:9-14](#) (NLT)

Then Jesus told this story to some who had great confidence in their own righteousness and scorned everyone else: 10 “Two men went to the Temple to pray. One was a Pharisee, and the other was a despised tax collector. 11 The Pharisee stood by himself and prayed this prayer: ‘I thank you, God, that I am not like other people—cheaters, sinners, adulterers. I’m certainly not like that tax collector! 12 I fast twice a week, and I give you a tenth of my income.’

13 “But the tax collector stood at a distance and dared not even lift his eyes to heaven as he prayed. Instead, he beat his chest in sorrow, saying, ‘O God, be merciful to me, for I am a sinner.’ 14 I tell you, this sinner, not the Pharisee, returned home justified before God. For those who exalt themselves will be humbled, and those who humble themselves will be exalted.”.

Question: Do you find it hard to give when it involves relying on the Lord for what you are giving away?

Response:

- E. Giving because we can and want to. This is why Abel, Abraham, Jacob, Job, and so many others outside the Law chose to give (whether a 10% tithe or any other amount or offering). We see this willingness to give from the heart through Paul’s message and through the early church group in Acts. Those people in the early church of Acts didn’t give out of obligation, nor even a tithe, but truly felt in their hearts that all that they had belonged to the Lord, not themselves. Thus, it was easy for them to share and give any or all they had for others. They demonstrated a freedom from the stronghold of riches; not relying on how much they had or didn’t have, but relying on the Lord as their provider. A person that solely relies on riches will have much difficulty experiencing the Righteousness, Peace, and Joy that is the Kingdom of God ([Romans 14:17](#)).

[Mark 10:23-25](#) (NLT)

23 Jesus looked around and said to his disciples, “How hard it is for the rich to enter the Kingdom of God!” 24 This amazed them. But Jesus said again, “Dear children, it is very hard to enter the Kingdom of God. 25 In fact, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter the Kingdom of God!”

[Acts 4:32-37](#) (NLT)

All the believers were united in heart and mind. And they felt that what they owned was not their own, so they shared everything they had. 33 The apostles testified powerfully to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God's great blessing was upon them all. 34 There were no needy people among them, because those who owned land or houses would sell them 35 and bring the money to the apostles to give to those in need.

36 For instance, there was Joseph, the one the apostles nicknamed Barnabas (which means "Son of Encouragement"). He was from the tribe of Levi and came from the island of Cyprus. 37 He sold a field he owned and brought the money to the apostles.

[2 Corinthians 9:7-15](#) (NLT)

You must each decide in your heart how much to give. And don't give reluctantly or in response to pressure. "For God loves a person who gives cheerfully." 8 And God will generously provide all you need. Then you will always have everything you need and plenty left over to share with others. 9 As the Scriptures say,

"They share freely and give generously to the poor. Their good deeds will be remembered forever."

10 For God is the one who provides seed for the farmer and then bread to eat. In the same way, he will provide and increase your resources and then produce a great harvest of generosity in you.

11 Yes, you will be enriched in every way so that you can always be generous. And when we take your gifts to those who need them, they will thank God. 12 So two good things will result from this ministry of giving—the needs of the believers in Jerusalem will be met, and they will joyfully express their thanks to God.

13 As a result of your ministry, they will give glory to God. For your generosity to them and to all believers will prove that you are obedient to the Good News of Christ. 14 And they will pray for you with deep affection because of the overflowing grace God has given to you. 15 Thank God for this gift too wonderful for words!

Question: Do you feel pressured to give or to tithe; instead of being allowed to give from your heart?

Response:

- F. The Lord is always looking out and providing for our needs. It can be easy to stray from that trust into a reliance on "getting" to try and bring comfort and peace to one's life. We must always look at money as a tool that can be used by the Lord, not as something to trust in over the Lord. So whether you have a great deal of money, or are lacking in it, our obligation is to still trust the Lord over the money. It's not a sin to be wealthy or poor. So, let's be content regardless of how much we have or do not have.

[Matthew 6:24-34](#) (NLT)

"No one can serve two masters. For you will hate one and love the other; you will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and be enslaved to money.

25 "That is why I tell you not to worry about everyday life—whether you have enough food and drink, or enough clothes to wear. Isn't life more than food, and your body more than clothing? 26 Look at the birds. They don't plant or harvest or store food in barns, for your heavenly Father feeds them. And aren't you far more valuable to him than they are? 27 Can all your worries add a single moment to your life?

28 “And why worry about your clothing? Look at the lilies of the field and how they grow. They don’t work or make their clothing, 29 yet Solomon in all his glory was not dressed as beautifully as they are. 30 And if God cares so wonderfully for wildflowers that are here today and thrown into the fire tomorrow, he will certainly care for you. Why do you have so little faith?

31 “So don’t worry about these things, saying, ‘What will we eat? What will we drink? What will we wear?’ 32 These things dominate the thoughts of unbelievers, but your heavenly Father already knows all your needs. 33 Seek the Kingdom of God above all else, and live righteously, and he will give you everything you need.

34 “So don’t worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will bring its own worries. Today’s trouble is enough for today.”

[Philippians 4:10-13](#) (NLT)

How I praise the Lord that you are concerned about me again. I know you have always been concerned for me, but you didn’t have the chance to help me. 11 Not that I was ever in need, for I have learned how to be content with whatever I have. 12 I know how to live on almost nothing or with everything. I have learned the secret of living in every situation, whether it is with a full stomach or empty, with plenty or little. 13 For I can do everything through Christ, who gives me strength.

[1 Timothy 6:6-10](#) (NLT)

Yet true godliness with contentment is itself great wealth. 7 After all, we brought nothing with us when we came into the world, and we can’t take anything with us when we leave it. 8 So if we have enough food and clothing, let us be content.

9 But people who long to be rich fall into temptation and are trapped by many foolish and harmful desires that plunge them into ruin and destruction. 10 For the love of money is the root of all kinds of evil. And some people, craving money, have wandered from the true faith and pierced themselves with many sorrows.

[Hebrews 13:5-6](#) (NLT)

Don’t love money; be satisfied with what you have. For God has said,

“I will never fail you. I will never abandon you.”

6 So we can say with confidence,

“The Lord is my helper, so I will have no fear. What can mere people do to me?”

Question: Do you find it hard to trust the Lord when it comes to finances?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Malachi 3:8-9](#) (NLT)

“Should people cheat God? Yet you have cheated me! “But you ask, ‘What do you mean? When did we ever cheat you?’ “You have cheated me of the tithes and offerings due to me. 9 You are under a curse, for your whole nation has been cheating me.”

[Acts 5:1-4](#) (NLT)

But there was a certain man named Ananias who, with his wife, Sapphira, sold some property. 2 He brought part of the money to the apostles, claiming it was the full amount. With his wife's consent, he kept the rest.

3 Then Peter said, "Ananias, why have you let Satan fill your heart? You lied to the Holy Spirit, and you kept some of the money for yourself. 4 The property was yours to sell or not sell, as you wished. And after selling it, the money was also yours to give away. How could you do a thing like this? You weren't lying to us but to God!"

Thoughts: Don't let people tell you that you are stealing from God by not tithing, or that if you don't give "as you're supposed to" you are cursed, or that if you "lie to God", that He has the right to kill you. Remember, you are not under the Law nor under a curse if you don't give or tithe—Christ took all those curses. For Ananias and Sapphira, as was discussed in Bible Lesson 004, God didn't strike them down; their guilt-laden hearts killed them. They literally "gave up their own spirits" ([Acts 5:5,10 AKJV](#)). If they had a clear conscience, their heart wouldn't have failed them even though they omitted the truth of their giving in their selfishness.

For me, one of the growth moments in my relationship with the Lord was Him helping me let go of the control money and things had on my life. At a point in my life, I was proud of finishing University, getting a nice job, a new car, and a lovely flat to live and furnish. But through all that, I did not manage my finances that well. I was sloppy with my spending and lacking in my saving. Regardless of how much I earned, I always seemed to live above my means. I needed to start trusting God the Father for my life and His ability to get me out of debt.

One way He did this was actually to get me to tithe. Yes, tithing is not a requirement, but that doesn't mean He can't use it as a lesson for someone. The lesson for me was letting go of money I never felt I had enough of to go towards ministry's that I felt fed from—including helping support missionaries.

Somehow, even though I was down to my last dollars, I was never without. He took care of me even though I gave 10% of my income. I learned that if He says give, to give—even if it's 100% or 10%. And this in turn helped my heart align with receiving what others came to give me through their giving or tithing (as the Lord led them).

One such time that we gave 100% was when Kelly and I left the United States to go to South Africa for our mission and ministry work. Not fully knowing what we were going to be doing, nor how we were going to support ourselves, we put all our trust in the Lord.

The Lord placed on our heart to give everything away that we owned (except for the clothes and few things that would fit in our luggage). We gave clothes, furniture, kitchenware, and more to people we knew or charities. We sold some things as a means to give value to the person we were giving to. But even then, the money we got from the sale, He had us donate to a family in need that also received some of our donated goods.

Thus, without collecting any money from our belongings, having them belong to the Lord instead, we were provided for by the Lord through the church we had called home in the States. We were blessed—not because we gave, but He gave out of His Heart as His children. We relied on Him in obedience to what He instructed.

Nevertheless, I am still learning; but always know He is providing—even when I don't see how I will get through the day, week, month, or season I am in.

LOVES

INTENTION:

Who and what do you “love”; and what kind of “love” is it?

Our goal is to *Agape* Love the Lord your God with all your being; and then to *Agape* Love others the same way—oh,
and that includes *Agape* Loving yourself!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Loves.

I use the word love as a plural: loves. This is because there are different variations of love in life. For the Bible, there are [over 35 variations in both the Hebrew and Greek Lexicons](#). However, we will focus on a few Greek variants with a better understanding of what God's Love is as Agape Love: [G25](#), [G26](#), and [G27](#) as is defined in [1 Corinthians 13:4-8a](#).

That this kind of Love exists is a proof that God exists, because: God = Love; and therefore: Love = God. Without Love, there is no God; and without God, there is no Love. This true nature of God's character as "Agape Love" is what we should strive to see, learn, and understand. When we see God through this Agape-Love-Reality, we open up so many more dimensions in our relationship with Him; and trust Him even more in each aspect of our daily lives. This trust helps in your ability to Agape Love Him back, in lieu of loving other things over God.

This Agape Love that the Lord demonstrates to us is one that is fully unconditional. He doesn't love us because we love Him or that we live right; He loves us because He cannot not love us. Yet, in this world, we tend to treat love with conditions: that I can only love if I'm treated with respect or without hurt. Furthermore, we tend to water-down love by using the same word for so many variations of love—we say "I love" to mom, dad, brother, sister, spouse, dog, cat, an outfit, a movie, a musician, artwork, nature, the food we eat, and more. Yet, as we will see, there are really different forms of love to that one word. Let's make sure we use the correct one for the correct purpose.

Additionally, we need to view love as neutral—in that it can be used in a positive way or negative way. We can in essence love things that can lead us into destruction, not build up. These include loving money, career, humanitarian services, mission work, outreach, or other things that can easily lead to a "look at me and how I'm loving" attitude. So, just because you can be doing something good like outreach work to feed the poor, it can be done in a selfish love, rather than a Love as for the Lord. We become "doing FOR the Lord" instead of "doing WITH the Lord".

Not all Bible translations distinguish between some of these types of love; including brotherly love ([G5360](#)), friendship / fondness love ([G5368](#)), and others. However, we will look at one translation that does make this distinction and helps us better understand Jesus's conversation with Peter:

II. READING: [John 21:15-19](#) (NTE) [PoG]

So when they had eaten breakfast, Jesus spoke to Simon Peter.

'Simon, son of [\[Jonah\]](#),' he said, 'do you love ([G25](#)) me more than these?'

'Yes, Master,' he said. 'You know I'm your friend [I'm fond of you] ([G5368](#)).'

'Well, then,' he said, 'feed my lambs.'

16 'Simon, son of [\[Jonah\]](#),' said Jesus again, for a second time, 'do you love ([G25](#)) me?'

'Yes, Master,' he said. 'You know I'm your friend [I'm fond of you] ([G5368](#)).'

'Well, then,' he said, 'look after my sheep.'

17 'Simon, son of [\[Jonah\]](#),' said Jesus a third time, 'are you [*even*] my friend [fond of me] ([G5368](#))?'

Peter was upset that on this third time Jesus asked, 'Are you [*even*] my friend [fond of me] ([G5368](#))?'

'Master,' he said, 'you know everything! You know I'm your friend [fond of you] ([G5368](#))!'

'Well, then,' said Jesus, 'feed my sheep.'

18 'I'm telling you the solemn truth,' he went on. 'When you were young, you put on your own clothes and went about wherever you wanted. But when you are old, you'll stretch out your hands, and someone else will dress you up and take you where you don't want to go.'

19 He said this to indicate the sort of death by which Peter would bring God glory. And when he had said this, he added, 'Follow me!'

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. God is Love. And this is not just any variant of love, but that specific Agape Love. This is how He Loves us, and asks that we Love Him and others with. It is something we have the God-Given ability to do. It is His provision to us, in us, and out through us! How we perceive His Love (type of Love) for us is often how we love others. But when we have a complete understanding of His Love, we in turn can let that Love flow freely out from us. Knowing that He Loves us gives us the trust we desire to enable us to also Love.

1 John 4:7-19 (NTE)

Beloved (G27), let us love (G25) one another, because love (G26) is from God, and all who love (G25) are fathered by God and know God. 8 The one who does not love (G25) has not known God, because God is love (G26). 9 This is how God’s love (G26) has appeared among us: God sent his only son into the world, so that we should live through him. 10 Love (G26) consists in this: not that we loved (G25) God, but that he loved (G25) us and sent his son to be the sacrifice that would atone for our sins. 11 Beloved (G27), if that’s how God loved (G25) us, we ought to love (G25) one another in the same way. 12 Nobody has ever seen God. If we love (G25) one another, God abides in us and his love (G26) is completed in us. 13 That is how we know that we abide in him, and he in us, because he has given us a portion of his spirit. 14 And we have seen and bear witness that the father sent the son to be the world’s saviour. 15 Anyone who confesses that Jesus is God’s son, God abides in them and they abide in God. 16 And we have known and have believed the love (G26) which God has for us.

God is love (G26); those who abide in love (G26) abide in God, and God abides in them. 17 This is what makes love (G26) complete for us, so that we may have boldness and confidence on the day of judgment, because just as he is, so are we within this world. 18 There is no fear in love (G26); complete love (G26) drives out fear. Fear has to do with punishment, and anyone who is afraid has not been completed in love (G26). 19 We love (G25), because he first loved (G25) us.

Question: What are ways we can recognise this kind of Agape Love from the Lord?

Response:

- B. With the Lord being this Agape Love, they tell us they Love us in this Love. As God, they Love you as a human! And as a human, we can Love them, others, and ourselves.

John 3:16-21 (NTE)

This, you see, is how much God loved (G25) the world: enough to give his only, special son, so that everyone who believes in him should not be lost but should share in the life of God’s new age. 17 After all, God didn’t send the son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world could be saved by him.

18 ‘Anyone who believes in him is not condemned. But anyone who doesn’t believe is condemned already, because they didn’t believe in the name of God’s only, special son. 19 And this is the condemnation: that light has come into the world, and people loved (G25) darkness rather than light, because what they were doing was evil. 20 For everyone who does evil hates the light; people like that don’t come to the light, in case their deeds get shown up and reproved. 21 But people who do the truth come to the light, so that it can become clear that what they have done has been done in God.’

[John 13:34-35](#) (NTE)

'I'm giving you a new commandment, and it's this: love (G25) one another! Just as I have loved (G25) you, so you must love (G25) one another. 35 This is how everybody will know that you are my disciples, if you have love (G26) for each other.'

[Romans 8:35-39](#) (NTE)

Who shall separate us from the Messiah's love (G26)? Suffering, or hardship, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or danger, or sword? 36 As the Bible says,

Because of you we are being killed all day long; we are regarded as sheep destined for slaughter.

37 No: in all these things we are completely victorious through the one who loved (G25) us. 38 I am persuaded, you see, that neither death nor life, nor angels nor rulers, nor the present, nor the future, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature will be able to separate us from the love (G26) of God in King Jesus our Lord.

[Ephesians 2:4-7](#) (NTE)

But when it comes to mercy, God is rich! He had such great love (G26) for us that 5 he took us at the very point where we were dead through our offences, and made us alive together with the king (yes, you are saved by sheer grace!). 6 He raised us up with him, and made us sit with him – in the heavenly places, in King Jesus! 7 This was so that in the ages to come he could show just how unbelievably rich his grace is, the kindness he has shown us in King Jesus.

Question: Do you feel the Lord Loves you so much, that He is not holding anything against you?

Response:

- C. The Lord even provides us with a definition of what Agape Love looks like. And even the importance of this kind of Love in all our actions—because “good” actions without Love is just prideful (about self) or useless to me. A “clanging gong and clashing cymbal” being just a means to draw attention to oneself.

[1 Corinthians 13:1-8a](#) (NTE)

If I speak in human languages, or even in those of angels, but do not have love (G26), then I've become a clanging gong or else a clashing cymbal. 2 And if I should have prophetic gifts, and know all mysteries, all knowledge, too; have faith, to move the mountains, but have no love (G26)—I'm nothing. 3 If I give all my possessions to the poor, and, for pride's sake, my very body, but do not have love (G26), it's useless to me.

4 Love's (G26) great-hearted; love (G26) is kind, knows no jealousy, makes no fuss, is not puffed up, 5 no shameless ways, doesn't force its rightful claim, doesn't rage or bear a grudge, 6 doesn't cheer at others' harm, rejoices, rather, in the truth. 7 Love (G26) bears all things, believes all things, love (G26) hopes all things, endures all things. 8 Love (G26) never fails.

Question: Is this how you see the Lord's Love towards you?

Response:

- D. When we stay connected to the vine that is Christ Jesus, we bear much fruit. And one of these Fruits of the Spirit is this exact kind of Love He requires of us. Thus, He gives us of Himself to be able to Love as He Loves.

[Galatians 5:22-25](#) (NTE) [PoG]

But the fruit of the spirit is love ([G26](#)), joy, peace, great-heartedness, kindness, generosity, [faith], 23 gentleness, self-control. There is no law that opposes things like that! 24 And those who belong to the Messiah, Jesus, crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. 25 If we live by the spirit, let's line up with the spirit.

Question: How can you let His Love manifest more in your life towards others (and even yourself)?

Response:

- E. We can share in so many varieties of love; expressing it for brothers and sisters ([G5360](#)), our children and spouses ([G5362](#) and [G5388](#)), others we have affection/friendship ([G5368](#)) for, showing hospitality love to stranger ([G5381](#) and [G5382](#)), and even loving goodness ([G5358](#)). But it should never be a love of something or someone more than a person's love for the Lord.

[Matthew 10:32-39](#) (NTE)

'So: everyone who owns up in front of others to being on my side, I will own them before my father in heaven. 33 But anyone who disowns me in front of others, I will disown that person before my father in heaven.

34 'Don't think it's my job to bring peace on the earth. I didn't come to bring peace – I came to bring a sword! 35 I came to divide a man from his father, a daughter from her mother, and a daughter-in-law from her mother-in-law. 36 Yes, you'll find your enemies inside your own front door.

37 'If you love ([G5368](#)) your father or mother more than me, you don't deserve me. If you love ([G5368](#)) your son or daughter more than me, you don't deserve me. 38 Anyone who doesn't pick up their cross and follow after me doesn't deserve me. 39 If you find your life you'll lose it, and if you lose your life because of me you'll find it.

[Matthew 22:37-39](#) (NTE)

'You must love ([G25](#)) the Lord your God', replied Jesus, 'with all your heart, with all your life, and with all your mind. 38 This is the first commandment, and it's the one that really matters. 39 The second is similar, and it's this: You must love ([G25](#)) your neighbour as yourself.

[Titus 1:8](#) (NTE) [PoG]

[Elders] must be hospitable ([G5382](#)), a lover ([G5358](#)) of goodness, sensible, just, holy and self-controlled.

[Titus 2:4](#) (NTE) [PoG]

That way, [the elders] can give sensible instructions to the [the young] on how to love ([G5362](#)) their husbands and [love ([G5388](#))] their children.

[Hebrews 13:1-2](#) (NTE)

Let the family continue to care for one another. 2 Don't forget to be hospitable ([G5381](#)); by that means, some people have entertained angels without realizing it.

[2 Peter 1:3-8](#) (NTE)

God has bestowed upon us, through his divine power, everything that we need for life and godliness, through the knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and virtue. 4 The result is that he has given us, through these things, his precious and wonderful promises; and the purpose of all this is so that you may run away from the corruption of lust that is in the world, and may become partakers of the divine nature. 5 So, because of this, you should strain every nerve to supplement your faith with virtue, and your virtue with knowledge, 6 and your knowledge with self-control, and your self-control with patience, and your patience with piety, 7 and your piety with family affection ([G5360](#)), and your family affection ([G5360](#)) with love ([G26](#)). 8 If you have these things in plentiful supply, you see, you will not be wasting your time, or failing to bear fruit, in relation to your knowledge of our Lord Jesus the Messiah.

Question: Can you discern the different kinds of love in your life and those around you?

Response:

- F. We must be careful though with the Love we are capable. We can end up loving things that are not directed in a Godly manner—and even opposes God. This is the love of self ([G5367](#)), pleasure ([G5369](#)), and money ([G5365](#) and [G5366](#)) over loving ([G5377](#)) the Lord.

[1 Timothy 6:6-10](#) (NTE)

If it's gain you want, though, there is plenty to be had in godliness – if it's combined with contentment. 7 We brought nothing into the world, after all, and we certainly can't take anything out. 8 If we have food and clothing, we should be satisfied with it. 9 People who want to be rich, by contrast, fall into temptation and a trap, into many foolish and dangerous lusts which drown people in devastation and destruction. 10 The love ([G5365](#)) of money, you see, is the root of all evil. Some people have been so eager to get rich that they have wandered away from the faith and have impaled themselves painfully in several ways.

[2 Timothy 3:1-7](#) (NTE) [PoG]

You need to know this: bad times are coming in the last days. 2 People will be in love ([G5367](#)) with themselves, you see, and [lovers ([G5366](#)) of] money too. They will be boastful, arrogant, abusive, haters of parents, ungrateful, unholy, 3 unfeeling, implacable, accusing, dissolute, savage, haters of the good, 4 traitors, reckless, puffed up, lovers ([G5369](#)) of pleasure rather than lovers ([G5377](#)) of God, 5 holding on to a pattern of godliness but denying its power. Avoid people like that! 6 This group, you see, includes those who worm their way into people's houses and ensnare foolish women who are overwhelmed with their sins and are pulled and pushed by all kinds of desires, 7 always learning but never able to arrive at the truth.

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

INTENTION:

Fruit comes naturally when connected to the source. He is our Vine, we are the branches from the Vine.

He supplies the nourishment for us to manifest His Fruit out from His Spirit in us.

All we need to do is stay connected and not hinder the source.

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Fruit of the Spirit.

Simply put, this is a gift to and for us to use. As humans, we can strive so hard to live a religious “Law” life out of our own ability and strength. Yet, as believers, we have His power and ability to live a life out of His strength!

Let us discern that difference and use His Fruit. And remember, a tree does not strive to bear fruit, that comes naturally—the tree strives to have sun and water to survive. When we stay connected to the vine of Christ, God the Father takes care of us... cleaning us and lifting us up so that we DO bear much fruit. He’ll never cut us off.

II. READING: Bearing Fruit / Fruit of the Spirit

[John 15:1-17](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes} [PoG]

I am the true grapevine, and My Father is the farmer. 2 Every branch in Me not bearing fruit—{He lifts it up. That is, He lifts it up to the trellis in the spring, training and tending it so that it bears fruit next season}. And every branch bearing fruit—He cleans it in order that it may bear more fruit. 3 You are already clean, because of the word which I have spoken to you. 4 Abide {Remain, Continue, Stay} in Me, and I in you. Just as the branch is not able to bear fruit from itself unless it is abiding in the grapevine, so neither are you able unless you are abiding in Me. 5 I am the grapevine, you are the branches. The one abiding {that is, having a living reciprocal relationship with Jesus} in Me and I in him—this one bears much fruit. Because apart from Me, you can do nothing. 6 If anyone is not abiding in Me [*that is to not believe in Him, as in not being Born-Again*]*—he was thrown outside like the branch, and was dried-up. And they gather them together, and throw them into the fire. And they are burned.* 7 If you abide in Me [*that is to believe in Him, as in being Born-Again*], and My words abide in you, ask whatever you want, and it will be done for you. 8 By this My Father is glorified—that you be bearing much fruit, and be disciples to Me. 9 Just as the Father loved Me, I also loved you. Abide in My love. 10 If you keep My commandments, you [are abiding] in My love—just as I have kept the commandments of My Father and am abiding in His love.

11 “I have spoken these things to you in order that My joy may be in you, and your joy may be made full. 12 This is My commandment: that you be loving one another just as I loved you. 13 No one has greater love than this: that one lay-down his life for his friends. 14 You are My friends if you are doing the things which I command you. 15 I no longer call you slaves, because the slave does not know what his master is doing. But I have called you friends, because I made-known to you everything which I heard from My Father. 16 You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you, in order that you may go and bear fruit and your fruit may remain, in order that He may give you whatever thing you ask the Father in My name. 17 I am commanding these things to you so-that you will love one another.

[Galatians 5:22-25](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, [faith], 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such things there is no law. 24 And the ones of Christ Jesus crucified the flesh, with its passions and desires. 25 If we are living by the Spirit, let us also be walking-in-line with the Spirit.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. The Fruit of the Spirit is Love. This Love is a unique for of Love that applies to a Love only existing from the Lord. It is called Agape Love ([G25](#), [G26](#), and [G27](#)) that differs from a love that is of siblings ([G5360](#)), or self ([G5367](#)), or fondness ([G5368](#)), or friendship ([G5384](#))—as we learned in the previous Bible Study (Lesson 033). This unconditional Love is His Love towards us always. He so longs for us to operate in that Love, He provides the ability to do so from Himself. We are instructed to not only Love others with this Love, but also Love Him back with this same Love. We Love Him back because He first Loved us ([1 John 4:19](#)).

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



[Philippians 1:9-10](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes} [PoG]

And I am praying this: that your love may be abounding still more and more in knowledge and all perception 10 so that you may be approving the things mattering {being worth more, and thus, being excellent, superior, or essential}, in-order-that you might be pure and [not troubled by a consciousness of sin until] the day of Christ.

[1 John 4:7-8](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes}

Beloved, let us be loving one another. Because {this love} is from God! And everyone loving has been born from God, and knows God. 8 The one not loving did not know God, because God is love.

Question: Have you ever found yourself Agape Loving someone unconditionally without understanding how?

Response:

- B. The Fruit of the Spirit is Joy. The Lord Themselves have joy. They celebrate when a person comes into the Kingdom, or we manifest His Gifts, or even just because we are His children—we are the treasure He gave all He had (Jesus) to redeem us. And, I feel, when we understand that joy He has for us, it gives us strength—for the Lord’s joy to us is our strength ([Nehemiah 8:10](#)). This is how the Disciples (and us) can experience joy even in times of persecution.

[Matthew 13:44](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes}

“The kingdom of the heavens is like a treasure having been hidden in the field, which having found, a man hid. And from his joy {of it}, he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.”

[Acts 13:49-52](#) (DLNT)

And the word of the Lord was being carried through the whole region. 50 But the Jews incited the prominent worshipping women and the leading men of the city, and aroused a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out from their districts. 51 But the ones, having shaken-out the dust from their feet against them, went to Iconium. 52 And the disciples were being filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

Question: Have you ever experienced joy in a time of trouble or doubt?

Response:

- C. The Fruit of the Spirit is Peace. Often our fear can be directed at God—that we literally fear Him in that He is out to punish us; because fear involves punishment ([1 John 4:18](#)). This is why He desires us to be at peace with Him as He has made peace with us ([Romans 5:1](#)). And when we see God correctly, we multiply that peace in us.

[James 3:17-18](#) (DLNT)

But the wisdom from-above is first pure, then peaceful, kind, yielding, full of mercy and good fruits, impartial, sincere. 18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace by the ones making peace.

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



[2 Peter 1:2](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

May grace and peace be multiplied to you in the [correct] knowledge of God and Jesus our Lord.

Question: When you learn about God, does it bring peace to you?

Response:

- D. The Fruit of the Spirit is Patience. The Lord is patient with us, longing for us to come to salvation ([2 Peter 3:9](#)). Jesus had to be patient as He experienced struggles as a human (relating to us). In some Bible translations, this word is called: longsuffering ([G3115](#)); but it doesn't mean to suffer for a long time, but to have patient endurance, slow to avenge wrongs. When we struggle, He is there to bear the fruit through us of patience.

[2 Corinthians 6:4-10](#) (DLNT)

... but in everything, as God's servants, commending ourselves in great endurance— in afflictions, in constraints, in distresses, 5 in beatings, in prisons, in disturbances, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; 6 in purity, in knowledge, in patience, in kindness, in a holy spirit, in sincere love, 7 in the word of truth, in the power of God; through the weapons of righteousness for the right hand and the left; 8 through glory and dishonour, through evil-report and good-report; as deceivers and true ones, 9 as being not-known and being fully-known; as dying and behold we live, as being disciplined and not being put-to-death, 10 as being grieved but always rejoicing; as poor but enriching many, as having nothing and holding-on-to all things

[Colossians 1:9-14](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

For this reason we also, from which day we heard, do not cease praying for you and asking that you may be filled with the [correct] knowledge of His will in all spiritual wisdom and understanding, 10 so that you may walk worthily of the Lord, toward total pleasing (of Him)—bearing-fruit in every good work and growing in the knowledge of God; 11 being empowered with all power according-to the might of His glory, toward total endurance and patience; with joy 12 giving-thanks to the Father having qualified you for your part of the share of the saints in the light, 13 Who delivered us out of the authority of darkness and transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love, 14 in Whom we have the redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

Question: Do you find it hard to hold back on "getting back" at someone who wronged you?

Response:

- E. The Fruit of the Spirit is Kindness. It is this goodness (kindness) of God that leads us to repentance ([Romans 2:4](#)). He continues to show His Kindness to us as we too can do the same.

[Ephesians 2:4-7](#) (DLNT)

But God, being rich in mercy, because of His great love with which He loved us, 5 even we being dead in trespasses, made-us-alive-with Christ—by grace you are saved— 6 and raised-us-with Him and seated-us-with

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



Him in the heavenly-places in Christ Jesus, 7 in order that He might demonstrate in the coming ages the surpassing riches of His grace in His kindness toward us in Christ Jesus.

[Colossians 3:8-17](#) (DLNT)

But now you also, lay-aside all these things—wrath, anger, malice, blasphemy, filthy-language from your mouth; 9 do not be lying to one another—having stripped-off the old person with his practices, 10 and having put-on the new person being renewed to knowledge in-accordance-with the image of the One having created him, 11 where there is no Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, free, but Christ is all things and in all persons.

12 Therefore, as chosen ones of God, holy and having been loved, put-on deep-feelings of compassion, kindness, humble-mindedness, gentleness, patience, 13 bearing-with one another, and forgiving each other—if anyone has a complaint against anyone. Just as indeed the Lord forgave you, so also you forgive. 14 And over all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfection. 15 And let the peace of Christ be arbitrating in your hearts—into which indeed you were called in one body. And be thankful. 16 Let the word of Christ be dwelling in you richly, with all wisdom teaching and admonishing each other with psalms, hymns, spiritual songs; with gratitude singing with your hearts to God. 17 And everything, whatever thing you may do in word or in deed, do all things in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving-thanks to God the Father through Him.

Question: If we always did the same kindness as the Lord, do you think the world now would be different?

Response:

- F. The Fruit of the Spirit is Goodness. The first Bible Study lesson (001) is that of the Nature and Character of God being “Good”. We must never forget this.

[Romans 15:13-14](#) (DLNT)

Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, so that you may be abounding in hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

14 Now I am convinced, my brothers—even I myself concerning you—that you yourselves also are full of goodness, having been filled with all knowledge, being able also to admonish one another.

[James 1:16b-19](#) (DLNT)

My beloved brothers, 17 every good gift-giving and every perfect gift-given is from-above, coming down from the Father of lights, with Whom there is no variation or shadow of turning. 18 Having willed it, He brought us forth by the word of truth so that we might be a kind-of firstfruit of His creatures. 19 You know this, my beloved brothers, but let every person be quick to listen, slow to speak, slow into anger.

Question: Do you see yourself as being full of goodness?

Response:

FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

Bible Study: Lesson 034



G. The Fruit of the Spirit is Faith. Faith is not what we demonstrate toward God (doing for Him to "move"), it's actually what God is doing through you. God manifested Himself through Jesus Christ ([Hebrews 12:2](#)), and it was credited to Jesus as Faith. Jesus demonstrated this for us and gifted us the exact same ability to do so as well. Thus, the manifestation of God in your life is literally Faith—being assured of a positive hope and proof of something we do not see going into it (becoming reality as the conclusion becomes visible).

i.e.: When the Lord has us approach a person who requires the healing of a crippled hand (as Jesus did), we go into the situation with assurance, of a positive hope that it will be healed, certain of the proof that it will, even though we won't see it until it happens.

[Hebrews 11:1](#) (DLNT) {From DLNT Footnotes}

Now faith is the assurance {That is, our subjective confidence about the future things. Or, substance, reality; that is, the objective present reality of the future things} of things being hoped-for {That is, future realities}, the conviction {Or, the certainty, the being-convinced. Or, the proof, the evidence, the thing-convincing} of things not being seen {That is, unseen realities, past, present, and future}.

Question: What manifests as Faith in your life?

Response:

H. The Fruit of the Spirit is Gentleness. There is no gentleness in coming at someone with a rod to beat them, but of a shepherd's staff that gently guides in love and patience. This gentle shepherd's staff is what is told to us to use ([Proverbs 13:24](#))... <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/raising-children-as-lord-raises-us.html>

[1 Corinthians 4:14-21](#) (DLNT)

I am writing these things not shaming you, but admonishing you as my beloved children. 15 For if you should have ten-thousand tutors in Christ, yet you do not have many fathers. For I fathered you in Christ Jesus through the good-news. 16 Therefore I exhort you—be imitators of me. 17 For this reason I sent Timothy to you, who is my beloved and faithful child in the Lord, who will remind you as to my ways in Christ Jesus, just as I am teaching everywhere in every church. 18 Now some were puffed-up as-if I were not coming to you. 19 But I will come to you soon, if the Lord wills. And I shall come-to-know not the talk of the ones having been puffed-up, but the power. 20 For the kingdom of God is not in talk, but in power. 21 What do you want? Should I come to you with a rod, or with love and a spirit of gentleness?

Question: How do you approach someone to help guide or correct them?

Response:

I. The Fruit of the Spirit is Self-Control. Self-control involves strength. However, we must be cautious as our flesh desires to be the "strong one". Yet, here we are gifted a strength above and beyond our flesh—one from the

Spirit within us that dwelt in Jesus Christ; who was obedient even unto death ([Philippians 2:8](#)). His flesh wanted to quit, but He maintained self-control to adhere to God's Will over His own flesh ([Matthew 26:36-46](#)).

[Titus 1:7-9](#) (DLNT)

For the overseer must be blameless as God's steward, not self-willed, not quick-tempered, not a drunken one, not a brawler, not fond-of-shameful-gain, 8 but hospitable, a lover-of-good, sound-minded, just, holy, self-controlled, 9 holding-on-to the faithful word in accordance with the teaching, so that he may be able both to exhort with healthy teaching and refute the ones contradicting.

[2 Peter 1:3-9](#) (DLNT) [PoG]

Because-of His divine power having granted us all things pertaining-to life and godliness through the knowledge of the One having called us by His own glory and virtue, 4 through which qualities He has granted us the precious and greatest things-promised in order that through these you might become sharers of the divine nature, having escaped-from the corruption in the world by evil desire; 5 and indeed for this very reason you having applied all diligence—in your faith supply virtue; and in your virtue, knowledge; 6 and in your knowledge, self-control; and in your self-control, endurance; and in your endurance, godliness; 7 and in your godliness, brotherly-love; and in your brotherly-love, love.

8 For these qualities being-present in you and increasing make you neither useless nor unfruitful in the [correct] knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 For the one in whom these qualities are not present is blind, being short-sighted, having forgotten the purification of his former sins.

Question: What are signs we are relying on the self-control of the flesh versus the Spirit?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 8:11-15](#) (DLNT)

Now the parable means this: the seed is the word of God. 12 And the people along the road are the ones having heard. Then the devil comes and takes away the word from their heart in order that they may not be saved, having believed. 13 And the people on the bed-rock are ones who are welcoming the word with joy when they hear it. And these do not have a root—they are ones who are believing for a time, and are departing in a time of testing. 14 And the seed having fallen into the thorns—these people are the ones having heard, and while proceeding are being choked by the anxieties and riches and pleasures of life. And they are not bringing-fruit-to-maturity. 15 And the seed in the good soil—these people are ones who, having heard the word in a good and fertile heart, are holding-on-to it and bearing-fruit with endurance.

Thoughts: Not having the fruit does not make you any less a Christian (or not a Born-Again believer). Out of the four seed examples, only the first one (along the road) are those who hear the Word of God and choose not to believe and are thus not Born-Again. The other three heard the Word and believed, being Born-Again. Of these three, one doesn't bear fruit (but remains a believer), the second shows some fruit (also remaining a believer). The last bears full amounts of ripe fruit (as a believer). As such, it is possible to believe, be Born-Again, and not show fruit.

GIFTS

INTENTION:

We have all been given the same Holy Spirit—as such, we have all been given the same Gifts.
Let us freely give and use those Gifts, as they are provided without debt (hence why it is called a gift).

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Gifts.

These Gifts from the Lord are not something you earn, but something you deserve—not because of your merit, but because of His Love to you as His Child. Just as He called Jesus His Son, so are you. And just as Jesus was freely given all these Gifts, so are you.

You are fully given the ability to operate in each and every one of these Gifts at any one time, multiple times, or together at times. This is what Jesus and the Disciples demonstrated for us. So, even though you may find yourself more comfortable or confident in a specific Gift (“in season”), you must not restrict the Lord’s Work in you to operate in any of the other Gifts (“out of season”)—[2 Timothy 4:2](#).

With these Gifts, remember, the greatest of these Gifts is the Lord’s Agape Love. As being the greatest, though, it does not discount or make any of the other Gifts irrelevant or discontinued. It says we must operate in all the gifts through the gift of Agape Love—that without performing these Gifts through Love, we are only calling attention to ourselves, not to the Lord. Hence how “a noisy gong or clanging cymbal” tries to make people pay attention to you, not the Gift from the Lord.

Let us not hide these Gifts or discount them, for they are a Testimony of and to the Lord!

The verses following are an overview of where we read about the Gifts, not looking in depth at what each Gift is, but looking at how Jesus and others operated in these Gifts to demonstrate for us that we too operate in them.

We are first going to look at that greatest Gift being Love, but also read about all the other Gifts given with verses that show both Jesus and others operating in these Gifts.

II. READING: [1 Corinthians 13:1-13](#) (EXB)

I may speak in ·different languages [tongues] of people or even angels. But if I do not have love, I am only a ·noisy [resounding] ·bell [gong] or a ·crashing [clanging] cymbal. 2 I may have the gift of prophecy. I may understand all ·the secret things of God [mysteries] and have all knowledge, and I may have faith so great I can move mountains. But even with all these things, if I do not have love, then I am nothing. 3 I may give away everything I have, and I may even give my body ·as an offering to be burned [to be burned]. But I gain nothing if I do not have love.

4 Love is patient and kind. Love is not ·jealous [envious], it does not brag, and it is not ·proud [arrogant; conceited; puffed up]. 5 Love is not ·rude [disrespectful], is not ·selfish [self-serving], and ·does not get upset with others [is not easily provoked/angered]. Love does not ·count up [keep a record of] wrongs that have been done. 6 Love ·takes no pleasure [does not rejoice] in ·evil [wrongdoing; injustice] but rejoices over the truth. 7 Love ·patiently accepts all things [bears all things; or always protects], ·always trusts [believes all things], ·always hopes [hopes all things], and ·always endures [endures all things].

8 Love never ·ends [fails; falls short]. There are gifts of prophecy, but they will ·be ended [cease; pass away]. There are gifts of ·speaking in different languages [or ecstatic utterance; tongues], but those gifts will ·stop [cease; fall silent]. There is the gift of knowledge, but it will ·come to an end [pass away; be set aside]. 9 ·The reason is that [For] ·our knowledge and our ability to prophesy are not perfect [we know in part/imperfectly and we prophesy in part/incompletely]. 10 But when ·perfection [the perfect; completeness; wholeness] comes, the ·things that are not perfect [partial] will ·end [pass away; be set aside]. 11 When I was a child, I talked like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I ·stopped [set aside] those childish ways. 12 ·It is the same with us [For...]. Now we see ·a dim reflection [obscurely; or indirectly], ·as if we were looking into a mirror [through a glass darkly], but then we shall see ·clearly [face to face]. Now I know only a part, but then I will know fully, as ·God has known me [I am fully known]. 13 So these three things ·continue forever [endure; remain]: faith, hope, and love. And the greatest of these is love.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. For by “God’s Grace” and “Christ’s Faith” we are saved—for they are Gifts to us ([Ephesians 2:4-10](#)). These Grace and Faith Gifts are the beginning of our Salvation; for without them, we have no hope for salvation. Yet, the Gifts do not stop there, but continue because of God’s ongoing Grace. And Christ’s “one Faith” is what we all have been given—this is the “amount of faith” we’ve been given.

[Romans 12:3-8](#) (EXB)

Because God has given me a special gift [his grace], I have something to say to everyone among you. Do not think you are better than you are. [Instead] You must decide what you really are [think sensibly; think with sober discernment] by [based on; in accordance with] the amount of faith God has given you. 4 [For just as] Each one of us has a [one] body with many parts, and these parts all have different uses [functions]. 5 In the same way, we are many, but in Christ we are all one body, and each part belongs to all the other parts [members]. 6 We all have different gifts, each of which came because of the grace God gave us. The person who has the gift of prophecy should use that gift in agreement with the faith [or in proportion to their faith]. 7 Anyone who has the gift of serving should serve. Anyone who has the gift of teaching should teach. 8 Whoever has the gift of encouraging [exhorting] others should encourage [exhort]. Whoever has the gift of giving to others should give freely [generously]. Anyone who has the gift of being a leader should try hard when he leads [lead diligently/enthusiastically]. Whoever has the gift of showing mercy to others should do so with joy [cheerfulness].

i. [Matthew 4:23-25](#) (EXB)

Jesus went everywhere in Galilee, teaching in the synagogues, preaching the Good News about [Gospel of] the kingdom, and healing all [or every kind of] the people’s diseases and sicknesses. 24 The news [fame] about Jesus spread all over [or as far as] Syria, and people brought all the sick to him. They were suffering from different kinds of diseases. Some were in great pain, some had demons [were demon-possessed], some were epileptics, and some were paralyzed. Jesus healed all of them. 25 Many people [Great crowds] from Galilee, the Ten Towns [Decapolis; *the area east of Lake Galilee that once had ten main towns*], Jerusalem, Judea, and the land across [beyond] the Jordan River followed him.

ii. [Acts 20:22-28](#) (EXB)

But now [indeed; behold] I must obey the Holy Spirit and [bound/compelled by the Spirit, I must] go to Jerusalem. I don’t know what will happen to me there. 23 I know only that in every city the Holy Spirit tells [warns; testifies to] me that troubles and even jail [chains and persecutions/afflictions] wait for me. 24 [But] I don’t care about my own life [consider my life worth anything]. The most important thing [or My only goal] is that I complete [finish] my mission [task; course; race; [2 Timothy 4:7](#); [Hebrews 12:1](#)], the work [ministry; service] that the Lord Jesus gave me [I received from the Lord Jesus]—to tell people [testify/witness to] the Good News [Gospel] about God’s grace.

25 “And now [look; behold], I know that none of you among whom I was preaching [proclaiming] the kingdom of God [kingdom] will ever see me [my face] again. 26 So today I tell [testify/witness to] you that if any of you should be lost, I am not responsible [I am innocent/clean of the blood of everyone; [Ezekiel 33:9](#)], 27 because I have told [have not held back from telling] you everything God wants you to know [or the whole purpose/plan/will of God]. 28 Be careful for [Keep watch over] yourselves and for all the people [flock] the Holy Spirit has given to you to oversee [made you overseers/guardians; [John 21:16](#)]. You must be like shepherds to the church of God, which he bought [or obtained] with the death of his own Son [with the blood of his own (Son); or with his own blood].

iii. [Ephesians 4:1-6](#) (EXB)

[Therefore,] As a prisoner ·for [because I belong to; or in] the Lord, I urge you to ·live [walk] in a manner worthy of the calling ·you have received [to which you were called]. 2 ·Always be [or Be completely] humble, gentle, and patient, ·accepting [putting up/bearing with] each other in love. 3 Make every effort to preserve the unity ·of [provided by; available through] the Spirit ·in [through] the ·peace that joins us together [bond of peace]. 4 There is one body and one Spirit, and God called you to ·have one hope [one hope of your calling]. 5 There is one Lord, one faith, and one baptism. 6 There is one God and Father of everything. ·He rules everything and is everywhere and is in everything [...who is over all and through all and in all].

iv. [Hebrews 3:12-14](#) (EXB)

So brothers and sisters, ·be careful [see to it] that none of you has an evil, unbelieving heart that will ·turn you away from [desert; forsake] the living God. 13 But encourage each other every day while it is “today” [*meaning the time of opportunity to be saved*]. ·Help [Encourage] each other so none of you will become hardened ·because sin has tricked you [by sin’s deception]. 14 [For] We all ·share in [or have become partners with] Christ if [indeed; in fact] we ·keep [hold firm] till the end the sure ·faith [conviction; confidence] we had in the beginning.

Question: Which do you function in?

Response:

- B. Though we can all operate in each and every Gift at any given time, we as humans tend to be more comfortable operating in the Gifts we find we have confidence in. As such, the Lord takes this into account and treats each of us as parts of a whole. Each strength we have that differs from someone else makes us a unique part of the “Body of Christ” giving us all the Gifts through the entire Body of believers. This is the meaning behind “not all” being a specific Gift-operator. This too, that each of us grow and mature in Christ differently as someone else—thus one person’s Gift-strength may be developed more than another; yet, make a whole.

[1 Corinthians 12:1-11; 27-31](#) (EXB)

Now, brothers and sisters, I don’t want you to ·misunderstand [be uninformed] ·about [concerning; or in regard to your question about] spiritual gifts. 2 You know the way you lived ·before you were believers [when you were pagans/Gentiles]. You let yourselves be influenced and led away to worship idols—things that could not speak. 3 So I want you to understand that no one who is speaking ·with the help of [by means of; in the power of] God’s Spirit says, “Jesus be cursed.” And no one can say, “Jesus is Lord,” ·without the help of [except by means of/in the power of] the Holy Spirit.

4 There are different kinds of gifts, but they are all from the same Spirit. 5 There are different ·ways to serve [ministries] but the same Lord to serve. 6 And there are different ·ways that God works through people [kinds of action; activities] but the same God works ·in all of us in everything we do [all things in all people]. 7 ·Something from the Spirit can be seen in [The manifestation/disclosure of the Spirit is given to] each person, for the common good. 8 The Spirit gives one person the ·ability to speak with wisdom [message/word of wisdom], and the same Spirit gives another the ·ability to speak with knowledge [message/word of knowledge]. 9 The same Spirit gives faith to one person. And, to another, that one Spirit gives gifts of healing. 10 The Spirit gives to another person ·the power to do miracles [works of power], to another ·the ability to prophesy [prophecy]. And he gives to

another the ability to know the difference between good and evil [discernment/distinguishing of] spirits. The Spirit gives one person the ability to speak in different kinds of languages [or ecstatic utterance; tongues] and to another the ability to interpret those languages [interpretation of tongues]. 11 One Spirit, the same Spirit, does all these things, and the Spirit decides what to give [distributes just as he wishes to] each person.

27 Together you [You; *the Greek is plural*] are the body of Christ, and each one of you is a part of that body. 28 In the church God has given a place first to [appointed/placed first] apostles, second to prophets, and third to teachers, then those who do miracles [acts of powers], those who have gifts of healing, those who can help others, those who are able to govern [lead], and those who can speak in different languages [or with ecstatic utterance; different kinds of tongues]. 29 Not all are apostles [Not all are apostles, are they? (*vv. 29–30 are all rhetorical questions assuming a negative answer*)]. Not all are prophets. Not all are teachers. Not all do miracles. 30 Not all have gifts of healing. Not all speak in different languages [or with ecstatic utterance; in tongues]. Not all interpret those languages [tongues]. 31 But you should truly want to have [eagerly desire; be zealous for] the greater gifts.

i. [John 6:12-14](#) (EXB)

When they had all had enough to eat [were filled/satisfied], Jesus said to his followers [disciples], “Gather the leftover pieces of fish and bread [pieces] so that nothing is wasted.” 13 So they gathered up the pieces and filled twelve baskets with the pieces left from the five barley loaves [[2 Kings 4:42–44](#); *Jesus’ miracle surpasses that of Elisha*].

14 When the people saw this miracle [sign] that Jesus did, they said, “He must truly be the Prophet [probably the “prophet like Moses” of [Deuteronomy 18:15–18](#)] who is coming into the world.”

ii. [Acts 4:8-10](#) (EXB)

Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them, “Rulers of the people and you elders, 9 are you questioning [examining] us [today] about a good thing [good deed; act of kindness] that was done to a crippled [lame; sick] man? Are you asking us who made him well [or how he was made well/healed]? 10 We want all of you and all the people [of Israel] to know that this man was made well by the power [in/by the name] of Jesus Christ from Nazareth [or the Nazarene]. You crucified him, but God raised him from the dead. This man was crippled [lame; sick], but he is now well [healthy] and able to stand here before you because of the power [name] of Jesus.

iii. [1 Corinthians 14:13-19](#) (EXB)

[Therefore] The one who has the gift of speaking in a different language [or ecstatic utterance; tongues] should pray for the gift to interpret what is spoken. 14 If I pray in a different language [or with ecstatic utterance; in a tongue], my spirit is praying, but my mind does nothing [is unfruitful]. 15 So what should I do? I will pray with my spirit, but I will also pray with my mind. I will sing [sing praises/psalms] with my spirit, but I will also sing [sing praises/psalms] with my mind. 16 [Otherwise] If you praise God [or pronounce a blessing] with your spirit, those persons there without understanding [or without the gift; or who are inquirers/seekers] cannot say “Amen” [*from a Hebrew term meaning “it is true”*; [1 Chronicles 16:36](#)] to your prayer of thanks, because they do not know what you are saying. 17 You may be thanking God in a good way [well enough], but the other person is not helped [edified; built up].

18 I thank God that I speak in different kinds of languages [or with ecstatic utterance; in tongues] more than all of you. 19 But in the church meetings I would rather speak five words I understand [with my mind] in order to teach others than thousands of words in a different language [or with ecstatic utterance; in a tongue].

Question: What do you believe about this?

Response:

- C. As we also see, Jesus was first an Apostle, but also operated as a prophet (speaking of the grace to come), evangelist (spreading this grace message around), pastor/shepherd (guiding His Disciples and others), and a teacher (educating and demonstrating to others the way Father God Works). Furthermore, we see His Disciples and Paul working in many of these as well—Paul being an Apostle to the Gentiles as well as a teacher. And these Gifts were given to both men and women ([Romans 16:7](#)) as there is neither male nor female in Christ and the same Spirit works with and in all who believe.

[Ephesians 4:7-13](#) (EXB)

Each one of us has been given the special gift of grace [grace; or gift], showing how generous Christ is [or in proportion to Christ's gift; according to the measure of Christ's gift]. 8 That is why it says in the Scriptures,

“When he went up [ascended] to the heights, he led a parade of captives [or took captives into captivity], and he gave gifts to people [[Psalms 68:18](#)].”

9 When it says, “He went up [ascended],” what does it mean? It means [...except] that he first came down [descended] to the earth [or lower regions, namely the earth; or the depths of the earth; (*probably refers to: 1. the Incarnation, though possibly, 2. Christ's descent to Hades after his death ([1 Peter 3:19–20](#)), or 3. Christ's descent through the Spirit at Pentecost ([Acts 2](#))*)]. 10 So the one who came down [descended] is the same one who went up [ascended] above all the heavens. Christ did that [...in order] to fill everything with his presence [all things]. 11 And Christ gave gifts to people—he made some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to go and tell the Good News, and some to have the work of caring for and teaching God's people [he himself gave apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors/shepherds, and teachers]. 12 Christ gave those gifts to prepare [...to equip] God's holy people for the work of serving, to make the body of Christ stronger. 13 This work must continue until we are all joined together in the same faith [or all reach unity in the faith] and in the same knowledge of the Son of God. We must become like a mature person [or the perfect Man; Christ], growing until we become like Christ and have his perfection [to the measure of the stature of Christ's fullness].

i. [Hebrews 3:1-6](#) (EXB)

So all of you [Therefore] holy brothers and sisters, who were called by God [are partners/partakers in a heavenly calling], think about [consider; focus on] Jesus, who was sent to us [or is our apostle; a commissioned messenger] and is the high priest of our faith [or whom we acknowledge/confess; of our confession]. 2 Jesus was faithful to God who appointed him just as Moses was faithful in God's family [household; house]. 3 Jesus has [deserves; is worthy of] more honour than Moses, just as the builder of a house has more honour than the house itself. 4 [For] Every house is built by someone, but the builder of everything is God himself. 5 Moses was faithful in God's family [all of God's house; [Numbers 12:7](#)] as a servant, and he told [testified to] what God would say in the future. 6 But Christ is faithful as a Son over God's house. And we are God's house if we confidently maintain our hope [or maintain our courage and confident hope].

ii. [2 Timothy 1:1,11](#) (EXB)

From Paul, an apostle [messenger] of Christ Jesus by the will of God. God sent me to tell about [...according to] the promise of life that is in Christ Jesus.

I was chosen [appointed] to tell that Good News [a preacher/herald] and to be an apostle and a teacher.

iii. [Revelations 1:1-3](#) (EXB)

This is the revelation of Jesus Christ [about Jesus Christ; or given by Jesus Christ; *the author could be intentionally ambiguous*], which God gave to him, to show his servants what must soon [quickly] happen. And Jesus sent his angel to show it [make it known] to his servant John, 2 who has told [witnessed; testified to] everything he has seen. It is the word of God; it is the message [witness; testimony] from Jesus Christ. 3 Blessed [Happy] is the one who reads the words of God's message [the prophecy], and blessed [happy] are the people who hear this message and do [keep; obey] what is written in it [*the context envisioned is a leader reading to a congregation*]. The time is near when all of this will happen [For the time is near].

Question: For those you know who operate with the Gifts of apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors/shepherds, and teachers... do they make you strong, unified, and mature; or do they make you feel worse about yourself?

Response:

- D. Once again, we are told that Love is the most important Gift. And thus, Speaking and Ministering will always edify the Body of Christ and Glorify God. We have to remember that it is the "correct knowledge" of the Lord that multiplies "grace and peace" ([2 Peter 1:2](#)).

[1 Peter 4:7-11](#) (EXB)

The time is near when all things will end [end of all things is near]. So think clearly [be serious/alert] and control [discipline] yourselves so you will be able to pray. 8 Most importantly, love each other deeply [earnestly], because love will cause people to forgive each other for many sins [covers a multitude of sins; [Proverbs 10:12](#); [Luke 7:46-47](#)]. 9 Open your homes [Be hospitable] to each other, without complaining [grumbling]. 10 Each of you has received a gift to use to serve others. Be good servants [stewards; managers] of God's various gifts of grace [[Romans 5:15-16](#); [6:23](#)]. 11 Anyone who speaks should speak words from God [or oracles from God; or as one bringing God's message]. Anyone who serves should serve with the strength God gives so that in everything God will be praised [glorified] through Jesus Christ. Glory and power belong to him forever and ever [[Colossians 3:17](#)]. Amen.

i. [Matthew 10:19-20](#) (EXB)

When you are arrested, don't worry about what to say or how to say it. [For] At that time you will be given the things to say. 20 It will not really be you speaking but the Spirit of your Father speaking through [in] you.

ii. [Acts 4:31](#) (EXB)

After they had prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. They were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke God's word [message] without fear [with boldness/confidence/courage].

iii. [Hebrews 6:9-11](#) (EXB)

·Dear friends [Loved ones; Beloved], we are saying this to you, but we ·really expect [are convinced/confident of] better things from you that ·will lead to [or accompany; come with] your salvation. 10 [For] God is ·fair [not unjust]; he will not forget the work you did and the love you showed ·for him [in his name] by ·helping [serving] his ·people [holy people; saints]. And he will remember that you are still ·helping [serving] them. 11 We ·want [desire for] each of you to ·go on with the same hard work [demonstrate the same zeal/diligence] ·all your lives [until the end] ·so you will surely get what you hope for [or until your hope is fulfilled/attained].

Question: What is a message the Lord wants you to share now?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [James 1:17-18;22-25](#) (EXB)

Every good ·action [or act of giving] and every perfect gift ·is from God [comes from above]. These good gifts come down from the ·Creator of the sun, moon, and stars [the father of lights; referring to God's creation of the heavenly bodies ([Genesis 1:14-19](#); [Psalms 136:7-9](#); [Jeremiah 31:35](#))], who does not change like their shifting shadows. 18 God ·decided [chose; willed] to give us ·life [birth] through the ·word of truth [true message] so we might be ·the most important [or the first of many; a kind of firstfruits; *firstfruits were the first crops to be harvested and guaranteed the coming harvest*; [Exodus 34:22](#); [2 Thessalonians 2:13](#); [Revelations 14:4](#)] of all ·the things he made [or his creatures].

22 ·Do what God's teaching says; when you only listen and do nothing, you are fooling yourselves [Be doers of the word, and not only hearers, deceiving yourselves; [Luke 11:28](#); [Romans 2:13](#)]. 23 Those who hear God's ·teaching [word] and do nothing are like people who look at ·themselves [their natural face; the face of their birth] in a mirror. 24 [For] They ·see their faces [gaze at themselves] and then go away and quickly forget what they looked like. 25 But ·the truly happy people are [blessed are] those who ·carefully study [look intently into; stoop down to look at] God's perfect law that makes people free [*probably refers to the law of Moses as it is fulfilled in Christ*], and they ·continue to study it [persevere in it]. ·They do not forget what they heard, but they obey what God's teaching says [not being a forgetful hearer but an active doer]. Those who do this will be ·made happy [blessed].

Thoughts: Not only are all these Gifts good and perfect from God, they are to be used—made manifest in your life. For keeping them at bay means you are not being a “doer”. Let's be doers and demonstrating ourselves as members of the Body of Christ.

ARMOUR OF GOD

INTENTION:

We must recognise that as we live on this earth, things are going to try and “steal, kill, or destroy”. It is a battle out there in the world, but also in our Spirit, Heart, Soul, Mind, and Body.

Let us “dress for battle” all the time. There is no reason to ever take off His Armour!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Armour of God.

Unlike Saul putting his armour on a young to-be-king David ([1 Samuel 17:38-40](#)), the Armour of God is specifically designed and created to fit us comfortably and with every piece fitting as it should. When we feel comfortable in what we wear, we become confident in doing what we do. This is as David saying that he wasn't comfortable in Saul's armour, but was comfortable in how he had done battle before—with a staff, shepherd's bag, and sling. And it was wearing what he was accustomed to that he slew the giant, Goliath, before him ([1 Samuel 17:45-51](#)).

Does that mean David went into every battle without armour? No. He developed his own armour that fit him for the right battle and weapons used. The Lord trained him for each battle, for each weapon, and armour used ([Psalms 18](#)).

What armour are you wearing?

Even if the armour doesn't fit or protect as it should, sometimes we get used to it...that is our flesh and its perceived strength or protection. We think we can handle the battle and the attack in our own ability by what we ourselves have built around us—relying maybe on money, career, position, status, fame, a vice, or even people we have surrounded ourselves with. They may hold up for a while, even deceiving us in the process; but they will never compare to what the Lord can and does provide you. You just have to put on HIS Armour (an instruction to us to do).

This Armour is the same as He Himself wears, designed to specifically fit you, no matter what size, stature, ability, age, gender, denomination, etc. You actually get what works for God! Let's read... and break down each piece of it.

II. READING: [Ephesians 6:1-20](#) (NIV)

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. 11 Put on the full Armour of God, so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. 12 For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. 13 Therefore put on the full Armour of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. 14 Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, 15 and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. 16 In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. 17 Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the Lord's people. 19 Pray also for me, that whenever I speak, words may be given me so that I will fearlessly make known the mystery of the gospel, 20 for which I am an ambassador in chains. Pray that I may declare it fearlessly, as I should.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. The "Belt of Truth". This is something we have talked about in the context of having the "correct knowledge" of God. Anything other than that is not the full Truth. The first Truth and most valuable Truth is that of Jesus Christ. When we hold onto this correct truth, our whole Armour stays in place with this belt, resting properly, distributing the weight of the full armour that it does not feel as a burden—it feels freeing ([John 8:32](#)).

[John 1:14-18](#) (NIV)

The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the one and only Son, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.

15 (John testified concerning him. He cried out, saying, “This is the one I spoke about when I said, ‘He who comes after me has surpassed me because he was before me.’”) 16 Out of his fullness we have all received grace in place of grace already given. 17 For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. 18 No one has ever seen God, but the one and only Son, who is himself God and is in closest relationship with the Father, has made him known.

[1 Thessalonians 2:13](#) (NIV)

And we also thank God continually because, when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as a human word, but as it actually is, the word of God, which is indeed at work in you who believe.

[1 Timothy 2:3-7](#) (NIV)

This is good, and pleases God our Saviour, 4 who wants all people to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth. 5 For there is one God and one mediator between God and mankind, the man Christ Jesus, 6 who gave himself as a ransom for all people. This has now been witnessed to at the proper time. 7 And for this purpose I was appointed a herald and an apostle—I am telling the truth, I am not lying—and a true and faithful teacher of the Gentiles.

Question: What is the Truth to you... what do you hold as True when it comes to the Lord?

Response:

- B. The “Breastplate of Righteousness”. As we have learned before in another Bible Lesson, Righteousness is not what we do or don’t do, it is a state of being—a title given to us (inherited from Him) upon believing in Christ Jesus. When we have this ingrained surety that we cannot gain or lose our Right-Standing with God, we can face the battle with confidence. That even if we make a mistake, our Righteousness is not in jeopardy; nor can anyone convince us that it is at risk (whether the Devil or our own Flesh). That is, this Breastplate guards our heart that might “condemn us” ([1 John 3:20-21](#)) or tries to keep us from having a clear conscience “not troubled by a consciousness of sin” ([Acts 24:16](#)). When it is guarded in Righteousness, we find life and health for our body.

[Proverbs 4:20-23](#) (NIV)

20 My son, pay attention to what I say; turn your ear to my words.
21 Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart;
22 for they are life to those who find them and health to one’s whole body.
23 Above all else, guard your heart, for everything you do flows from it.

[Matthew 6:19-21; 28-34](#) (NIV)

“Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moths and vermin destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. 20 But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moths and vermin do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. 21 For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.”

“And why do you worry about clothes? See how the flowers of the field grow. They do not labour or spin. 29 Yet I tell you that not even Solomon in all his splendour was dressed like one of these. 30 If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, will he not much more clothe you—you of little faith? 31 So do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall

we wear?’ 32 For the pagans run after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them. 33 But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well. 34 Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about itself. Each day has enough trouble of its own.”

[Romans 5:17-21](#) (NIV)

For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive God’s abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ!

18 Consequently, just as one trespass resulted in condemnation for all people, so also one righteous act resulted in justification and life for all people. 19 For just as through the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners, so also through the obedience of the one man the many will be made righteous.

20 The law was brought in so that the trespass might increase. But where sin increased, grace increased all the more, 21 so that, just as sin reigned in death, so also grace might reign through righteousness to bring eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord

Question: Do you struggle with the Gift of Christ’s Righteousness upon you as a believer?

Response:

- C. Having “your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the Gospel of Peace”. When Moses approached the Burning Bush, the Lord spoke to Him to remove his sandals ([Exodus 3:5-6](#)). This signified that not only was it a Holy Place, but that Moses need not fear in the risk that he would run away. Thus, knowing we have Peace with God, we do not have to fear God ([Romans 5:1](#)) and fear any punishment from Him ([1 John 4:17-18](#)). How joyous is it to know that this Gospel brings freedom, healing, and favour—allowing us to stand in readiness for anything coming our way. That when we have done all we can to stand our ground, we can stay standing through Him.

[Luke 4:16-21](#) (NIV)

He went to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and on the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue, as was his custom. He stood up to read, 17 and the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him. Unrolling it, he found the place where it is written:

18 “The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to proclaim good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to set the oppressed free, 19 to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favour.”

20 Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 He began by saying to them, “Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing.”

[Romans 1:16-17](#) (NIV)

For I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God that brings salvation to everyone who believes: first to the Jew, then to the Gentile. 17 For in the gospel the righteousness of God is revealed—a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: “The righteous will live by faith.”

Question: Does the Gospel bring you Peace?

Response:

- D. “Take up the Shield of Faith.” This faith is that which Christ Jesus mastered and gifted us ([Hebrews 12:2](#)). Imagine Jesus Himself standing in front of you shielding you from all those “fiery arrows”. For when we manifest God in our lives (what Faith is), we overcome the Devil and any evil against us. Because as we manifest God, no evil can be present. *i.e. When a person is suffering sickness, and they are healed though the power of Christ, there is nothing but God manifesting in them as all evil must flee.*

[Romans 12:3](#) (NIV)

For by the grace given me I say to every one of you: Do not think of yourself more highly than you ought, but rather think of yourself with sober judgment, in accordance with the faith God has distributed to each of you.

[Galatians 2:16-22](#) (NIV) [PoG]

know that a person is not justified by the works of the law, but by [the Faith of] Jesus Christ. So we, too, have put our faith in Christ Jesus that we may be justified by [the Faith of] Christ and not by the works of the law, because by the works of the law no one will be justified.

17 “But if, in seeking to be justified in Christ, we Jews find ourselves also among the sinners, doesn’t that mean that Christ promotes sin? Absolutely not! 18 If I rebuild what I destroyed, then I really would be a lawbreaker.

19 “For through the law I died to the law so that I might live for God. 20 I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I now live in the body, I live by [the Faith of the] Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. 21 I do not set aside the grace of God, for if righteousness could be gained through the law, Christ died for nothing!”

[Ephesians 2:4-10](#) (NIV) [PoG]

But because of his great love for us, God, who is rich in mercy, 5 made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in transgressions—it is by grace you have been saved. 6 And God raised us up with Christ and seated us with him in the heavenly realms in Christ Jesus, 7 in order that in the coming ages he might show the incomparable riches of his grace, expressed in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus. 8 For it is by grace you have been saved, through [His] faith—and this is not from yourselves, [they are gifts] of God— 9 not by works, so that no one can boast. 10 For we are God’s handiwork, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do.

Question: Do you rely on your own faith, or Christ’s Faith?

Response:

E. The “Helmet of Salvation”. When we protect our mind from the error that is the doubting of our Salvation, we can think clearly in battle. This Helmet is the “Hope of Salvation” ([1 Thessalonians 5:8](#)). This Helmet of Hope is there to protect us from the bombardment our mind faces each day living in this world. The world tries to convince us that Jesus Christ is not real... that God does not exist. That living by His Faith can't be true. We are attacked every day in the spiritual realm against our belief in Him to try and convince us it is not all true. This Helmet, because we have a Hopeful Expectation, protects us against that unbelief.

[Acts 4:8-12](#) (NIV)

Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them: “Rulers and elders of the people! 9 If we are being called to account today for an act of kindness shown to a man who was lame and are being asked how he was healed, 10 then know this, you and all the people of Israel: It is by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified but whom God raised from the dead, that this man stands before you healed. 11 Jesus is

“the stone you builders rejected, which has become the cornerstone.”

12 Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to mankind by which we must be saved.”

[Romans 10:9-10](#) (NIV)

If you declare with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. 10 For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you profess your faith and are saved. 11 As Scripture says, “Anyone who believes in him will never be put to shame.” 12 For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile—the same Lord is Lord of all and richly blesses all who call on him, 13 for, “Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.”

[1 Peter 1:3-9](#) (NIV)

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 and into an inheritance that can never perish, spoil, or fade. This inheritance is kept in heaven for you, 5 who through faith are shielded by God’s power until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time. 6 In all this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while you may have had to suffer grief in all kinds of trials. 7 These have come so that the proven genuineness of your faith—of greater worth than gold, which perishes even though refined by fire—may result in praise, glory and honour when Jesus Christ is revealed. 8 Though you have not seen him, you love him; and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him and are filled with an inexpressible and glorious joy, 9 for you are receiving the end result of your faith, the salvation of your souls.

Question: Are you convinced of your Salvation through Christ Jesus?

Response:

F. The “Sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God”. Jesus is the Word made flesh, and it is He who pierces to the core of our being. We can use the Word for ourselves (digging out any flaming arrows that get through the armour); or to use the Word to strike down anything not of the Lord coming at us or in someone else.

[John 1:1-5](#) (NIV)

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was with God in the beginning. 3 Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. 4 In him was life, and that life was the light of all mankind. 5 The light shines in the darkness, and the darkness has not overcome it.

[Hebrews 4:12-13](#) (NIV)

For the word of God is alive and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. 13 Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account.

Question: Do you use the Word of God to strike down any opposition against you?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Ephesians 2:1-3](#) (NIV)

As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, 2 in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient. 3 All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our flesh and following its desires and thoughts. Like the rest, we were by nature deserving of wrath.

[Ephesians 4:17-24](#) (NIV) [PoG]

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. 18 They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts. 19 Having lost all sensitivity, they have given themselves over to sensuality so as to indulge in every kind of impurity, and they are full of greed.

20 That, however, is not the way of life you learned 21 when you heard about Christ and were taught in him in accordance with the truth that is in Jesus. 22 You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; 23 to be made new in the [spirit] of your minds; 24 and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

[1 Peter 5:8-9](#) (NIV)

Be alert and of sober mind. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. 9 Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that the family of believers throughout the world is undergoing the same kind of sufferings.

Thoughts: The spiritual forces at work wage war on your mind. As radio frequencies flood the air from broadcast towers, so does the devil flood the spiritual airwaves with his deceptions to try and destroy us. It is only the sound of his roar that tries to devour us—this is just intimidation tactics that cannot harm us. Our flesh hears this because of this world we are born in; but we are Born-Again and hear a new voice. This is why we can stand firm when we hear the lion's roar and not fear, for his strength and power is removed ([Revelations 12:10-11](#)).

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

INTENTION:

There's another one of those guilt-laden words: Repentance.
But don't worry, we'll just change our thinking and let go of any guilt-conscience.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at what is Repentance and our Conscience.

We tackled the issue of The Mind (Lesson 014) and The Heart (Lesson 016); both of which relate to our Conscience and what Repentance means to us. We will even be reading the same verses from then (Lesson 016) due to this Heart condition connection.

Because the Law makes sin known to us, it focuses our heart and mind onto sin. We see this leading into the ministry of Jesus (who came to set us free from the Law and a sin-conscience). When you are trained in the Law, you are trained to see and judge by sin—even our own sins. Jesus doesn't ever condemn us, only our conscience does. This can be seen in how the Pharisees were "convicted by their own conscience" when they turned away from stoning the woman caught in adultery ([John 8:1-12](#)).

Because the Law and Law-driven sacrifices could never make a person fully clean from sin, Jesus came as the ultimate sin-sacrifice to completely free us of the sins of the flesh; also freeing us from the guilt and condemnation (sin-conscience) that can infest our hearts and minds.

If you try to live by the Law (find righteousness by it), you will fail by it. If you are always seeking forgiveness (sacrifice), you will only be "reminded of your sins". Which is why we must fully embrace and accept His total forgiveness of our sins that is "once and for all" time; giving us, thus, a righteous-conscience.

II. READING: [Hebrews 10:1-23](#) (GNT) [PoG]

The Jewish Law is not a full and faithful model of the real things; it is only a faint outline of the good things to come. The same sacrifices are offered forever, year after year. How can the Law, then, by means of these sacrifices make perfect the people who come to God? 2 If the people worshiping God had really been purified from their sins, they would not feel guilty [have no conscience] of sin anymore, and all sacrifices would stop. 3 As it is, however, the sacrifices serve year after year to remind people of their sins. 4 For the blood of bulls and goats can never take away sins.

5 For this reason, when Christ was about to come into the world, he said to God:

"You do not want sacrifices and offerings, but you have prepared a body for me.

6 You are not pleased with animals burned whole on the altar or with sacrifices to take away sins.

7 Then I said, 'Here I am, to do your will, O God, just as it is written of me in the book of the Law.'"

8 First he said, "You neither want nor are you pleased with sacrifices and offerings or with animals burned on the altar and the sacrifices to take away sins." He said this even though all these sacrifices are offered according to the Law. 9 Then he said, "Here I am, O God, to do your will." So God does away with all the old sacrifices and puts the sacrifice of Christ in their place. 10 Because Jesus Christ did what God wanted him to do, we are all purified from sin by the offering that he made of his own body once and for all.

11 Every Jewish priest performs his services every day and offers the same sacrifices many times; but these sacrifices can never take away sins. 12 Christ, however, offered one sacrifice for sins, an offering that is effective forever, and then he sat down at the right side of God. 13 There he now waits until God puts his enemies as a footstool under his feet. 14 With one sacrifice, then, he has made perfect forever those who are purified from sin.

15 And the Holy Spirit also gives us his witness. First he says,

16 "This is the covenant that I will make with them in the days to come, says the Lord:

I will put my laws in their hearts and write them on their minds."

17 And then he says, "I will not remember their sins and evil deeds any longer." 18 So when these have been forgiven, an offering to take away sins is no longer needed.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



19 We have, then, my friends, complete freedom to go into the Most Holy Place by means of the death of Jesus. 20 He opened for us a new way, a living way, through the curtain—that is, through his own body. 21 We have a great priest in charge of the house of God. 22 So let us come near to God with a sincere heart and a sure faith, with hearts that have been purified from a guilty [sin] conscience and with bodies washed with clean water. 23 Let us hold on firmly to the hope we profess, because we can trust God to keep his promise.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. What does it mean that, “I will put my laws in their hearts and write them on their minds”? If we know the Law of Moses always brought death, we have to look at the ‘law’ that brings life: the law of the Spirit and Love!

[Romans 7:4b-6](#) (GNT)

As far as the Law is concerned, you also have died because you are part of the body of Christ; and now you belong to him who was raised from death in order that we might be useful in the service of God. 5 For when we lived according to our human nature, the sinful desires stirred up by the Law were at work in our bodies, and all we did ended in death. 6 Now, however, we are free from the Law, because we died to that which once held us prisoners. No longer do we serve in the old way of a written law, but in the new way of the Spirit.

[2 Corinthians 3:3-9](#) (GNT)

It is clear that Christ himself wrote this letter and sent it by us. It is written, not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, and not on stone tablets but on human hearts.

4 We say this because we have confidence in God through Christ. 5 There is nothing in us that allows us to claim that we are capable of doing this work. The capacity we have comes from God; 6 it is he who made us capable of serving the new covenant, which consists not of a written law but of the Spirit. The written law brings death, but the Spirit gives life.

7 The Law was carved in letters on stone tablets, and God's glory appeared when it was given. Even though the brightness on Moses' face was fading, it was so strong that the people of Israel could not keep their eyes fixed on him. If the Law, which brings death when it is in force, came with such glory, 8 how much greater is the glory that belongs to the activity of the Spirit! 9 The system which brings condemnation was glorious; how much more glorious is the activity which brings salvation!

[1 John 3:22-24](#) (GNT)

We receive from him whatever we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him. 23 What he commands is that we believe in his Son Jesus Christ and love one another, just as Christ commanded us. 24 Those who obey God's commands live in union with God and God lives in union with them. And because of the Spirit that God has given us we know that God lives in union with us.

Question: Which “law” is in your heart and on your mind?

Response:

- B. Our conscience is the filter we place on our heart and mind (a veil). The Temple (Tabernacle) had two veils: one into the Holy Place (separating it from outer court)—representing our mind; the other into the Holy of Holies

(separating it from the Holy Place)—representing our heart. These veils block the free open-access we have to the Father; furthermore, it keeps us from achieving that “correct knowledge” of Love that is the Lord (God the Father, His Son Christ Jesus, and the Holy Spirit). The veil over our heart is “unbelief” and the veil over our minds is “strongholds”. These veils also hindering our Love back to Him—veils keeping us from Loving the Lord with ALL our heart, soul, and mind.

[Matthew 22:36-40](#) (GNT)

“Teacher,” he asked, “which is the greatest commandment in the Law?”

37 Jesus answered, “‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ 38 This is the greatest and the most important commandment. 39 The second most important commandment is like it: ‘Love your neighbour as you love yourself.’ 40 The whole Law of Moses and the teachings of the prophets depend on these two commandments.”

[2 Corinthians 3:12-18](#) (GNT)

Because we have this hope, we are very bold. 13 We are not like Moses, who had to put a veil over his face so that the people of Israel would not see the brightness fade and disappear. 14 Their minds, indeed, were closed; and to this very day their minds are covered with the same veil as they read the books of the old covenant. The veil is removed only when a person is joined to Christ. 15 Even today, whenever they read the Law of Moses, the veil still covers their minds. 16 But it can be removed, as the scripture says about Moses: “His veil was removed when he turned to the Lord.” 17 Now, “the Lord” in this passage is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is present, there is freedom. 18 All of us, then, reflect the glory of the Lord with uncovered faces; and that same glory, coming from the Lord, who is the Spirit, transforms us into his likeness in an ever greater degree of glory.

[2 Corinthians 10:3-5](#) (GNT)

It is true that we live in the world, but we do not fight from worldly motives. 4 The weapons we use in our fight are not the world's weapons but God's powerful weapons, which we use to destroy strongholds. We destroy false arguments; 5 we pull down every proud obstacle that is raised against the knowledge of God; we take every thought captive and make it obey Christ.

[Hebrews 3:12-15](#) (GNT) [PoG]

My friends, be careful that none of you have a heart so evil and unbelieving that you will turn away from the living God. 13 Instead, in order that none of you be deceived by sin and become stubborn, you must help one another every day, as long as the word “Today” in the scripture applies to us. 14 For we are all partners with Christ if we hold firmly to the end the confidence we had at the beginning.

15 This is what the scripture says: “If you hear God's voice today, do not be stubborn [harden your heart], as your ancestors were when they rebelled against God.”

[Hebrews 9:11-14](#) (GNT)

But Christ has already come as the High Priest of the good things that are already here. The tent in which he serves is greater and more perfect; it is not a tent made by human hands, that is, it is not a part of this created world. 12 When Christ went through the tent and entered once and for all into the Most Holy Place, he did not take the blood of goats and bulls to offer as a sacrifice; rather, he took his own blood and obtained eternal salvation for us. 13 The blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of a burnt calf are sprinkled on the people who are ritually unclean, and this purifies them by taking away their ritual impurity. 14 Since this is true, how much more is accomplished by the blood of Christ! Through the eternal Spirit he offered himself as a perfect sacrifice to God. His blood will purify our consciences from useless rituals, so that we may serve the living God.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



Question: Are there any veils on your heart or mind?

Response:

C. If we have a sin-conscience, we can fall into the trap of “useless rituals” ([Hebrews 9:14](#)) that become a law to us.

[Galatians 3:1-5; 10-14](#) (GNT)

You foolish Galatians! Who put a spell on you? Before your very eyes you had a clear description of the death of Jesus Christ on the cross! 2 Tell me this one thing: did you receive God's Spirit by doing what the Law requires or by hearing the gospel and believing it? 3 How can you be so foolish! You began by God's Spirit; do you now want to finish by your own power? 4 Did all your experience mean nothing at all? Surely it meant something! 5 Does God give you the Spirit and work miracles among you because you do what the Law requires or because you hear the gospel and believe it?

Those who depend on obeying the Law live under a curse. For the scripture says, “Whoever does not always obey everything that is written in the book of the Law is under God's curse!” 11 Now, it is clear that no one is put right with God by means of the Law, because the scripture says, “Only the person who is put right with God through faith shall live.” 12 But the Law has nothing to do with faith. Instead, as the scripture says, “Whoever does everything the Law requires will live.”

13 But by becoming a curse for us Christ has redeemed us from the curse that the Law brings; for the scripture says, “Anyone who is hanged on a tree is under God's curse.” 14 Christ did this in order that the blessing which God promised to Abraham might be given to the Gentiles by means of Christ Jesus, so that through faith we might receive the Spirit promised by God.

[1 Timothy 1:3-7; 18-19](#) (GNT)

I want you to stay in Ephesus, just as I urged you when I was on my way to Macedonia. Some people there are teaching false doctrines, and you must order them to stop. 4 Tell them to give up those legends and those long lists of ancestors, which only produce arguments; they do not serve God's plan, which is known by faith. 5 The purpose of this order is to arouse the love that comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience, and a genuine faith. 6 Some people have turned away from these and have lost their way in foolish discussions. 7 They want to be teachers of God's law, but they do not understand their own words or the matters about which they speak with so much confidence.

Timothy, my child, I entrust to you this command, which is in accordance with the words of prophecy spoken in the past about you. Use those words as weapons in order to fight well, 19 and keep your faith and a clear conscience. Some people have not listened to their conscience and have made a ruin of their faith.

[1 Timothy 4:1-5](#) (GNT)

The Spirit says clearly that some people will abandon the faith in later times; they will obey lying spirits and follow the teachings of demons. 2 Such teachings are spread by deceitful liars, whose consciences are dead, as if burnt with a hot iron. 3 Such people teach that it is wrong to marry and to eat certain foods. But God created those foods to be eaten, after a prayer of thanks, by those who are believers and have come to know the truth. 4 Everything that God has created is good; nothing is to be rejected, but everything is to be received with a prayer of thanks, 5 because the word of God and the prayer make it acceptable to God.

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



[Titus 1:13-16](#) (GNT)

For this reason you must rebuke them sharply, so that they may have a healthy faith 14 and no longer hold on to Jewish legends and to human commandments which come from people who have rejected the truth. 15 Everything is pure to those who are themselves pure; but nothing is pure to those who are defiled and unbelieving, for their minds and consciences have been defiled. 16 They claim that they know God, but their actions deny it. They are hateful and disobedient, not fit to do anything good.

Question: What are some religious or church doctrines that are based on people having a sin-conscience?

Response:

- D. Paul reinforces to us that we must be “without offence, not troubled and distressed by a consciousness of sin” ([G677](#)). What this entails is us not thinking or believing that when we do sin, we are offending God. This is because God already took care of each and every sin of the flesh we commit through the blood of Jesus Christ.

[Acts 14:16](#) (GNT)

And so I do my best always to have a clear conscience before God and people.

[Philippians 1:9-11](#) (GNT) [PoG]

I pray that your love will keep on growing more and more, together with true knowledge and perfect judgment, 10 so that you will be able to choose what is best. Then you will be free from all impurity and blame [without offense, not troubled by a consciousness of sin, until the] Day of Christ. 11 Your lives will be filled with the truly good qualities which only Jesus Christ can produce, for the glory and praise of God.

[1 Peter 3:18-21](#) (GNT) [PoG]

For Christ died for sins once and for all, a good man on behalf of sinners, in order to lead you to God. He was put to death physically, but made alive spiritually, 19 and in his spiritual existence he went and preached to the imprisoned spirits. 20 These were the spirits of those who had not obeyed God when he waited patiently during the days that Noah was building his boat. The few people in the boat—eight in all—were saved by the water, 21 which was a symbol pointing to baptism, which now saves you. It is not the washing off of bodily dirt, but the [demand for a good conscience toward God]. It saves you through the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Question: Do you feel you offend God?

Response:

- E. Having a clear conscience requires us to repent. But repentance has nothing to do with our “sins” (or turning from sin), it has to do with changing ones thinking ([G3341](#)). When we think our sins affect our relationship with God, which they do not ([Colossians 1:21](#)), that is having a sin-conscience. When we believe that Christ took away all our sins, then we have a clear-conscience—or more specifically, a righteous-conscience that holds onto the

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



Righteousness given to us by Christ that can never diminish. Thus, part of removing those “veils” is to change our thinking and believing the Truth! To change from seeing yourself as a sinner (having to do with sacrifices or offerings or asking for forgiveness), to seeing yourself (a believer) as righteous, having “the mind of Christ”.

[Romans 3:21-26](#) (GNT) [PoG]

But now God's way of putting people right with himself has been revealed. It has nothing to do with law, even though the Law of Moses and the prophets gave their witness to it. 22 God puts people right through [the faith of] Jesus Christ. God does this to all who believe in Christ, because there is no difference at all: 23 everyone has sinned and is far away from God's saving presence. 24 But by the free gift of God's grace all are put right with him through Christ Jesus, who sets them free. 25-26 God offered him, so that by his blood he should become the means by which people's sins are forgiven through [his faith]. God did this in order to demonstrate that he is righteous. In the past he was patient and overlooked people's sins; but in the present time he deals with their sins, in order to demonstrate his righteousness. In this way God shows that he himself is righteous and that he puts right everyone who believes in Jesus.

[1 Corinthians 2:13-16](#) (GNT)

So then, we do not speak in words taught by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Spirit, as we explain spiritual truths to those who have the Spirit. 14 Whoever does not have the Spirit cannot receive the gifts that come from God's Spirit. Such a person really does not understand them, and they seem to be nonsense, because their value can be judged only on a spiritual basis. 15 Whoever has the Spirit, however, is able to judge the value of everything, but no one is able to judge him. 16 As the scripture says,

“Who knows the mind of the Lord? Who is able to give him advice?”

We, however, have the mind of Christ.

[Ephesians 4:23-24](#) (GNT)

Your hearts and minds must be made completely new, 24 and you must put on the new self, which is created in God's likeness and reveals itself in the true life that is upright and holy.

[2 Timothy 2:24-26](#) (GNT)

As the Lord's servant, you must not quarrel. You must be kind toward all, a good and patient teacher, 25 who is gentle as you correct your opponents, for it may be that God will give them the opportunity to repent and come to know the truth. 26 And then they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the Devil, who had caught them and made them obey his will.

Question: What have you ‘changed your mind about’ the Lord?

Response:

- F. When John the Baptist preached the “baptism of repentance”, he was telling the people to change their minds in how they perceived sin—that they should see Jesus Christ instead ([Mark 1:4-5](#)). This baptism was the washing away of the old and being made clean; to become renewed in a person’s mind and heart. Similar for the Israelites as to their crossing of the Red Sea ([1 Corinthians 10:1-5](#)). But moreso, a clear conscience towards God. And having been cleared in their conscience, they were set-up to then accept and believe in Christ Jesus as their

REPENTANCE & CONSCIENCE

Bible Study: Lesson 037



Messiah. John's request for repentance was then really that they should believe on Jesus (turning from their unbelief in anything else). <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2018/01/repentance-from-unbelief-to-belief.html> The Lord is patient for us to "repent" and believe on Him ([2 Peter 3:8-9](#)). This is what Paul confirms:

[Acts 19:1-7](#) (GNT) [PoG]

While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul travelled through the interior of the province and arrived in Ephesus. There he found some disciples 2 and asked them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you became believers?"

"We have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit," they answered.

3 "Well, then, what kind of baptism did you receive?" Paul asked.

"The baptism of John," they answered.

4 Paul said, "[John indeed baptized with a baptism of repentance]; and he told the people of Israel to believe in the one who was coming after him—that is, in Jesus."

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. 6 Paul placed his hands on them, and the Holy Spirit came upon them; they spoke in strange tongues and also proclaimed God's message. 7 They were about twelve men in all.

Question: Do you believe in Christ Jesus, changing your mind into knowing He has already removed your sins?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. If repentance were a "moral compass", where God is 'North' and sin is 'South'; then one could easily turn from sin, but yet not turn to God—turning 'East' or 'West'. But even then, God has removed our sins from us "as far as the East is from the West" ([Psalms 102:12](#)). If we do not hold true that our sins are removed from us for all time, we can fall into a condemnation-trap.

[1 John 3:19-21](#) (GNT)

This, then, is how we will know that we belong to the truth; this is how we will be confident in God's presence. 20 If our conscience condemns us, we know that God is greater than our conscience and that he knows everything. 21 And so, my dear friends, if our conscience does not condemn us, we have courage in God's presence.

Thoughts: All this is saying is that, because God already knows everything, there is no need to hide from Him or feel condemned by our mistakes. And that if we do make a mistake, and we don't feel condemned, it is because we actually believe that Christ took all our sins and that we can be confident in the Presence of God. "For, as Christ Jesus is, so are we in this world" ([1 John 4:17](#)).

We can and must live free from a sin-conscience towards God. And must NEVER EVER see ourselves as "a sinner saved by grace", but someone whose sins are completely and forever (before we even commit them) forgiven. When we have a sin-conscience, we are always asking for forgiveness. When we have a righteous-conscience, we walk in confidence that Christ is our all-in-all, knowing He made me righteous forever at the Cross. We can never ask for forgiveness for a sin that's not already been forgiven. We must raise our heads to look Him in the eyes without fear, knowing we are perpetually cleaned and Holy (Saints).

THE LAW

INTENTION:

We do not live by or under the Law. So stop trying!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at The Law.

In saying this, I am talking about the Law passed down through Moses that is the 10 Commandments “written on stone” with all 613 commanded by Moses to Israel:

<https://www.the613commandments.com/The-List-of-the-613-Commandments.html>

However, no one, in any fashion, is currently covenant-tied to the Law. The Law was completely and utterly fulfilled by Christ Jesus on everyone’s behalf—even though the Law was only for the selected group of people who are the Israelites. But in Christ, there is neither Jew nor Gentile. We are all under a new covenant and better covenant.

Let us clear our conscience by not thinking and seeing ourselves as sinners, but as righteous. For when we see ourselves as having the identity of righteousness, we let go of trying to live the Law which only strengthens the sins we are trying to avoid. Live Love by the Spirit; that is all we are commanded to do.

The Law can never usher in love, nor save us (as it is self-centred); salvation is only by God’s Grace and Christ’s Faith ([Ephesians 2:4-10](#)). Thus, let us not do as the Church of Galatia, mixing Grace and Faith with Law requirements.

II. READING: [Galatians 3:1-29](#) (EHV) [PoG]

O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you? Before your very eyes Jesus Christ was clearly portrayed as crucified. 2 I just want to learn this from you: Did you receive the Spirit by the works of the law, or by believing what you heard?

3 Are you so foolish? Having begun by the Spirit, are you now trying to reach the goal by the flesh? 4 Did you experience so many things for nothing, if it were indeed for nothing? 5 So then, does the one who supplies the Spirit to you and works miracles among you, do it by the works of the law? Or does he do it by your believing what you hear— 6 in the same way as Abraham “believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness”?

7 Understand, then, that those who believe are the children of Abraham. 8 Foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, Scripture proclaimed the gospel in advance to Abraham, saying, “In you, all nations will be blessed.” 9 So then, those who have faith are blessed along with Abraham, the man of faith.

10 In fact, those who rely on the works of the law are under a curse. For it is written, “Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything written in the book of the law.” 11 Clearly no one is declared righteous before God by the law, because “The righteous will live by faith.” 12 The law does not say “by faith.” Instead it says, “The one who does these things will live by them.”

13 Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us. As it is written, “Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree.” 14 He redeemed us in order that the blessing of Abraham would come to the Gentiles through Christ Jesus, so that we would receive the promised Spirit through faith.

15 Brothers, I am speaking in human terms. When someone has established a last will and testament, no one nullifies it or adds to it. 16 The promises God spoke referred to Abraham and to his seed. It doesn’t say, “And to seeds,” as if it were referring to many, but, as referring to one, “And to your seed,” who is Christ. 17 What I am saying is this: The law, which came into being 430 years after the covenant established earlier by God in Christ, does not annul that covenant, with the result that it invalidates the promise. 18 In fact, if the inheritance is by the law, it is no longer by the promise. But God graciously gave it to Abraham by a promise.

19 Then what about the law? It was added for the purpose of revealing transgressions, until the Seed to whom the promise referred had come. It was transmitted through angels by the hand of a mediator. 20 Now a mediator is not needed for one party, but God is one.

21 Then is the law against the promises of God? Certainly not! For if there had been a law given that could give life, certainly righteousness would have been derived from the law. 22 But Scripture imprisoned all things under sin, so that

THE LAW

Bible Study: Lesson 038



the promise by faith [of] Jesus Christ would be given to those who believe. 23 But before this faith came, we were held in custody under the law, imprisoned until the coming faith was revealed. 24 So the law was our chaperone until Christ, so that we might be justified by [Christ's] faith. 25 But now that this faith has come, we are no longer under a chaperone.

26 In fact, you are all sons of God through [the faith of] Christ Jesus. 27 Indeed, as many of you as were baptized into Christ have been clothed with Christ. 28 There is not Jew or Greek, slave or free, male or female, for you are all one and the same in Christ Jesus. 29 And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's descendants and heirs according to the promise.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. The Law was only given to a select people, not the whole world. It was given to Moses through which all who came to be Israelites accepted that Moses Covenant and the Law which it entails. We do not follow Moses, we follow Christ who didn't destroy the Law, but fulfilled it in our behalf—since it was impossible for any other human to completely live by it or fulfil it. We live by the Grace and Truth of Christ Jesus, not Moses.

[John 1:17 \(EHV\)](#)

For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.

[Matthew 5:17-20 \(EHV\)](#)

“Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy them but to fulfill them. 18 Amen I tell you: Until heaven and earth pass away, not even the smallest letter, or even part of a letter, will in any way pass away from the Law until everything is fulfilled. 19 So whoever breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven. But whoever practices and teaches them will be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 20 Indeed I tell you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the Pharisees and experts in the law, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven.

[Romans 4:15-17a \(EHV\)](#)

For law brings wrath. (Where there is no law, there is no transgression.) 16 For this reason, the promise is by faith, so that it may be according to grace and may be guaranteed to all of Abraham's descendants—not only to the one who is a descendant by law, but also to the one who has the faith of Abraham. He is the father of us all. 17 As it is written: “I have made you a father of many nations.”

[Romans 7:4-6 \(EHV\)](#)

In the same way, my brothers, you also were put to death in regard to the law by the body of Christ, so that you may be joined to another, to the one who was raised from the dead, in order that we might produce fruit for God. 5 For when we were in the flesh, strong sinful desires stirred up by the law were at work in our members, with the result that we produced fruit that results in death. 6 But now we have been released from the law by dying to what held us in its grip, so that we serve in the new way of the Spirit and not in the old way of the letter of the law.

Question: Do you consider yourself dead to the Law because of Christ Jesus?

Response:

B. We often hold onto the Law as a requirement of God. But Jesus often discussed with the Pharisees the “Laws of Moses” not “Law of God”. As such, we must think about the covenant we are adopted into. The Law was given to Moses so that God could have a specific covenant with Israel. Love was given to Christ Jesus so that God could have a new covenant with all humanity. As Christ fulfilled the Law, He established a new and better covenant.

[John 7:14-24](#) (EHV)

When the festival was already half over, Jesus went up to the temple courts and began to teach. 15 The Jews were amazed and asked, “How does this man know what is written without being instructed?”

16 Jesus answered them, “My teaching is not mine, but it comes from him who sent me. 17 If anyone wants to do his will, he will know whether my teaching is from God or if I speak on my own. 18 The one who speaks on his own is seeking his own glory. But he who seeks the glory of the one who sent him—that is the one who is true, and there is no unrighteousness in him. 19 Didn’t Moses give you the law? Yet none of you does what the law tells you. Why are you trying to kill me?”

20 “You have a demon!” the crowd answered. “Who is trying to kill you?”

21 Jesus answered them, “I did one work, and you are all amazed. 22 Consider this: Because Moses has given you circumcision (not that it comes from Moses, but from the fathers), you circumcise a man even on the Sabbath. 23 If a man receives circumcision on the Sabbath so that the law of Moses may not be broken, are you angry at me because I made a man completely well on the Sabbath? 24 Stop judging by outward appearance. Instead make a right judgment.”

Question: Are you following Moses and the Law, or Jesus Christ?

Response:

C. The Law always found fault with humanity—and in doing so, never made humans perfect (righteous). And because of humans being imperfect, God the Father sent His own Son, Jesus Christ, as a human to do what no other human could. And as Christ Jesus fulfilled the covenant of the Law, it became null and void, giving us a new and better covenant.

[Hebrews 8:6-8a;13](#) (EHV)

But now, Jesus has obtained a ministry that is as much superior as the covenant that he mediates is better, because it has been established on the basis of better promises. 7 Indeed, if that first covenant were without fault, there would have been no reason to look for a second. 8 But because God found fault with the people, he said:

Look, the days are coming, says the Lord, when I will make a new covenant.

When God said “new,” he made the first covenant obsolete, and something that is obsolete and growing old is going to disappear.

[Hebrews 9:15-18;24-28](#) (EHV)

For this reason, he is the mediator of a new covenant. A death took place as payment for the trespasses committed under the first covenant, so that those who are called would receive the promised eternal inheritance. 16 For where a will exists, it is necessary to establish the death of the one who made the will. 17 For a will takes effect at the time of death, since it is never in force when the one who made the will is still living.

18 For this reason, the first covenant was not ratified without blood.

24 For Christ did not enter a handmade sanctuary, a representation of the true sanctuary. Instead, he entered into heaven itself, now to appear before God on our behalf. 25 And he did not enter to offer himself many times, as the high priest enters the Most Holy Place year after year with blood that is not his own. 26 Otherwise he would have needed to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But now he has appeared once and for all, at the climax of the ages, in order to take away sin by the sacrifice of himself. 27 And, just as it is appointed for people to die only once and after this comes the judgment, 28 so also Christ was offered only once to take away the sins of many, and he will appear a second time—without sin—to bring salvation to those who are eagerly waiting for him.

Question: If the covenant of the Law is obsolete, why do we find that people want to live by it?

Response:

- D. We will always fail trying to live the Law out of our own works (flesh); bringing curse and death. The Law appeals to our flesh because the flesh seeks to establish its own way of righteousness to give itself glory (not the Lord). The new covenant gives all Glory to the Lord, and it is not one of death, but one of the Spirit that gives Life!

2 Corinthians 3:1-11 (EHV)

Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or do we need, like some people, letters of recommendation to you or from you? 2 You yourselves are our letter, written on our hearts, known and read by everyone. 3 It is clear that you are a letter from Christ, delivered by us, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on stone tablets but on tablets that are hearts of flesh.

4 Such is the confidence we have through Christ before God. 5 Not that we are competent by ourselves to claim that anything comes from us; rather, our competence is from God. 6 He also made us competent as ministers of a new testament (not of letter, but of spirit). For the letter kills, but the spirit gives life.

7 If the ministry that brought death (which was engraved in letters on stone) came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look directly at the face of Moses because of the glory of his face (though it was fading), 8 how will the ministry of the spirit not be much more glorious? 9 For if the ministry that brought condemnation has glory, the ministry that brought righteousness has even more glory. 10 In fact, in this case, what was glorious is no longer very glorious, because of the greater glory of that which surpasses it. 11 Indeed, if what is fading away was glorious, how much more glorious is that which is permanent!

Question: Are you dying or Living?

Response:

- E. Our struggle with sin is often because of the Law. For the more we try to adhere to the Law, the more we end up sinning—for the more we try to live the Law, the stronger sin gets. Thank you, Jesus Christ, that I do not have to focus on the Law or my sins (having a sin-conscience).

[Romans 7:7-13](#) (EHV)

What will we say then? Is the law sin? Absolutely not! On the contrary, I would not have recognized sin except through the law. For example, I would not have known about coveting if the law had not said, “You shall not covet.” 8 But sin, seizing the opportunity provided by this commandment, produced every kind of sinful desire in me.

For apart from the law, sin is dead. 9 Once I was alive without the law. But when this commandment came, sin came to life, 10 and I died. This commandment that was intended to result in life actually resulted in death for me. 11 You see, sin, seizing the opportunity provided by this commandment, deceived me and put me to death through it.

12 So the law is holy, and the commandment is holy, righteous, and good. 13 Then did what is good become death to me? Absolutely not! But sin, so that it might be recognized as sin, brings about my death by this good thing, so that through this commandment sin might prove itself to be totally sinful.

[Romans 8:1-4](#) (EHV)

So then, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. 2 For in Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death. 3 Indeed, what the law was unable to do, because it was weakened by the flesh, God did, when he sent his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh to deal with sin. God condemned sin in his flesh, 4 so that the righteous decree of the law would be fully satisfied in us who are not walking according to the flesh, but according to the spirit.

[1 Corinthians 15:56-57](#) (EHV)

The sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ!

Question: What are your struggles with sin?

Response:

- F. When the Lord tells us to follow His Commands, He is not referencing Moses, but Jesus Christ. This Law (Commandment) of Jesus Christ differs from the Law of Moses (10 Commandments). This is critical to see. It becomes easier to obey the Command of Love than the Commands of the Law—especially having the Spirit within us, bearing the Fruit of Love out of us. And when our focus is on Love, we in turn don’t sin (break the Law)

[John 13:34-35](#) (EHV)

“A new commandment I give you: Love one another. Just as I have loved you, so also you are to love one another. 35 By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another.”

[1 John 3:19-24](#) (EHV)

This is how we know that we are of the truth and how we will set our hearts at rest in his presence: 20 If our hearts condemn us, God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything. 21 Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God. 22 We also receive from him whatever we ask, because we keep his commands and do what is pleasing in his sight. 23 This then is his command: that we believe in the

name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and that we love one another just as he commanded us. 24 The one who keeps his commands remains in God and God in him. This is how we know that he remains in us: We know it from the Spirit, whom he has given to us.

Question: Is the Law (Command) of Love easier for you than trying to not break the 10 Commandments?

Response:

- G. We are not obliged to live by the Law, only to Agape Love. This is because when we Agape Love, we automatically fulfil the Law.

[Romans 13:8-10](#) (EHV)

Do not owe anyone anything except to love one another, for the one who loves another has fulfilled the law. 9 For the commandments—do not commit adultery, do not murder, do not steal, do not covet (and if there is any other commandment)—are summed up in this statement: “Love your neighbour as yourself.” 10 Love does no harm to a neighbour, so love is the fulfilment of the law.

Question: Do you find that when you Love someone, you don’t break the Law?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. [1 Timothy 1:3-11](#) (EHV)

As I urged you while I was going to Macedonia, remain in Ephesus so that you may command certain men not to teach any different doctrines 4 or pay any attention to myths and endless genealogies that bring about aimless speculations rather than God’s plan, which centres in faith. 5 The goal of this command is love that comes from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from a sincere faith. 6 By veering away from these things, some have turned aside into meaningless talk. 7 They want to be teachers of the law, although they do not comprehend what they are saying or the things they so strongly affirm. 8 Now, we know that the law is good as long as one uses it correctly— 9 keeping in mind that the law is not laid down for a righteous person, but for lawless and rebellious people, for godless people and sinners, for unholy and worldly people, for those who kill their fathers and those who kill their mothers, for murderers, 10 for sexually immoral people, for homosexuals, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and for whatever else is opposed to sound teaching— 11 in keeping with the glorious gospel of the blessed God, with which I was entrusted.

Thoughts: When you are Born-Again, believing in Christ Jesus, you are declared RIGHTEOUS! And as we have learned from previous lessons, that Righteousness cannot diminish or be lost. And that any “defilement” of our body is taken care of (removed) by the Lord. As such, even though we may still sin, our Identity is not that of a sinner, but that of a Righteous person. Thus, don’t let this passage persuade you that any of these sins you may

YOUR ADVERSARY

INTENTION:

You will be surprised in realising who you've made as an enemy—it's not always Satan.

YOUR ADVERSARY

Bible Study: Lesson 039



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at who is Your Adversary.

For me, as a believer, the term “adversary” related directly to the devil—as he is my enemy and creates adversity in my life. But there is another, greater, adversary for non-believers: God.

In Luke and Matthew following, we read Jesus speaking about the need to believe in Him for salvation. That those who do not see and accept Him to be saved are not fearing the right one, God. Because they do not fear (revere) God, they do not take Him seriously. And in doing so, make Him their adversary. God really isn’t our adversary, we just make Him to be one. He Loves and cares for us more than anything, as we are the treasure He gave up His Son for ([Matthew 13:44-46](#)).

The Lord desires all people to come to Christ and be Saved. And it is the Holy Spirit that testifies to each and every individual about Christ Jesus and the true Character and Nature of God for us to come to believe in Him. When we reject that truth of the Holy Spirit, we are “blaspheming” Him, because we are calling Him a liar. And when we continually reject that testimony and die on this earth, we have no second chances to come to Him. This Sin of Blasphemy is the Sin of unbelief (not believing in Jesus Christ). So don’t make the Lord your enemy by rejecting Him.

This is why Jesus tells us: “As you are going with your adversary [*Jesus Christ*] to the ruler [*God the Father*], make an effort to settle with him [*Jesus Christ*] on the way.” And, “Anyone who is not with Me is against Me”.

II. READING: [Luke 12:1-59](#) (HCSB)

In these circumstances, a crowd of many thousands came together, so that they were trampling on one another. He began to say to His disciples first: “Be on your guard against the yeast of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 There is nothing covered that won’t be uncovered, nothing hidden that won’t be made known. 3 Therefore, whatever you have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have whispered in an ear in private rooms will be proclaimed on the housetops.

4 “And I say to you, My friends, don’t fear those who kill the body, and after that can do nothing more. 5 But I will show you the One to fear: Fear Him who has authority to throw people into hell after death. Yes, I say to you, this is the One to fear! 6 Aren’t five sparrows sold for two pennies? Yet not one of them is forgotten in God’s sight. 7 Indeed, the hairs of your head are all counted. Don’t be afraid; you are worth more than many sparrows!

8 “And I say to you, anyone who acknowledges Me before men, the Son of Man will also acknowledge him before the angels of God, 9 but whoever denies Me before men will be denied before the angels of God. 10 Anyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but the one who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. 11 Whenever they bring you before synagogues and rulers and authorities, don’t worry about how you should defend yourselves or what you should say. 12 For the Holy Spirit will teach you at that very hour what must be said.”

13 Someone from the crowd said to Him, “Teacher, tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me.”

14 “Friend,” He said to him, “who appointed Me a judge or arbitrator over you?” 15 He then told them, “Watch out and be on guard against all greed because one’s life is not in the abundance of his possessions.”

16 Then He told them a parable: “A rich man’s land was very productive. 17 He thought to himself, ‘What should I do, since I don’t have anywhere to store my crops? 18 I will do this,’ he said. ‘I’ll tear down my barns and build bigger ones and store all my grain and my goods there. 19 Then I’ll say to myself, “You have many goods stored up for many years. Take it easy; eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.”’

20 “But God said to him, ‘You fool! This very night your life is demanded of you. And the things you have prepared—whose will they be?’

21 “That’s how it is with the one who stores up treasure for himself and is not rich toward God.”

22 Then He said to His disciples: “Therefore I tell you, don’t worry about your life, what you will eat; or about the body, what you will wear. 23 For life is more than food and the body more than clothing. 24 Consider the ravens: They don’t sow or reap; they don’t have a storeroom or a barn; yet God feeds them. Aren’t you worth much more than the birds? 25 Can any of you add a cubit to his height by worrying? 26 If then you’re not able to do even a little thing, why worry about the rest?”

27 “Consider how the wildflowers grow: They don’t labour or spin thread. Yet I tell you, not even Solomon in all his splendour was adorned like one of these! 28 If that’s how God clothes the grass, which is in the field today and is thrown into the furnace tomorrow, how much more will He do for you—you of little faith? 29 Don’t keep striving for what you should eat and what you should drink, and don’t be anxious. 30 For the Gentile world eagerly seeks all these things, and your Father knows that you need them.

31 “But seek His kingdom, and these things will be provided for you. 32 Don’t be afraid, little flock, because your Father delights to give you the kingdom. 33 Sell your possessions and give to the poor. Make money-bags for yourselves that won’t grow old, an inexhaustible treasure in heaven, where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. 34 For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

35 “Be ready for service and have your lamps lit. 36 You must be like people waiting for their master to return from the wedding banquet so that when he comes and knocks, they can open the door for him at once. 37 Those slaves the master will find alert when he comes will be blessed. I assure you: He will get ready, have them recline at the table, then come and serve them. 38 If he comes in the middle of the night, or even near dawn, and finds them alert, those slaves are blessed. 39 But know this: If the homeowner had known at what hour the thief was coming, he would not have let his house be broken into. 40 You also be ready, because the Son of Man is coming at an hour that you do not expect.”

41 “Lord,” Peter asked, “are You telling this parable to us or to everyone?”

42 The Lord said: “Who then is the faithful and sensible manager his master will put in charge of his household servants to give them their allotted food at the proper time? 43 That slave whose master finds him working when he comes will be rewarded. 44 I tell you the truth: He will put him in charge of all his possessions. 45 But if that slave says in his heart, ‘My master is delaying his coming,’ and starts to beat the male and female slaves, and to eat and drink and get drunk, 46 that slave’s master will come on a day he does not expect him and at an hour he does not know. He will cut him to pieces and assign him a place with the unbelievers. 47 And that slave who knew his master’s will and didn’t prepare himself or do it will be severely beaten. 48 But the one who did not know and did things deserving of blows will be beaten lightly. Much will be required of everyone who has been given much. And even more will be expected of the one who has been entrusted with more.

49 “I came to bring fire on the earth, and how I wish it were already set ablaze! 50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how it consumes Me until it is finished! 51 Do you think that I came here to give peace to the earth? No, I tell you, but rather division! 52 From now on, five in one household will be divided: three against two, and two against three.

53 They will be divided, father against son, son against father, mother against daughter, daughter against mother, mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against mother-in-law.”

54 He also said to the crowds: “When you see a cloud rising in the west, right away you say, ‘A storm is coming,’ and so it does. 55 And when the south wind is blowing, you say, ‘It’s going to be a scorcher!’ and it is. 56 Hypocrites! You know how to interpret the appearance of the earth and the sky, but why don’t you know how to interpret this time?”

57 “Why don’t you judge for yourselves what is right? 58 As you are going with your adversary to the ruler, make an effort to settle with him on the way. Then he won’t drag you before the judge, the judge hand you over to the bailiff, and the bailiff throw you into prison. 59 I tell you, you will never get out of there until you have paid the last cent.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Making God your adversary is recounted also in [Matthew 5](#). At the time of Jesus, and even to this day, mankind saw God as the opponent—for people had an issue with God based on ignorance or misguided teachings by the Scribes and Pharisees (and people today). As such, God saw this and rectified it. It is not that God was really our enemy, but we made Him so. Thus, as He sent Christ Jesus to the Cross (as an alter gift), He saw that mankind (brothers) had something against Him and went about reconciling Himself to mankind ([2 Corinthians 5:14-21](#)). If we do not, in return, come to believe and be Born-Again, we maintain our status as his adversary—which is why He says to “settle quickly” otherwise face eternal judgement to “throw people into hell (prison) after death”.

[Matthew 5:21-26](#) (HCSB)

“You have heard that it was said to our ancestors, Do not murder, and whoever murders will be subject to judgment. 22 But I tell you, everyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Fool!’ will be subject to the Sanhedrin. But whoever says, ‘You moron!’ will be subject to hellfire. 23 So if you are offering your gift on the altar, and there you remember that your brother has something against you, 24 leave your gift there in front of the altar. First go and be reconciled with your brother, and then come and offer your gift. 25 Reach a settlement quickly with your adversary while you’re on the way with him, or your adversary will hand you over to the judge, the judge to the officer, and you will be thrown into prison. 26 I assure you: You will never get out of there until you have paid the last penny!

Question: Share how, before coming to believing Him, you saw God as an enemy?

Response:

- B. God often gives us instruction that we find difficult or even offensive. But God will never instruct us to do something He Himself doesn’t do—just as we now read above in Matthew. He will always hold Himself to the same standards of Righteousness that He holds us to. There is only one kind of Righteousness and one kind of Holy. As such, when we are told to “love our enemies” we can see that God loves us even if we are convinced He is our enemy. He cannot not Love each and every human being. He died not for just believers, but for all of humanity; believers or not ([John 3:16-17](#)).

[Luke 6:27-36](#) (HCSB)

“But I say to you who listen: Love your enemies, do what is good to those who hate you, 28 bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you. 29 If anyone hits you on the cheek, offer the other also. And if anyone takes away your coat, don’t hold back your shirt either. 30 Give to everyone who asks you, and from one who takes your things, don’t ask for them back. 31 Just as you want others to do for you, do the same for them. 32 If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners love those who love them. 33 If you do what is good to those who are good to you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners do that. 34 And if you lend to those from whom you expect to receive, what credit is that to you? Even sinners lend to sinners to be repaid in full. 35 But love your enemies, do what is good, and lend, expecting nothing in return. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High. For He is gracious to the ungrateful and evil. 36 Be merciful, just as your Father also is merciful.”

Question: Do you have a difficult time loving your enemies?

Response:

- C. As unbelievers, we were against the Lord—the term for a non-believer being: Evil. Just as the unbelieving Pharisees were called evil ([Matthew 12:33-37](#)). But even though we had been against the Lord, and thus enemies of the Lord, He Loved us so much that He reconciled Himself to us. We had something against Him, yet He was the one to do the reconciliation ([Matthew 5:23-24](#)). Now we do not have to fear Him, allowing us to come to Him without fear or worry. It is only in our imaginations (minds) that we think we are His enemy.

[Romans 5:1-11](#) (HCSB)

Therefore, since we have been declared righteous by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. 2 We have also obtained access through Him by faith into this grace in which we stand, and we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God. 3 And not only that, but we also rejoice in our afflictions, because we know that affliction produces endurance, 4 endurance produces proven character, and proven character produces hope. 5 This hope will not disappoint us, because God’s love has been poured out in our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

6 For while we were still helpless, at the appointed moment, Christ died for the ungodly. 7 For rarely will someone die for a just person—though for a good person perhaps someone might even dare to die. 8 But God proves His own love for us in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us! 9 Much more then, since we have now been declared righteous by His blood, we will be saved through Him from wrath. 10 For if, while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, then how much more, having been reconciled, will we be saved by His life! 11 And not only that, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ. We have now received this reconciliation through Him.

[Colossians 1:21-23](#) (HCSB)

Once you were alienated and hostile in your minds because of your evil actions. 22 But now He has reconciled you by His physical body through His death, to present you holy, faultless, and blameless before Him— 23 if indeed you remain grounded and steadfast in the faith and are not shifted away from the hope of the gospel that you heard. This gospel has been proclaimed in all creation under heaven, and I, Paul, have become a servant of it.

Question: Does knowing ahead of time that you’ve already been reconciled by God make it less obtrusive to then come to believe in Him or minister to others to believe in Him?

Response:

- D. Because we are reconciled to come to Him to claim His Righteousness as our own, we do have an opponent that tries to keep us from believing in Him: Satan. It is he who tries to snatch up the seed of the gospel that is spread on a person’s heart. For the one on the path is too hard for the seed to sink in, and it gets stolen by Satan. The rocky and thorny ones are people who do become Born-Again believers, but their fruit is stifled by persecution or strongholds (such as worldly things).

[Mark 4:13-20](#) (HCSB)

Then He said to them: “Don’t you understand this parable? How then will you understand any of the parables? 14 The sower sows the word. 15 These are the ones along the path where the word is sown: when they hear, immediately Satan comes and takes away the word sown in them. 16 And these are the ones sown on rocky ground: when they hear the word, immediately they receive it with joy. 17 But they have no root in themselves; they are short-lived. When pressure or persecution comes because of the word, they immediately stumble. 18 Others are sown among thorns; these are the ones who hear the word, 19 but the worries of this age, the seduction of wealth, and the desires for other things enter in and choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. 20 But the ones sown on good ground are those who hear the word, welcome it, and produce a crop: 30, 60, and 100 times what was sown.”

Question: Looking back to before being Born-Again, can you see the times when the seed was taken from you?

Response:

- E. There are people in this world that hold God as an enemy, and therefore, hold you as a believer as an enemy. This enmity can come from direct persecution, or just by the things around us in the world. Remember, we fight the spiritual battles. We cannot help but live among our enemies, but we have been given Grace and Peace to live above their deceptions.

[Matthew 13:24-30](#) (HCSB)

He presented another parable to them: “The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a man who sowed good seed in his field. 25 But while people were sleeping, his enemy came, sowed weeds among the wheat, and left. 26 When the plants sprouted and produced grain, then the weeds also appeared. 27 The landowner’s slaves came to him and said, ‘Master, didn’t you sow good seed in your field? Then where did the weeds come from?’ 28 “‘An enemy did this!’ he told them.

“‘So, do you want us to go and gather them up?’ the slaves asked him.

29 “‘No,’ he said. ‘When you gather up the weeds, you might also uproot the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest. At harvest time I’ll tell the reapers: Gather the weeds first and tie them in bundles to burn them, but store the wheat in my barn.’”

[Philippians 3:13-2](#) (HCSB)

Brothers, I do not consider myself to have taken hold of it. But one thing I do: Forgetting what is behind and reaching forward to what is ahead, 14 I pursue as my goal the prize promised by God’s heavenly call in Christ Jesus. 15 Therefore, all who are mature should think this way. And if you think differently about anything, God will reveal this also to you. 16 In any case, we should live up to whatever truth we have attained. 17 Join in imitating me, brothers, and observe those who live according to the example you have in us. 18 For I have often told you, and now say again with tears, that many live as enemies of the cross of Christ. 19 Their end is destruction; their god is their stomach; their glory is in their shame. They are focused on earthly things, 20 but our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for a Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ. 21 He will transform the body of our humble condition into the likeness of His glorious body, by the power that enables Him to subject everything to Himself.

[2 Thessalonians 2:1-4](#) (HCSB)

Now concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our being gathered to Him: We ask you, brothers, 2 not to be easily upset in mind or troubled, either by a spirit or by a message or by a letter as if from us, alleging that the Day of the Lord has come. 3 Don't let anyone deceive you in any way. For that day will not come unless the apostasy comes first and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of destruction. 4 He opposes and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, so that he sits in God's sanctuary, publicizing that he himself is God.

[1 John 4:1-6](#) (HCSB)

Dear friends, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to determine if they are from God, because many false prophets have gone out into the world.

2 This is how you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit who confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God. 3 But every spirit who does not confess Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist; you have heard that he is coming, and he is already in the world now.

4 You are from God, little children, and you have conquered them, because the One who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. 5 They are from the world. Therefore what they say is from the world, and the world listens to them. 6 We are from God. Anyone who knows God listens to us; anyone who is not from God does not listen to us. From this we know the Spirit of truth and the spirit of deception.

Question: Do you come across people or things in this world that directly or deceptively oppose the Lord?

Response:

- F. Sometimes, our adversary are the things we must give up. Often, when we seek the Lord and His ways, the ways of our former self must be let go of. Holding onto them can be a stronghold that keeps us anchored to our past. Sometimes that stronghold isn't just money and things, but people—family that are close to us and mean the most to us. Thus, many times, it is very difficult to either come to believe in Christ or to follow Him if it means we will lose our “brothers, sisters, mothers, and children”—knowing even the persecution that may come.

[Mark 10:23-31](#) (HCSB)

Jesus looked around and said to His disciples, “How hard it is for those who have wealth to enter the kingdom of God!” 24 But the disciples were astonished at His words. Again Jesus said to them, “Children, how hard it is to enter the kingdom of God! 25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God.”

26 So they were even more astonished, saying to one another, “Then who can be saved?”

27 Looking at them, Jesus said, “With men it is impossible, but not with God, because all things are possible with God.”

28 Peter began to tell Him, “Look, we have left everything and followed You.”

29 “I assure you,” Jesus said, “there is no one who has left house, brothers or sisters, mother or father, children, or fields because of Me and the gospel, 30 who will not receive 100 times more, now at this time—houses, brothers and sisters, mothers and children, and fields, with persecutions—and eternal life in the age to come. 31 But many who are first will be last, and the last first.”

YOUR ADVERSARY

Bible Study: Lesson 039



Question: What have you given up, or being called to give up with the Lord?

Response:

- G. When we choose the Lord and to believe in Christ Jesus, that moment we are Born-Again, we no longer make God our adversary (enemy), the devil now becomes our adversary (enemy). And as we learned in previous Bible Lessons, the devil is not specifically Satan, but anything that opposes God—thus opposing you as a Child of God.

[1 Peter 5:8-9](#) (HCSB)

8 Be serious! Be alert! Your adversary the Devil is prowling around like a roaring lion, looking for anyone he can devour. 9 Resist him and be firm in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are being experienced by your fellow believers throughout the world.

[Revelations 12:7-12](#) (HCSB)

Then war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon. The dragon and his angels also fought, 8 but he could not prevail, and there was no place for them in heaven any longer. 9 So the great dragon was thrown out—the ancient serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, the one who deceives the whole world. He was thrown to earth, and his angels with him.

10 Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say:

The salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Messiah have now come, because the accuser of our brothers has been thrown out: the one who accuses them before our God day and night.

11 They conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, for they did not love their lives in the face of death.

12 Therefore rejoice, you heavens, and you who dwell in them!

Woe to the earth and the sea, for the Devil has come down to you with great fury, because he knows he has a short time.

Question: Do you see the Devil and Satan at work in this world?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. [Luke 11:14-26](#) (HCSB)

Now He was driving out a demon that was mute. When the demon came out, the man who had been mute, spoke, and the crowds were amazed. 15 But some of them said, "He drives out demons by Beelzebul, the ruler of the demons!" 16 And others, as a test, were demanding of Him a sign from heaven.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

INTENTION:

The Lord holds “no records of wrongs” in your life (or anyone else’s) Thus, we have to let go of the fear that all my sins done in secret will be revealed at Final Judgement.

A person is only judged by whether they Believe in Jesus Christ or don’t.

That’s all it is; and not everyone will be at the “Great White Throne of Judgement”.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Final Judgement.

This is at the very end of earth's existence as it is to be burned with fire when God judges the Righteous and the Evil.

We will look at what this Judgement is, and where it fits chronologically with all the events leading up to it regarding the Living and the Dead. Following, to start off in brief, is the history of all things:

1. "In the Beginning" ([Genesis 1:1a](#)). God is infinite—He has always existed and will always exist.
2. From God's timeless beginning (not our human beginning), the world itself had forever existed as a sphere covered fully by "waters of the deep" ([2 Peter 3:5](#)) with the Spirit of the Lord perpetually hovering over it ([Genesis 1:2](#)).
3. Then the following events of "Creation" transpired over the next 6 days culminating in the earth fully prepared for humanity ([Genesis 1:3-31](#)). God then rested ([Genesis 2:1-3](#)).
4. Mankind, living in the Garden of Eden then began their free-will nature of taking from the fruit and sinning. This resulted in mankind, one-by-one, being expelled from the Garden populating the world ([Genesis 3:1-24; 6:1-4](#)).
5. Eventually, mankind had grown in such number with the freedom of God's Love, Grace, and Mercy that they forgot about God. This was devastatingly sad for the Lord who was their literal Father. That His children abandoned Him crushed His heart. Try as He might, none would hearken to Him and His efforts were futile. But, a few people did still hear and revere ([Genesis 6:5-8](#)).
6. This brought about the great full-earth Flood ([Genesis 7:1-24; 8:1-22; 9:1-17](#)) destroying all but that which was on the Ark. It was so violent, it tore the continents apart from the Pangea grouping to the way we see them now. *One may wonder why He would punish all of humanity this way, but remember, they were given a chance to believe in Christ as they patiently waited for Jesus to come minister to them in prison* ([1 Peter 3:18-20](#)).
7. Post-Flood, we can read about in Job which is the oldest book of the Bible talking about the Dinosaurs and Dragons saved in the Ark ([Job 37-42](#)).
8. Humanity multiplied and united again from that devastation, yet followed back into their own fleshly ways, building the Tower of Babel to try and overcome God. This is when conflict arose among them and each one could not agree and created factions of people and languages to define their own identity separate from God and from each other. And they scattered the earth to the lands we have now ([Genesis 11:1-9](#)).
9. At no time had the Character and Nature of God's Love, Grace, and Mercy left the earth. But, in order to intervene to help keep humans from once again repeating their fleshly ways, God stepped in to the life of Abram ([Genesis 12:1-9; 13:14-18; 14:18-24; 15:1-20; 17:1-27; 18:1-15; 21:1-7](#)).
10. Then from Abraham, the lineage gets to Joseph in Egypt ([Genesis 37; 39; 41; 42; 43; 44; 45; 46; 47](#)). "God sent me before you to preserve for you a remnant in the earth, and to save you alive by a great deliverance". There they prospered and brought us the great architecture and master-building that was the Egyptian empire and Pyramids—but done so eventually as slaves ([Exodus 1:1-15; 2:23-25](#)).
11. We then get to Moses ([Exodus 3:1-22](#)). The Lord freed the Israelites ([Genesis 12:31-42](#)), not to bring them out to destroy them, but to give them rest to settle in the land promised them through Abraham. They were instead scared of the unknown, their flesh longing to return to the perceived "comfort" of slavery ([Exodus 14:10-14](#)).

At this time, the Lord gave to Moses the 10 Commandments "written on stone" ([Exodus 20:1-17; 31:18](#)). Ones that gave them an understanding of what the Lord's Heart was for them to just Love and not sin. But what was meant as Life, Israel hardened their own hearts ([Hebrews 3:3-11](#)); instead finding an impossible set of rules to follow. They did not yet trust the Lord as a Loving and protecting Father. So they wandered the desert, protected and favoured, until the generation that held onto to Egypt passed ([Acts 7:38-54](#)).

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040



12. But these “rules” could never make a person Righteous ([Galatians 2:15-21](#)). And so, as He always knew, He had to send His own Son, Jesus Christ, as a Law-Abiding Human to follow the meaning of the Law and all the blood sacrifices it entailed to fulfil the Law, bringing peace and unity between all humanity ([Romans 8:1-4](#)) through His own blood—where now there is neither Jew or Greek, Male or Female, Slave or Free ([Galatians 3:26-29](#)).

13. Since that completion through the Cross, the sending back of the Holy Spirit to all the earth and to each and every human ([Acts 2:16-21](#)), and the utter destruction of the literal Jewish Temple, we now, currently live in this “His Sabbath Rest” ([Mark 2:27-28](#)) and the “Year of the Lord’s Favour” ([Luke 4:16-21](#)), until Christ Jesus comes again.

This now is where we as humanity lives, waiting for the Lord to come again to separate the wheat from the tares ([Matthew 13:24-30](#)), and usher in the 1,000-year reign of Christ Jesus and the completion of the End Times.

Let’s first see how Jesus speaks about the “End Times”, then get into the events that will transpire before the “Great White Throne of Judgement”:

II. **READING:** [Matthew 24:1-51; 25:31-46](#) (WEB) [PoG]

Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way. His disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple. 2 But he answered them, “You see all of these things, don’t you? Most certainly I tell you, there will not be left here one stone on another, that will not be thrown down.”

3 As he sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be? What is the sign of your coming, and of the end of the age?”

4 Jesus answered them, “Be careful that no one leads you astray. 5 For many will come in my name, saying, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will lead many astray. 6 You will hear of wars and rumours of wars. See that you aren’t troubled, for all this must happen, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there will be famines, plagues, and earthquakes in various places. 8 But all these things are the beginning of birth pains.

9 “Then they will deliver you up to oppression and will kill you. You will be hated by all of the nations for my name’s sake. 10 Then many will stumble, and will deliver up one another, and will hate one another. 11 Many false prophets will arise and will lead many astray. 12 Because iniquity will be multiplied, the love of many will grow cold. 13 But he who endures to the end will be saved. 14 This Good News of the Kingdom will be preached in the whole world for a testimony to all the nations, and then the end will come.

15 “When, therefore, you see the abomination of desolation, [Daniel 9:27; 11:31; 12:11](#), which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (let the reader understand), 16 then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. 17 Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take out the things that are in his house. 18 Let him who is in the field not return back to get his clothes. 19 But woe to those who are with child and to nursing mothers in those days! 20 Pray that your flight will not be in the winter nor on a Sabbath, 21 for then there will be great suffering, such as has not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, nor ever will be. 22 Unless those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved. But for the sake of the chosen ones, those days will be shortened.

23 “Then if any man tells you, ‘Behold, here is the Christ!’ or, ‘There!’ don’t believe it. 24 For there will arise false christs, and false prophets, and they will show great signs and wonders, so as to lead astray, if possible, even the chosen ones.

25 “Behold, I have told you beforehand.

26 “If therefore they tell you, ‘Behold, he is in the wilderness,’ don’t go out; or ‘Behold, he is in the inner rooms,’ don’t believe it. 27 For as the lightning flashes from the east, and is seen even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. 28 For wherever the carcass is, that is where the vultures gather together.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040



29 “But immediately after the suffering of those days, the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give its light, the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken; [Isaiah 13:10; 34:4](#) 30 and then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky. Then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory. 31 He will send out his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together his chosen ones from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.

32 “Now from the fig tree learn this parable: When its branch has now become tender and produces its leaves, you know that the summer is near. 33 Even so you also, when you see all these things, know that he is near, even at the doors. 34 Most certainly I tell you, this generation will not pass away until all these things are accomplished. 35 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away.

36 “But no one knows of that day and hour, not even the angels of heaven, but my Father only. 37 As the days of Noah were, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. 38 For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ship, 39 and they didn’t know until the flood came and took them all away, so will the coming of the Son of Man be. 40 Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and one will be left. 41 Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and one will be left. 42 Watch therefore, for you don’t know in what hour your Lord comes. 43 But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what watch of the night the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have allowed his house to be broken into. 44 Therefore also be ready, for in an hour that you don’t expect, the Son of Man will come.

45 “Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has set over his household, to give them their food in due season? 46 Blessed is that servant whom his lord finds doing so when he comes. 47 Most certainly I tell you that he will set him over all that he has. 48 But if that evil servant should say in his heart, ‘My lord is delaying his coming,’ 49 and begins to beat his fellow servants, and eat and drink with the drunkards, 50 the lord of that servant will come in a day when he doesn’t expect it and in an hour when he doesn’t know it, 51 and will cut him in pieces and appoint his portion with the hypocrites. That is where the weeping and grinding of teeth will be.

31 “But when the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then he will sit on the throne of his glory. 32 Before him all the nations will be gathered, and he will separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. 33 He will set the sheep [*believers*] on his right hand, but the goats [*non-believers*] on the left. 34 Then the King will tell those on his right hand, ‘Come, blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world; 35 for I was hungry and you gave me food to eat. I was thirsty and you gave me drink. I was a stranger and you took me in. 36 I was naked and you clothed me. I was sick and you visited me. I was in prison and you came to me.’

37 “Then the righteous will answer him, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you a drink? 38 When did we see you as a stranger and take you in, or naked and clothe you? 39 When did we see you sick or in prison and come to you?’

40 “The King will answer them, ‘Most certainly I tell you, because you did it to one of the least of these my brothers, you did it to me.’ 41 Then he will say also to those on the left hand, ‘Depart from me, you cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels; 42 for I was hungry, and you didn’t give me food to eat; I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink; 43 I was a stranger, and you didn’t take me in; naked, and you didn’t clothe me; sick, and in prison, and you didn’t visit me.’

44 “Then they will also answer, saying, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and didn’t help you?’

45 “Then he will answer them, saying, ‘Most certainly I tell you, because you didn’t do it to one of the least of these, you didn’t do it to me.’ 46 These will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Though we are living post-Cross now, we can look back to Jesus's death, that while dead, He ministered to those in prison (being guarded and keeping watch, [G5438](#)). He spoke the Truth of Himself and God's Gospel of Grace so that they were given the free-will choice on whether to believe in Him for Salvation or not.

[1 Peter 3:18-22](#) (WEB)

Because Christ also suffered for sins once, the righteous for the unrighteous, that he might bring you to God, being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the Spirit, 19 in whom he also went and preached to the spirits in prison, 20 who before were disobedient, when God waited patiently in the days of Noah, while the ship was being built. In it, few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water. 21 This is a symbol of baptism, which now saves you—not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, 22 who is at the right hand of God, having gone into heaven, angels and authorities and powers being made subject to him.

Question: Is this fair to you that the Lord ministered to those who didn't have a chance to know Jesus then?

Response:

- B. As now, living post-Cross in the "year of the Lord's favour" which is not one year, but refers to a time-period that is from Jesus coming to His next coming. And this Second Coming will be pre-empted by what is coined "The Rapture". This word isn't in the Bible, but is a term created for all believers being lifted from this earth to meet the Lord Jesus in the Heavens. Of note, that when referring to believers whose bodies have perished on this earth, it is discussed as "sleep" (just as Jesus referred to the deceased Lazarus in [John 11:11-15](#) as fallen asleep). Likewise for the phrase "the dead in Christ", it is not the same Death as being a non-believer whose eternal destination is in Hell.

[1 Corinthians 15:51-55](#) (WEB)

Behold, I tell you a mystery. We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound and the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we will be changed. 53 For this perishable body must become imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality. 54 But when this perishable body will have become imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then what is written will happen: "Death is swallowed up in victory." [Isaiah 25:8](#)

55 "Death, where is your sting? Hades, where is your victory?" See [Hosea 13:14](#)

[1 Thessalonians 4:13-18](#) (WEB)

But we don't want you to be ignorant, brothers, concerning those who have fallen asleep, so that you don't grieve like the rest, who have no hope. 14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus. 15 For this we tell you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive, who are left until the coming of the Lord, will in no way precede those who have fallen asleep. 16 For the Lord himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and with God's trumpet. The dead in Christ will rise first, 17 then we who are alive, who are left, will be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air. So we will be with the Lord forever. 18 Therefore comfort one another with these words.

Question: If the “dead in Christ” and all other believers are “caught up together” (raptured) to meet Jesus, who is left on the earth?

Response:

- C. So, when does the “rapture” take place? For me, it is in the middle of the Great Tribulation. When reading [Revelation 5, 6, and 7](#) as being in chronological order, “those who came out of the great tribulation” did so after the sixth seal was broken and before the seventh seal. When they came out (were raptured), it states from what we read above, that “we will be with the Lord forever. Therefore comfort one another with these words”. And we will read following that they are clothed in white robes, and they are before the throne of God. We see that there is an immediate transition from being on earth to being changed in that twinkling of an eye into the imperishable. All those, “dead in Christ” and living believers go straight to where the Lord is, shepherding them and leading them to springs of life-giving waters.

[Revelation 7:9-17](#) (WEB) [PoG]

After these things I looked, and behold, a great multitude, which no man could count, out of every nation and of all tribes, peoples, and languages, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, dressed in white robes, with palm branches in their hands. 10 They cried with a loud voice, saying, “Salvation be to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb!”

11 All the angels were standing around the throne, the elders, and the four living creatures; and they fell on their faces before his throne, and worshiped God, 12 saying, “Amen! Blessing, glory, wisdom, thanksgiving, honour, power, and might, be to our God forever and ever! Amen.”

13 One of the elders answered, saying to me, “These who are arrayed in the white robes, who are they, and where did they come from?”

14 I told him, “My lord, you know.”

He said to me, “These are those who came out of the great suffering [tribulation]. They washed their robes, and made them white in the Lamb’s blood. 15 Therefore they are before the throne of God, they serve him day and night in his temple. He who sits on the throne will spread his tabernacle over them. 16 They will never be hungry or thirsty any more. The sun won’t beat on them, nor any heat; 17 for the Lamb who is in the middle of the throne shepherds them and leads them to springs of life-giving waters. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes.”

Question: Are any who are “raptured” told or shown to be judged?

Response:

- D. This, is not the only “rapture”. From the time that these living believers and “dead in Christ” are taken up to heaven, earth and humanity still exist. And thus, for a time period, with chaos ravaging the earth, other people will come to believe in Christ Jesus as the great tribulation testifies of the Lord. The next “rapture” is the harvest.

FINAL JUDGEMENT

Bible Study: Lesson 040

[Revelations 14:6-20](#) (WEB)

I saw an angel flying in mid heaven, having an eternal Good News to proclaim to those who dwell on the earth, and to every nation, tribe, language, and people. 7 He said with a loud voice, "Fear the Lord, and give him glory; for the hour of his judgment has come. Worship him who made the heaven, the earth, the sea, and the springs of waters!"

8 Another, a second angel, followed, saying, "Babylon the great has fallen, which has made all the nations to drink of the wine of the wrath of her sexual immorality."

9 Another angel, a third, followed them, saying with a great voice, "If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives a mark on his forehead, or on his hand, 10 he also will drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is prepared unmixed in the cup of his anger. He will be tormented with fire and sulphur in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb. 11 The smoke of their torment goes up forever and ever. They have no rest day and night, those who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name. 12 Here is the perseverance of the saints, those who keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."

13 I heard a voice from heaven saying, "Write, 'Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on.'"

"Yes," says the Spirit, "that they may rest from their labours; for their works follow with them."

14 I looked, and saw a white cloud, and on the cloud one sitting like a son of man, [Daniel 7:13](#) having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15 Another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him who sat on the cloud, "Send your sickle, and reap; for the hour to reap has come; for the harvest of the earth is ripe!" 16 He who sat on the cloud thrust his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 Another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven. He also had a sharp sickle. 18 Another angel came out from the altar, he who has power over fire, and he called with a great voice to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, "Send your sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for the earth's grapes are fully ripe!" 19 The angel thrust his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vintage of the earth, and threw it into the great wine press of the wrath of God. 20 The wine press was trodden outside of the city, and blood came out of the wine press, even to the bridles of the horses, as far as one thousand six hundred stadia.

Question: What does it mean to you that, "Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on... that they may rest from their labours; for their works follow with them"?

Response:

- E. What follows the harvest are bowls of wrath ([Revelation 15 and 16](#)) poured out over humanity to give one last set of signs and wonders to have people come to believe in Him. More Grace and opportunity for anyone to choose Him. But in heaven, multitudes and multitudes give praise (all those believers who have come up from the earth in the previous "raptures"). Yet, on earth, some humans come to believe in the Lord still.

[Revelation 19:1-9;19-21](#) (WEB)

After these things I heard something like a loud voice of a great multitude in heaven, saying, "Hallelujah! Salvation, power, and glory belong to our God; 2 for his judgments are true and righteous. For he has judged the great prostitute, who corrupted the earth with her sexual immorality, and he has avenged the blood of his servants at her hand."

3 A second said, "Hallelujah! Her smoke goes up forever and ever." 4 The twenty-four elders and the four living creatures fell down and worshiped God who sits on the throne, saying, "Amen! Hallelujah!"

5 A voice came from the throne, saying, "Give praise to our God, all you his servants, you who fear him, the small and the great!"

6 I heard something like the voice of a great multitude, and like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of mighty thunders, saying, "Hallelujah! For the Lord our God, the Almighty, reigns! 7 Let's rejoice and be exceedingly glad, and let's give the glory to him. For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his wife has made herself ready." 8 It was given to her that she would array herself in bright, pure, fine linen: for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.

9 He said to me, "Write, 'Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb.'" He said to me, "These are true words of God."

19 I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him who sat on the horse, and against his army. 20 The beast was taken, and with him the false prophet who worked the signs in his sight, with which he deceived those who had received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were thrown alive into the lake of fire that burns with sulphur. 21 The rest were killed with the sword of him who sat on the horse, the sword which came out of his mouth. So all the birds were filled with their flesh.

Question: Who is now left on the earth?

Response:

- F. We are now set up for Christ's 1000-year reign. We have two groups of people left now: the first are those already changed into their new bodies from being brought up out of the earth, and secondly, those who are left on the earth that came to believe in Christ Jesus (but who have not received their new bodies). These believing survivors of the wrath of God are now free of evil as Satan and the Devil are locked up. These people can now start repopulating the earth as they are still in the original bodies. He is using these 1000 years of His reign to demonstrate to humanity what earth would be like if sin, Satan, and the Devil didn't exist.

Revelation 20:1-6 (WEB)

I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, having the key of the abyss and a great chain in his hand. 2 He seized the dragon, the old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole inhabited earth, and bound him for a thousand years, 3 and cast him into the abyss, and shut it, and sealed it over him, that he should deceive the nations no more, until the thousand years were finished. After this, he must be freed for a short time. 4 I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was given to them. I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and such as didn't worship the beast nor his image, and didn't receive the mark on their forehead and on their hand. They lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. 5 The rest of the dead didn't live until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. 6 Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over these, the second death has no power, but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will reign with him one thousand years.

Question: Who are the "rest of the dead"?

Response:

- G. God always gives us free will. He will never force us to believe Him. Hence why, after 1000 years, Satan will be released for people to chose between believing the Lord or not.

[Revelation 20:7-10](#) (WEB)

And after the thousand years, Satan will be released from his prison, 8 and he will come out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to the war; the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. 9 They went up over the width of the earth, and surrounded the camp of the saints, and the beloved city. Fire came down out of heaven from God and devoured them. 10 The devil who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the beast and the false prophet are also. They will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

Question: We are told that during this time, to die at 100 years old is to die early and animals won't kill each other ([Isaiah 65:17-25](#))—why then only 1000 years of reign?

Response:

- H. The people now remaining on the earth are believers still alive from before the 1000-year reign, and anyone born during that 1000-years that did not get deceived and believes in the Lord. We have to recall that those who were raptured before, were already made new, given white robes, and have been with the Lord perpetually. Thus, all who are to be judged now at the final judgement are: believers that are still alive (but not in their new bodies) and all those who are dead—whether those believers who died between the previous “rapture” and through the 1000-year reign, or those that are dead non-believers (awaiting in Hades for their final judgement). And it is at this final judgement that two scrolls (books) are opened that tell of the persons’ works. But these works are not talking about sins committed, but whether the work of believing or work of not believing in Jesus Christ:

[John 6:28-29](#) (WEB)

28 They said therefore to him, “What must we do, that we may work the works of God?”

29 Jesus answered them, “This is the work of God, that you believe in him whom he has sent.”

[Revelation 20:11-15](#) (WEB)

I saw a great white throne, and him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. There was found no place for them. 12 I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne, and they opened books. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works. 13 The sea gave up the dead who were in it. Death and Hades gave up the dead who were in them. They were judged, each one according to his works. 14 Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire. 15 If anyone was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire.

Question: Have you ever been threatened or told not to commit sin because it will be revealed in final judgment from some “book of sins”?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [1 Corinthians 13:4-8a](#) (WEB)

Love is patient and is kind. Love doesn't envy. Love doesn't brag, is not proud, 5 doesn't behave itself inappropriately, doesn't seek its own way, is not provoked, takes no account of evil; 6 doesn't rejoice in unrighteousness, but rejoices with the truth; 7 bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, and endures all things. 8 Love never fails.

Thoughts: We've learned before that 'God = Love' ([1 John 4:16](#)). So when we read that “love takes no account of evil”, it is directly saying, “God takes no account of evil”. Meaning, there is no record-keeping of any of your wrongs, sins, or evils. How can He judge us on something He does not keep a record of? All your sins of the flesh were taken at the Cross “once and for all time” ([Hebrews 10:10](#)). We need not fear final judgement because there will be no torment (correction, punishment, penalty – penal infliction). The only Sin that matters is the Sin of Not Believing in Christ Jesus (being the works of God to believe); and this Jesus's words about believing in Him:

[John 12:44-48](#) (WEB)

Jesus cried out and said, “Whoever believes in me, believes not in me, but in him who sent me. 45 He who sees me sees him who sent me. 46 I have come as a light into the world, that whoever believes in me may not remain in the darkness. 47 If anyone listens to my sayings, and doesn't believe, I don't judge him. For I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 He who rejects me, and doesn't receive my sayings, has one who judges him. The word that I spoke will judge him in the last day.

[1 John 2:22-29](#) (WEB) [PoG]

Who is the liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the Antichrist, he who denies the Father and the Son. 23 Whoever denies the Son doesn't have the Father. He who confesses the Son has the Father also.

24 Therefore, as for you, let that remain in you which you heard from the beginning. If that which you heard from the beginning remains in you, you also will remain in the Son, and in the Father. 25 This is the promise which he promised us, the eternal life. 26 These things I have written to you concerning those who would lead you astray. 27 As for you, the anointing which you received from him remains in you, and you don't need for anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is no lie, and even as it taught you, you will remain in him. 28 Now, little children, remain in him, that when he appears, we may have boldness, and not be ashamed before him at his coming. 29 If you know that he is righteous, you know that everyone who [has been made righteous] has been born of him.

[1 John 4:17-18](#) (WEB) [PoG]

In this, love has been made perfect among us, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment, because as he is, even so we are in this world. 18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear has punishment [torment]. He who fears is not made perfect in love.

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

INTENTION:

Fasting is not about getting God to move based on sacrificing something.

Nor is it a calendar-ritual or religious requirement.

It is there to help break through your own unbelief.

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

Bible Study: Lesson 041



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Fasting (Meat & Drink) and what it means for us.

Food (“meat”) and drink are basic survival needs, programmed in us to continue life on this earth. It is the most basic form of our nature. Yet, we are not just natural beings, but spiritual. Thus, we have a need to “feed” both, but place our Born-Again Spiritual reality above the other.

Our natural realm exists out of the soul within us—the term “natural” being a derivative of the term “soul”:

Soul – G5590: psychē

2. The soul
 - a. the seat of the feelings, desires, affections, aversions (our heart, soul etc.)
 - b. the (human) soul in so far as it is constituted that by the right use of the aids offered it by God it can attain its highest end and secure eternal blessedness, the soul regarded as a moral being designed for everlasting life
 - c. the soul as an essence which differs from the body and is not dissolved by death (distinguished from other parts of the body)

Natural – G5591: psychikos

1. of or belonging to breath
 - a. having the nature and characteristics of the breath
 - i. the principal of animal life, which men have in common with the brutes
 - b. governed by breath
 - ii. the sensuous nature with its subjection to appetite and passion

As our natural-born self relates to the basic “animal” instincts all species have, it can be the core of what drives us.

This duality of natural and spiritual often puts a conflict in us—a power-struggle in a way. Whom we yield ourselves to, we become slaves to ([Romans 6:16](#)). Our “animal instincts” can take over from the Spiritual; the Spiritual likewise taking over from the natural (soul).

This is where I feel that fasting can become a means to help overcome the natural (both the flesh and unbelief).

When we fast, we must do so from the Spiritual (Holy Spirit driven), not driven out of the flesh. What is meant here is that the flesh can seek its own glory in fasting—it will try and show itself as strong by being able to fast (go without). If fasting only becomes fleshly, ritualistic, or religious, then it cannot benefit the Spiritual Life.

Just as Jesus was led by the Holy Spirit into the wilderness to fast for 40 days, we too can be led by the Holy Spirit to fast. For me personally, I saw this early on after my Baptism of the Holy Spirit where He would just lead me to fast for a meal, a day, a week, etc. And I found that when it was Him leading and me obeying in the Spirit, the desire for food was not very strong—as though the Spirit Himself was giving me the ability to overcome the flesh (natural).

Typically for me, especially when under stress and duress (anxiety-laden trouble), my flesh wants to find a means to calm that struggle through food. I then tend to stress-eat. But this never actually calms anything long-term in me to bring me peace. Thus, I succumb to my human nature instead of the Spiritual.

We can look at the powerful reality that is human nature for food and drink in the feeding of the “five thousand” (this number not counting women and children). And then the aftermath of that miracle, where, because they were all fed in abundance (their natural self taken care of), they wanted to force Jesus to be their king.

Yet, Jesus escaped and then let them know that it isn’t natural meat and drink that brings life, but Him as the Christ.

When we feed the Spiritual (not neglecting the natural), we gain a Life that mere food (meat) and drink cannot give us. This is a Kingdom of Heaven (Kingdom of God) reality!

Please note, though, that the fasting I am talking about here is one of abstaining from food and drink through the examples given. For you personally, you may not be in a place where that is doable or healthy for you. If you have medical conditions that affect your body, your personal fast may be from something else (not food or drink). Hence why it is important for you to use your personal relationship with the Lord to guide you into what you must fast from.

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

Bible Study: Lesson 041



II. READING: [John 6:1-69](#) (EHV)

After this, Jesus crossed over to the other side of the Sea of Galilee (or Tiberias). 2 A large crowd followed him because they saw the miraculous signs he was performing on those who were sick. 3 Jesus went up on the hillside and sat down there with his disciples. 4 The Jewish Passover Festival was near.

5 When Jesus looked up and saw a huge crowd coming toward him, he asked Philip, "Where can we buy bread for these people to eat?" 6 But Jesus was saying this to test him, for he himself knew what he was going to do.

7 Philip answered him, "Two hundred denarii (two hundred days' wages) worth of bread would not be enough for each of them to have just a little."

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, said to him, 9 "There's a boy here who has five barley loaves and two fish, but what is that for so many people?"

10 Jesus said, "Have the people sit down." There was plenty of grass in that place, so they sat down. There were about five thousand men.

11 Then Jesus took the loaves and, after giving thanks, he distributed pieces to those who were seated. He also did the same with the fish—as much as they wanted.

12 When the people were full, he told his disciples, "Gather the pieces that are left over so that nothing is wasted."

13 So they gathered them and filled twelve baskets with pieces from the five barley loaves left over by those who had eaten.

14 When the people saw the miraculous sign Jesus did, they said, "This really is the Prophet who is coming into the world."

15 When Jesus realized that they intended to come and take him by force to make him king, he withdrew again to the mountain by himself.

16 When evening came, his disciples went down to the sea, 17 got into a boat, and started across the sea to Capernaum. It was already dark, and Jesus had not yet come to them. 18 A strong wind started to blow, and the sea became rough.

19 After they had rowed about three or four miles, they saw Jesus walking on the sea toward their boat, and they were afraid.

20 But he said to them, "It is I. Do not be afraid!"

21 Then they were willing to take him into the boat, and immediately the boat reached the shore where they were heading.

22 The next day, the crowd that stayed on the other side of the sea noticed that only one boat was there. They also knew that Jesus had not stepped into the boat with his disciples, but they had gone away without him. 23 Other boats from Tiberias came to shore near the place where they ate the bread after the Lord gave thanks. 24 When the crowd saw that neither Jesus nor his disciples were there, they got into the boats and went to Capernaum looking for Jesus. 25 When they found him on the other side of the sea, they asked him, "Rabbi, when did you get here?"

26 Jesus answered them, "Amen, Amen, I tell you: You are not looking for me because you saw the miraculous signs, but because you ate the loaves and were filled. 27 Do not continue to work for the food that spoils, but for the food that endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you. For on him God the Father has placed his seal of approval."

28 So they said to him, "What should we do to carry out the works of God?"

29 Jesus answered them, "This is the work of God: that you believe in the one he sent."

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

Bible Study: Lesson 041



30 Then they asked him, "So what miraculous sign are you going to do, that we may see it and believe you? What miraculous sign are you going to perform? 31 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, just as it is written, 'He gave them bread from heaven to eat.'"

32 Jesus said to them, "Amen, Amen, I tell you: Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but my Father gives you the real bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is the one who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world."

34 "Sir," they said to him, "give us this bread all the time!"

35 "I am the Bread of Life," Jesus told them. "The one who comes to me will never be hungry, and the one who believes in me will never be thirsty. 36 But I said to you that you have also seen me, and you do not believe. 37 Everyone the Father gives me will come to me, and the one who comes to me I will never cast out. 38 For I have come down from heaven, not to do my will, but the will of him who sent me. 39 And this is the will of him who sent me: that I should lose none of those he has given me, but raise them up on the Last Day. 40 For this is the will of my Father: that everyone who sees the Son and believes in him may have eternal life. And I will raise him up on the Last Day."

41 So the Jews started grumbling about him, because he said, "I am the bread that came down from heaven." 42 They asked, "Isn't this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? So how can he say, 'I have come down from heaven'?"

43 Jesus answered them, "Stop grumbling among yourselves. 44 No one can come to me unless the Father who sent me draws him. And I will raise him up on the Last Day. 45 It is written in the Prophets, 'They will all be taught by God.' Everyone who listens to the Father and learns from him comes to me. 46 I am not saying that anyone has seen the Father except the one who is from God. He is the one who has seen the Father. 47 Amen, Amen, I tell you: The one who believes in me has eternal life.

48 "I am the Bread of Life. 49 Your fathers ate manna in the wilderness, and they died. 50 This is the bread that comes down from heaven, so that anyone may eat it and not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats this bread, he will live forever. The bread that I will give for the life of the world is my flesh."

52 At that, the Jews argued among themselves, "How can this man give us his flesh to eat?"

53 So Jesus said to them, "Amen, Amen, I tell you: Unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you do not have life in yourselves. 54 The one who eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the Last Day. 55 For my flesh is real food, and my blood is real drink. 56 The one who eats my flesh and drinks my blood remains in me, and I in him. 57 Just as the living Father sent me and I live because of the Father, so the one who feeds on me will live because of me. 58 This is the bread that came down from heaven, not like your fathers ate and died. The one who eats this bread will live forever."

59 He said these things while teaching in the synagogue in Capernaum. 60 When they heard it, many of his disciples said, "This is a hard teaching! Who can listen to it?"

61 But Jesus, knowing in himself that his disciples were grumbling about this, asked them, "Does this cause you to stumble in your faith? 62 What if you would see the Son of Man ascending to where he was before? 63 The Spirit is the one who gives life. The flesh does not help at all. The words that I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life. 64 But there are some of you who do not believe." For Jesus knew from the beginning those who would not believe and the one who would betray him. 65 He said, "This is why I told you that no one can come to me unless it is given to him by my Father."

66 After this, many of his disciples turned back and were not walking with him anymore. 67 So Jesus asked the Twelve, "You do not want to leave too, do you?"

68 Simon Peter answered him, "Lord, to whom will we go? You have the words of eternal life. 69 We have come to believe and know that you are the Holy One of God."

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. The Holy Spirit led Jesus out into the wilderness who faced the temptations of the devil. During this time, we do not know fully what Jesus was doing—but we do know that he was fasting (food and drink). Of interest, is that only after the 40 days and nights did He become hungry. This natural hunger was His first test, in which He answered by giving importance to the feeding of the Spiritual. Jesus quoted scripture to the devil about also living from the Word of God—by which Jesus (in our John 6 reading above) shared that He “is the Bread of Life”. For me, this shows the strength of the Holy Spirit (Spiritual) during that time to overcome the natural hunger. Then, once Jesus had completed the temptations, angels came and served (ministered) to Him. This term “ministered” ([G1247](#)) includes to “offer food and drink”, showing care for (not outright rejecting) the natural.

[Matthew 4:1-11](#) (EHV)

Then Jesus was led by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the Devil. 2 After he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was hungry. 3 The Tempter came and said to him, “If you are the Son of God, command these stones to become bread.”

4 But Jesus answered, “It is written: Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that comes out of the mouth of God.”

5 Then the Devil took him into the holy city. He placed him on the pinnacle of the temple, 6 and he said to him, “If you are the Son of God, throw yourself down. For it is written: He will command his angels concerning you. And they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.”

7 Jesus said to him, “Again, it is written: You shall not test the Lord your God.”

8 Again the Devil took him to a very high mountain and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. 9 He said to him, “I will give you all of these things, if you will bow down and worship me.”

10 Then Jesus said to him, “Go away, Satan! For it is written: Worship the Lord your God, and serve him only.”

11 Then the Devil left him, and just then angels came and served him.

Question: Jesus is the most true and accurate Word of God—are you feeding off of Jesus (His demonstration of who God is, and Jesus’s accomplishment through the Cross)?

Response:

- B. Jesus criticized the Pharisees in their fasting. For the Pharisees, it was ritualistic habit (done religiously) and from the flesh—as they made their fasting known to others to “show off”. This is why the importance of fasting from the direction of the Spirit for reasons of the Spirit—not to do so for the sake of doing so. The Pharisees gained nothing but “a pat on the back” from others without any gain of the Spiritual / Heavenly. Their “treasure” was to look good in the sight of other people, not for the Lord.

[Matthew 6:16-21](#) (EHV)

“Whenever you fast, do not make yourself look sad like the hypocrites, for they disfigure their faces to show everyone that they are fasting. Amen I tell you: They have received their reward. 17 But when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face, 18 so that it is not apparent to people that you are fasting, but only to your Father who sees what is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you.

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

Bible Study: Lesson 041



19 “Do not store up treasures for yourselves on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. 20 But store up treasures for yourselves in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. 21 Because where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.

Question: Have you fasted because you were told to, or was part of your religious custom?

Response:

- C. During Jesus’s ministry, there came a time where His disciples could not cast out a demon from a child. When the disciples asked him why, Jesus responded with the need for “fasting and praying”. But what we have to understand, is that fasting and praying won’t cast out the demon (not what Jesus was instructing), but that the purpose of fasting and praying was to help overcome any unbelief (as the father requested). Unbelief being anything a person believes in the natural that differs (thus is opposed to) God’s form of belief.

[Mark 9:17-29](#) (EHV)

One man from the crowd answered him, “Teacher, I brought you my son, who has a spirit that makes him unable to speak. 18 Wherever it seizes him, it throws him down, and he foams at the mouth, grinds his teeth, and becomes rigid. I asked your disciples to drive it out, but they could not.”

19 “O unbelieving generation,” Jesus replied. “How long will I be with you? How long will I put up with you? Bring him to me.”

20 They brought the boy to Jesus. As soon as the spirit saw him, it threw the boy into a convulsion. He fell on the ground and rolled around, foaming at the mouth.

21 Jesus asked the boy’s father, “How long has this been happening to him?”

“From childhood,” he said. 22 “It has often thrown him into the fire and into the water to kill him. But if you can do anything, have compassion on us and help us.”

23 “If you can?” Jesus said to him. “All things are possible for the one who believes.”

24 The child’s father immediately cried out and said with tears, “I do believe. Help me with my unbelief!”

25 When Jesus saw that a crowd was quickly gathering, he rebuked the unclean spirit. “You mute and deaf spirit,” he said, “I command you to come out of him and never enter him again!”

26 The spirit screamed, shook the boy violently, and came out. The boy looked so much like a corpse that many of them said, “He’s dead!” 27 But Jesus took him by the hand, raised him up, and he stood up.

28 When Jesus went into a house, his disciples asked him privately, “Why were we not able to drive it out?”

29 He said to them, “This kind cannot be driven out, except by prayer and fasting.”

Question: How do you feel fasting and praying can help you overcome unbelief?

Response:

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

Bible Study: Lesson 041



D. Fasting is not a means to force a prayer to be answered or miracle to be “released” by the Lord—this would be a flesh action to try and get God to move based on what we have done (hence the Pharisees “look at me” fasting). As a Born-Again believer, we have been freely Gifted by God, through Jesus, in the Spirit all things we will ever need in the here and now to overcome the world. So, we are not fasting to get, we are fasting to remove the “unbelief” hindrances that block the Gifts of the Spirit out from us into any given situation. Thus, it is a personal obstacle in us we have to remove, not that God is not moving on our behalf. The best way to know that it is our own unbelief is to know and learn what we have already been Gifted by God to use.

Ephesians 1:3 (EHV)

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places.

Ephesians 2:4-10 (EHV)

But God, because he is rich in mercy, because of the great love with which he loved us, 5 made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in trespasses. It is by grace you have been saved! 6 He also raised us up with Christ and seated us with him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus. 7 He did this so that, in the coming ages, he might demonstrate the surpassing riches of his grace in kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. 8 Indeed, it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God— 9 not by works, so that no one can boast.

10 For we are God’s workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared in advance so that we would walk in them.

Philippians 4:13 (EHV)

I can do all things through Christ, who strengthens me.

Question: Can you recognise anything you already have been Gifted that you have been fasting and praying for?

Response:

E. Because of the conflict that can exist in us between our flesh (what we learned from this world) and the Spirit (what we have from the Lord), we must remind ourselves that the flesh has already been overcome. When we become Born-Again, our identity as being in the flesh WAS, at that moment, changed to that of Christ’s Identity. As such, we need to believe, understand, and put into practice in our lives now, that the flesh has already been crucified—that it has died and does not actually have the power over us that we feel it has. For us, being a “living sacrifice” isn’t that we are always climbing back onto the alter to crucify our flesh again, but knowing that it was already sacrificed (once and for all time) and that we NOW live as having been sacrificed, risen in Christ Jesus! From this reality, we can begin to forget all we knew in the flesh—renewing our minds to this truth.

Romans 12:1-2 (EHV)

Therefore I urge you, brothers, by the mercies of God, to offer your bodies as a living sacrifice—holy and pleasing to God—which is your appropriate worship. 2 Also, do not continue to conform to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, so that you test and approve what is the will of God— what is good, pleasing, and perfect.

FASTING (MEAT & DRINK)

Bible Study: Lesson 041



[Galatians 5:24](#) (EHV)

Those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the sinful flesh with its passions and desires.

Question: How can fasting help us prove the existence that we already have been (our flesh has been) crucified?

Response:

F. With how strong our natural desires can be for survival (food and drink), our flesh can seek for itself its own means to achieve a form of peace and joy (self-gratification). But there really is no amount of food or drink that can bring the satisfaction that the Holy Spirit can bring. Those following Jesus from our reading in John 6 thought that unlimited food and drink was enough to have Jesus a king for their kingdom. It's not what our bodies desire for survival (that satisfy our flesh), but what the Holy Spirit provides as His life, not just the life of the body.

[Romans 14:17](#) (EHV)

For the kingdom of God does not consist of eating and drinking, but of righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit.

Question: To you, what is the comparison here between the natural and the Spiritual?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [1 Corinthians 15:44b-49](#) (EHV) [PoG]

If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual body. 45 So also it is written, "The first man, Adam, became a living [soul] ([G5590](#))." The last Adam became a life-giving spirit. 46 However, that which is spiritual is not first; rather, first comes the natural ([G5591](#)), then the spiritual. 47 The first man is of the earth, made of dust. The second man is the Lord from heaven. 48 As was the man made of dust, so are the people who are made of dust, and as is the heavenly man, so the heavenly people will be. 49 And just as we have borne the image of the man made of dust, let us also bear the image of the heavenly man.

Thoughts: We are born into this world stemming from God's original Creation with Adam. But Adam sinned and brought that upon us all. Yet, God loves us so much, that He redeemed this world from Adam's sin and gave us the chance to be Born-Again into His Spiritual reality (existence). In that sense, we live both in the natural and the spiritual. The Spiritual will never cease, yet the natural will. Both need caring for.

But, as the Spiritual is eternal, we need to Live from the Spiritual, not the natural. Helping us discern the two is through fasting. We then can remove what does not belong, what is already dead (sacrificed), and feed on Jesus who brings us a greater Life from the Spiritual into the natural—more than what we can ever achieve on our own (by the flesh). We must now (on this earth) let the Image of the Heavenly (Jesus) show through the image of the natural (Adam), understanding that both exist in the now.

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

INTENTION:

Emotions are not to be ignored or treated as “not from God”. The Lord has the same emotions He Created in us. How we respond (feel) from the emotions can be a sign of what is in you, and a choice on how to act on that feeling.

Don't deny them, push into them with the help of the Holy Spirit to guide you.

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Soul (Emotions & Feelings).

I am using two often interchangeable words (Emotions and Feelings), to define two aspects of what goes on in our soul.

As we had previously studied regarding the Body, Mind, Soul, Heart, and Spirit (Lessons 012 – 017), we learned that the soul was the seat of our emotional realm. And on each end of the soul are the heart and the mind gateways—our soul being influenced by the heart and the mind, and them likewise into the soul.

I have found that in my reading of the Bible, I never really focused on how real our emotional/soul wellbeing is to the Lord. To me, I grew up that all those emotions I felt were “bad”, and that to be the “Christian” I needed to be was to be as “emotionless” as Jesus and the disciples. But, I have come to see that both Jesus and the disciples experienced the same emotions that I do—and that I actually CAN relate those to the Lord, others in the Bible, and them to me!

Part of me not being able to grasp and handle my emotions and feelings was that no one taught me (nurtured in me) from childhood the proper tools to handle both the emotions, but also the feelings stemming from them.

This is where I like to distinguish the two aspects of Emotions and Feelings; having come to understand them as:

1. Emotions are the natural-occurring, God-designed, responses to both the world around us (in from the body, through the mind, into the soul) and to the Spirit in us (out from the Spirit, through the heart, into the soul).
2. Feelings are what we then do from those emotions. In essence, our “emotional” response and actions:
 - a. Example: a person yells at me. This brings about an emotion in us—one often of hurt and anger. The emotions you feel are neither right nor wrong... they just are. Our feelings in those emotions (from the event) are the things that want to create a response in those emotions... do we now ‘feel’ like punching them (violence / retaliation), ‘feel’ like dismissing them (not standing up for ourself), ‘feel’ like speaking about it with them (seeking understanding, rectification, and standing up for ourself), or ‘feel’ like forgiving them (releasing any bitterness and anger and letting the Lord help in the matter).

Because of the filters/veils (strongholds) we develop, what we feel like doing is often influenced in those emotional situations. Hence why “loving the Lord with all your heart, soul, mind, and strength” ([Mark 12:30](#)) is us removing those “fleshly” filters, to then react in the way the Lord desires us to out from the Spirit. Even when we do not ‘feel’ like responding to those emotions in a Godly way, we actually can from the Spirit in us; learning from Jesus’s emotional experiences, and how He handled His ‘feeling’ reaction in those emotions (like His frustration in [John 8](#)).

The soul is a battleground between the Spirit in us and the Flesh that is trained by this world. We discussed this more in our previous Lesson 041 where we are born from Adam (soul), but Born-Again in Christ (Spirit).

As such, this constant internal battle is often draining and can manifest itself in heartache, mental illness, and even sickness in our bodies—especially when we have unresolved hurts and traumas in our life. We can even view this world as constantly having unresolved trauma from what Adam did to bring that to our own lives. The Lord didn’t want us to suffer as we do, but He, knowing the suffering we would face, chose to face the same suffering as well. He is more hurt than we could ever be from our oft rejection of Him (purposeful or not).

Yet emotions are of the Lord—we must never reject or numb them, but use them as a means to approach the Lord (as Jesus Himself did). He has the same emotions as we do—for we are created in the Lord’s exact Likeness. Jesus faced all the same emotions we did, and it forced Him (He used them) to turn to His Father. He showed the full spectrum of emotions that included joy, happiness, anger, tears, frustration, emotional hurts from the constant accusations against Him, rejection, unjustness, and more. Jesus was even in darkest depression in the Garden praying. Paul, too, as often a physical beating he took, suffered depression, and contemplated life / death.

But what we can often dismiss or think of as ungodly in our emotions (soul) and play it down, the Lord actually plays it UP. Our emotions and feelings are Biblically real! We cannot ignore their reality and the effect it can have on us in this world. And as we ARE affected by this worldly reality, we do not have a saviour that does not relate to our soul!

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



When researching the term soul ([G5590](#): *psychē* - the seat of the feelings, desires, affections, aversions), I found that it is much more prevalent of a topic than most Bible translations give credit and meaning to. This we will tackle at the end to see where the word 'soul' has been changed in translation.

*I do understand that the definitions from the Greek of this word also include parts that are other than "emotions and feelings", but I do believe that the soul (psyche) is the seat of emotions and feelings, and not the word "life" as is typically used in these translations—for there are specific Greek words for this: living ([G2198](#): *zaō* – to live and breathe) and life ([G2222](#): *zōē* – one blessed, devoted to God). And soul is also different than what is defined as the body ([G4983](#): *sōma*), mind ([G1271](#): *dianoia*), heart ([G2588](#): *kardia*), spirit ([G4151](#): *pneuma*), and flesh ([G4561](#): *sarx*).*

With this being said, I want to help reveal how much God the Father, Jesus Christ, and Holy Spirit truly recognise our soul (emotions and feelings) and their importance! He Himself also demonstrating that He had a soul and dealt with the same emotions and feelings we do now. And it is with the conclusion of His faith in us, that our soul-realm is actively saved in both the 'here-and-now' and in the 'eternity to come' (per [1 Peter 1:9](#) in the reading below).

For this lesson, study the emotions being revealed, how it made them (or you) feel, and their reaction to them.

II. **READING:** [1 Peter 1:3-25](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! By his great mercy we have been born anew to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 and to an inheritance which is imperishable, undefiled, and unfading, kept in heaven for you, 5 who by God's power are guarded through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. 6 In this you rejoice, though now for a little while you may have to suffer various trials, 7 so that the genuineness of your faith, more precious than gold which though perishable is tested by fire, may redound to praise and glory and honour at the revelation of Jesus Christ. 8 Without having seen him you love him; though you do not now see him you believe in him and rejoice with unutterable and exalted joy. 9 As the outcome of your faith you obtain the salvation of your souls [*refer also [Hebrews 12:2a](#)*].

10 The prophets who prophesied of the grace that was to be yours searched and inquired about this salvation; 11 they inquired what person or time was indicated by the Spirit of Christ within them when predicting the sufferings of Christ and the subsequent glory. 12 It was revealed to them that they were serving not themselves but you, in the things which have now been announced to you by those who preached the good news to you through the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, things into which angels long to look.

13 Therefore [be prepared, calm, and collected in the core of your thinking; having a expectant, confident, and hopeful trust of] the grace that is coming to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ. 14 As obedient children, do not be conformed to the passions of your former ignorance, 15 but as he who called you is holy, be holy yourselves in all your conduct; 16 since it is written, "You shall be holy, for I am holy." 17 And if you invoke as Father him who judges each one impartially according to his deeds, conduct yourselves with [reverence] throughout the time of your exile. 18 You know that you were [redeemed and liberated] from the futile ways inherited from your fathers, not with perishable things such as silver or gold, 19 but with the precious blood of Christ, like that of a lamb without blemish or spot. 20 He was destined before the foundation of the world but was made manifest at the end of the times for your sake. 21 Through him you have confidence in God, who raised him from the dead and gave him glory, so that your faith and hope are in God.

22 Having purified your souls by your obedience to the truth for a sincere love of the brethren, love one another earnestly from the heart. 23 You have been born anew, not of perishable seed but of imperishable, through the living and abiding word of God; 24 for

"All flesh is like grass and all its glory like the flower of grass.

The grass withers, and the flower falls, 25 but the word of the Lord abides for ever."

That word is the good news which was preached to you.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. We must never think or believe we have a “God” that is distant or who cannot relate to what we are facing each and every day in our emotional battles. Not only are we Created in the Lord’s exact likeness (emotions and all), but He made Himself into a Human being to demonstrate that He can and does relate to us. No other person can relate to us the way He does. Though it is needed for us to share our own experiences with others, and others to us; He knows every miniscule detail that makes up our reality (piercing between soul and spirit, joints and marrow, discerning the thoughts and intents of the heart). Moreso, because He knows the ends from the beginnings ([Isaiah 46:9-10](#)), He also knows all the actions of all the people from Adam leading up to where and why the “now” exists in our lives and the lives of every person. Jesus cares for you and me in a way that is unmatched. Hence why we can honestly, openly, and completely rely on Him!

[Hebrews 4:12-16](#) (RSV) [PoG]

For the word of God is living and active, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing to the division of soul and spirit, of joints and marrow, and discerning the thoughts and intentions of the heart. 13 And before him no creature is hidden, but all are open and laid bare to the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

14 Since then we have a great high priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus, the Son of God, let us hold fast our confession. 15 For we have not a high priest who is unable to sympathize with [our weakness, sickness, and soul trials], but one who in every respect has been tempted as we are, yet without sin. 16 Let us then with confidence draw near to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

Question: Do you really believe the Lord can relate and understand fully what you are facing right now?

Response:

- B. The Lord KNOWS, throughout our entire life, we will constantly face conflict in our soul from the world around us. Often the anxiety we face is not just the “stress and worry” tomorrow may bring, but we just wake up and exist in anxiety. Some of you (like me) face that constant reality. The Lord says to “come to me”; because being “heavy laden” is to have that anxiety (burdened and loaded down with unregulated behaviour and thoughts). To come to him is that we get to share that load with Him and He that load with us. And that wherever we go (us leading or Him leading) He can never separate Himself from us; nor us from Him—He will forever share our load.

[Matthew 11:28-30](#) (RSV)

“Come to me, all who labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn from me; for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.”

Question: How can we learn from Jesus how we can find any specific form of “rest” (recovery, strength, and patient expectation) in Him?

Response:

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



- C. Sometimes, the things of this world take hold in our lives as a natural process of existing in this world. We can grow up with thinking that the way to succeed or have is a certain way. But, if we are not careful, those things can be part of the “labour and heavy laden” we carry. Often it can be a religious trap, trying to live a way of life we think is the “right way”. But we can see with a group of followers of Christ, they let go of letting “things” define their value—having found a trust in the Lord for their personal wellbeing and survival.

[Acts 4:31-33](#) (RSV)

And when they had prayed, the place in which they were gathered together was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God with boldness.

32 Now the company of those who believed were of one heart and soul, and no one said that any of the things which he possessed was his own, but they had everything in common. 33 And with great power the apostles gave their testimony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was upon them all.

Question: Have you ever experienced possessing something you thought would make you happy or bring you peace, only to find it just caused greater trouble or conflict in your soul?

Response:

- D. Sometimes, when our soul is troubled beyond what we think we can bear—and just want to give up on life—we do have the Holy Spirit inside us to be able to dwell with Him, in the Lord, for the many fruits of the Spirit to manifest in life. Sometimes, we face injustice, are rejected by a loved one, lose a child, face financial trials, hunger, hatred, abandonment, betrayal, and so much more! It can come from those we know, trust, or are in authority above us. This feels unbearable. Yet the Lord knows we will face persecutions in this life unique to ourselves—it may not even have anything to do with being a Christian, but because we live in a world which love constantly diminishes. Your persecution may be a stronghold in you or in someone else; someone’s jealousy, guilt, shame, and anger coming at you; or just a legal system that disrespects you because of how you were born... a financial status, a skin colour, a gender, and more. We will, Christian or not, face persecution—persecution being: to make run or flee, be hostile towards, harass, trouble, molest, mistreat, and suffer on account of something.

[Matthew 5:10-12](#) (RSV)

“Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness’ sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 11 “Blessed are you when men revile you and persecute you and utter all kinds of evil against you falsely on my account. 12 Rejoice and be glad, for your reward is great in heaven, for so men persecuted the prophets who were before you”.

[Luke 21:12-19](#) (RSV) [PoG]

“But before all this they will lay their hands on you and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, and you will be brought before kings and governors for my name’s sake. 13 This will be a time for you to bear testimony. 14 Settle it therefore in your minds, not to meditate beforehand how to answer; 15 for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which none of your adversaries will be able to withstand or contradict. 16 You will be delivered up even by parents and brothers and kinsmen and friends, and some of you they will put to death; 17 you will be hated by all for my name’s sake. 18 But not a hair of your head will perish. 19 By your endurance you will [obtain your soul].”

Question: What persecution have you faced in your life—even if it had nothing to do with being a Christian?

Response:

- E. God cannot violate our free will to be the one persecuting. In that sense, he cannot fully protect you from those who will persecute you. We will ALWAYS face unjust persecution. But He also promises that He will make sure we are blessed, restoring in this lifetime anything lost by the enemy (including those who have persecuted you). Remember God’s Grace and Mercy—“vengeance is His” is that He will provide the same immutable Grace and Mercy to both you and the one persecuting you. All this persecution affects the wellbeing of our soul! Yet, sometimes, we have to submit to those who are over us in the persecution to be able to give it all to the Lord.

[Romans 12:14-21; 13:1](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Bless those who persecute you; bless and do not curse them. 15 Rejoice with those who rejoice, weep with those who weep. 16 Live in harmony with one another; do not be haughty, but associate with the lowly; never be conceited. 17 Repay no one evil for evil, but take thought for what is noble in the sight of all. 18 If possible, so far as it depends upon you, live peaceably with all. 19 Beloved, never avenge yourselves, but leave it to the wrath of God; for it is written, “Vengeance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord.” 20 No, “if your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him drink; for by so doing you will heap burning coals upon his head.” 21 Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good.

1 Let [all your soul yield to those who have a hold over and choice over you]. For there is no authority except from God, and those that exist have been instituted by God.

Question: I know I have been the persecutor before; have you? Did you hold “power” over any of them?

Response:

- F. The Apostle Paul was not immune to such turmoil in the soul. He battled the realms of the flesh and Spirit in his soul—trying to figure out why “he did the things he didn’t want to do, while also not doing the things he wanted to do” ([Romans 7:4-25](#)). He was both the persecutor and the one persecuted. Though he did his utmost to focus on the “greater good” that was sharing the Gospel of Christ under extreme persecution, he too questioned the will to live in this world of hurt and pain! But also lets us know we do have Him comforting us (strengthening, encouraging, and even calling us to His side).

[2 Corinthians 1:3-11](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and God of all comfort, 4 who comforts us in all our affliction, so that we may be able to comfort those who are in any affliction, with the comfort with which we ourselves are comforted by God. 5 For as we share abundantly in Christ’s sufferings, so through Christ we share abundantly in comfort too. 6 If we are afflicted, it is for your comfort and salvation; and if we are comforted, it is for your comfort, which you experience when you patiently endure the same sufferings that we suffer. 7 Our hope for you is unshaken; for we know that as you share in our sufferings, you will also share in our comfort.

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



8 For we do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, of the affliction we experienced in Asia; for we were so utterly, unbearably crushed [depressed] that we despaired of life itself. 9 Why, we felt that we had received the sentence of death; but that was to make us rely not on ourselves but on God who raises the dead; 10 he delivered us from so deadly a peril, and he will deliver us; on him we have set our hope that he will deliver us again. 11 You also must help us by prayer, so that many will give thanks on our behalf for the blessing granted us in answer to many prayers.

Question: Do you feel you can get through anything that comes your way that feels so unbearable at the time?

Response:

G. Jesus suffered too—and suffered the most! The persecution and soul-torment we face is REAL to both us humans and to God. We cannot ignore that our soul (emotional realm) suffers. Anxiety and Depression are real forces that can manifest in our soul from nature (parable of the lost sheep: [Luke 15:3-7](#)), circumstances (parable of the lost coin: [Luke 15:8-10](#)), and choices (parable of the lost brother: [Luke 15:11-32](#)). To think that, just because Jesus was God, does not deny His humanity. He faced utmost turmoil in his soul! The Bible denotes depression, and Jesus faced the highest form of depression.

[Mark 14:32-39](#) (RSV) [PoG]

And they went to a place which was called Gethsem'ane; and he said to his disciples, "Sit here, while I pray." 33 And he took with him Peter and James and John, and began to be greatly distressed [struck with terror] and troubled [the highest form of depression in the Greek ([G85](#))]. 34 And he said to them, "My soul is very sorrowful [so exceedingly much to even cause death]; remain here, and watch." 35 And going a little farther, he fell on the ground and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. 36 And he said, "Abba, Father, all things are possible to thee; remove this cup from me; yet not what I will, but what thou wilt." 37 And he came and found them sleeping, and he said to Peter, "Simon, are you asleep? Could you not watch one hour? 38 Watch and pray that you may not enter into temptation; the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak." 39 And again he went away and prayed, saying the same words.

Question: What times have you felt such depression that you longed for death, thought you might even die from the depression, or just wanted to literally give up (even moments of self-harm or suicidal)?

Response:

H. As Jesus Himself faced and overcame depression, so can we. Often, we feel that God is the one bringing it on; but in reality, in it, He is showing and renewing us to who we are in His Identity. When the "old us" is confronted by the "new (Born-Again) us", we can feel that conflict in the soul. But it is not literal scourging, but figurative—it just feels like we are being beaten on our insides. And His discipline is not punishment, but just Him educating us in who we truly are in Him. Thus, because we have Christ in us, we can actually face that torment knowing God has given us the ability to overcome. Just as Jesus overcame the sinners that despised Him!

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



[Hebrews 12:1-13](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Therefore, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us also lay aside every weight, and sin which clings so closely, and let us run with perseverance the race that is set before us, 2 looking to Jesus the pioneer and perfecter of our faith [*refer also [1 Peter 1:9](#)*], who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is seated at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 Consider him who endured from sinners such hostility against himself, so that you may not [grow weary, become sick, exhausted, tired out, despondent, or fainthearted in your soul]. 4 In your struggle against sin you have not yet resisted to the point of shedding your blood. 5 And have you forgotten the exhortation which addresses you as sons?—

“My son, do not regard lightly the discipline of the Lord, nor lose courage when you are punished by him.

6 For the Lord disciplines him whom he loves, and chastises every son whom he receives.”

7 It is for discipline that you have to endure. God is treating you as sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline? 8 If you are left without discipline, in which all have participated, then you are illegitimate children and not sons. 9 Besides this, we have had earthly fathers to discipline us and we respected them. Shall we not much more be subject to the Father of spirits and live? 10 For they disciplined us for a short time at their pleasure, but he disciplines us for our good, that we may share his holiness. 11 For the moment all discipline seems painful rather than pleasant; later it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness to those who have been trained by it.

12 Therefore lift your drooping hands and strengthen your weak knees, 13 and make straight paths for your feet, so that what is lame may not be put out of joint but rather be healed.

Question: Just as Jesus resisted the Cross in sweating blood in the Garden—this is extremely rough. What rough times have you faced in your soul that, in just standing in and through it, you got through to the other side of it?

Response:

- I. The Lord does not want us to have to hold onto the weight of the pain and suffering we experience in this world. He has shown us He wants to take that on for us—that we give it to Him, just as Jesus gave it to His Father (our Father in Heaven). He also understands that our mental and physical health is affected by the health of our soul. Let’s keep watch of our soul in sharing our emotional realm/struggles with Him and one-another. Sometimes, it is a sin we need to be set free of that troubles our conscience; and in accepting that forgiveness, our soul is healed (therefore also healing other areas of our physical or mental state). Similarly, just speaking about our emotions and feelings with someone (family, friends, therapist, counsellor, etc) can bring understanding and freedom.

[James 5:13-16; 19-20](#) (RSV)

Is anyone among you suffering? Let him pray. Is any cheerful? Let him sing praise. 14 Is any among you sick? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord; 15 and the prayer of faith will save the sick man, and the Lord will raise him up; and if he has committed sins, he will be forgiven. 16 Therefore confess your sins to one another, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man has great power in its effects.

19 My brethren, if any one among you wanders from the truth and someone brings him back, 20 let him know that whoever brings back a sinner from the error of his way will save his soul from death and will cover a multitude of sins.

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



[3 John 1:2](#) [PoG]

Beloved, I pray concerning you: prosperity (that you are granted a prosperous, speedily, efficient, and successful journey) in your health, according to *this same* prosperity of your soul.

Question: Have you experienced a decline on your overall health in relation to what is going on inside your soul?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

Following are several passages that use the word 'soul' in the Greek, but were translated to a different word. I am using the RSV translation here, but with PoG (Provisions of Grace) corrections, input, and interpretations. Pay attention to the context around the use of the word soul regarding direct aspects of emotions and feelings.

Study-out and ponder the soul (emotions and feelings), making it personal to you in your own life journey.

[Matthew 6:25-34](#) (RSV) [PoG]

"Therefore I tell you, do not be anxious [(troubled) in your soul], what you shall eat or what you shall drink, nor about your body, what you shall put on. Is not [your soul (greater and superior) than (*literal or figurative*) food / nourishment], and the body more than clothing? 26 Look at the birds of the air: they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? 27 And which of you by being anxious can add one cubit to his span of life? 28 And why are you anxious about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they neither toil nor spin; 29 yet I tell you, even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30 But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is alive and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will he not much more clothe you, O men of little faith? 31 Therefore do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' 32 For the Gentiles seek all these things; and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. 33 But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well.

34 "Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow, for tomorrow will be anxious for itself. Let the day's own trouble be sufficient for the day."

[Matthew 10:34-39](#) (RSV) [PoG]

"Do not think that I have come to bring peace on earth; I have not come to bring peace, but a sword. 35 For I have come to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; 36 and a man's foes will be those of his own household. 37 He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; 38 and he who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me. 39 He who [obtains his soul will render it useless], and he who [renders his soul useless] for my sake will [obtain] it."

[Matthew 16:24-26](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Then Jesus told his disciples, "If any man would come after me, let him deny himself and take up his cross and follow me. 25 For whoever would save his [soul, will render it useless], and whoever [renders his soul useless] for my sake will [obtain] it. 26 For what will it profit a man, if he gains the whole world and [damages his soul]? Or what shall a man [exchange in order to keep his soul]?"

SOUL (EMOTIONS & FEELINGS)

Bible Study: Lesson 042



[Matthew 20:25-28](#) (RSV) [PoG]

But Jesus called them to him and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great men exercise authority over them. 26 It shall not be so among you; but whoever would be great among you must be your servant, 27 and whoever would be first among you must be your slave; 28 even as the Son of man came not to be served but to serve, and to give his [soul] as a ransom for many."

[John 12:23-28](#) (RSV) [PoG]

And Jesus answered them, "The hour has come for the Son of man to be glorified. 24 Truly, truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies, it bears much fruit. 25 He who loves his [soul, will render it useless], and he who [detests his soul] in this world will keep it for eternal life. 26 If anyone serves me, he must follow me; and where I am, there shall my servant be also; if anyone serves me, the Father will honour him.

27 "Now is my soul troubled. And what shall I say? 'Father, save me from this hour'? No, for this purpose I have come to this hour. 28 Father, glorify thy name." Then a voice came from heaven, "I have glorified it, and I will glorify it again."

[John 13:36-38](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Simon Peter said to him, "Lord, where are you going?" Jesus answered, "Where I am going you cannot follow me now; but you shall follow afterward." 37 Peter said to him, "Lord, why cannot I follow you now? I will lay down my [soul] for you." 38 Jesus answered, "Will you lay down your [soul] for me? Truly, truly, I say to you, the cock will not crow, till you have denied me three times."

[John 15:8-13](#) (RSV) [PoG]

"By this my Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit, and so prove to be my disciples. 9 As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you; abide in my love. 10 If you keep my commandments, you will abide in my love, just as I have kept my Father's commandments and abide in his love. 11 These things I have spoken to you, that my joy may be in you, and that your joy may be full."

12 "This is my commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. 13 Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his [soul] for his friends."

[Acts 14:1-2](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Now at Ico'num they entered together into the Jewish synagogue, and so spoke that a great company believed, both of Jews and of Greeks. 2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles and [oppressed, afflicted, harmed, and maltreated their souls to cause bitterness and resentment] against the brethren.

[Colossians 3:23-24](#) (RSV) [PoG]

Whatever your task, work [from your soul], as serving the Lord and not men, 24 knowing that from the Lord you will receive the inheritance as your reward; you are serving the Lord Christ.

[1 John 3:16](#) (RSV) [PoG]

By this we know love, that he laid down his [soul] for us; and we ought to lay down our [soul] for the brethren.

Thoughts: Having maybe a better understanding of what goes on in your soul, how do you find you react to the feelings generated from those emotions you experience (whether joy or pain)?

STORMS OF LIFE

INTENTION:

We will all have literal and figurative storms come in our life. Some we avoid, others we calm, and others we go through. The Lord says we will have persecutions (personal storms) in this world—in all the situations we face, let's stay focused on Him in those storms. He is the calm in the storm!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Storms of Life.

These storms can be literal, personal, or inner (in the soul realm). What is the “storm” you are facing right now?

I believe many of us can relate to the Apostle Paul in the struggles he faced in life—physically, emotionally, mentally, and spiritually. As a Christian, he kept seeking to understand and know more about the nature and character of God the Father, Christ Jesus, and Holy Spirit. He did his utmost to follow the Lord’s lead in all he did. But, at the same time, knew he would not (could not) always do that—facing the ever-present battle of Spirit and flesh ([Galatians 5:17](#)).

Part of his flesh remnant was his heart for his fellow kind (Jews) ([Romans 9](#)). Yet, though this was his “heart” to do, it was not of his instruction from the Lord. Paul even shared that to be “fleshly-minded is enmity towards God” ([Romans 8:7](#)). *This is a good reminder that just because it is from the “heart”, does not mean it is from the Lord.*

With Paul’s heart longing to bring the same salvation he tasted and experienced to his Jewish brethren, he chose to go to Jerusalem against the Holy Spirit ([Acts 21](#)); the Lord actually needed him to go to Rome ([Acts 19](#)).

God cannot violate our free will to choose; so, Paul did as he did. And Paul’s disobedience had its consequences—“reaping what you sow” ([Galatians 6:7-10](#)). But even in those consequences, Paul was never abandoned by the Lord.

We will see that the Lord never left him to his own doing. Instead, the Lord still protected Paul and orchestrated for him to go to Rome. This is something the Lord can do for us as well; because, although He gives us choices to make, He knows what choice we will make (and the choices others will make that affect us personally). Furthermore, because He also knows the ends from the beginning ([Isaiah 46:9-11](#)), He plans around each person’s choices and mistakes to bring good from it all—both for yourself and for others ([Romans 8:28](#)).

For Paul, though he was imprisoned in Jerusalem, he was rescued from the Jews out to murder him. Though he went through a major literal storm (in part too, from the decisions of others), the Lord rescued him through it as well. And though he was shipwrecked on Malta, Paul became a testimony of the Lord to that island of people.

Sadly, storms are a reality of this life (this world); as persecution ([Mark 10:29-30](#)). Yet, the Lord will always be with us and help us through all variations of persecutions. The Father guided Jesus in life through many types of storms. These included two literal storms that Jesus calmed for His disciples.

As such, though we do have Christ’s power and authority to calm the storms, we do not have to. Moreso, we have to “do as we see God the Father do” ([John 5:19](#)) in response to storms. And in that, He will not always instruct us to calm the storm (is not a requirement of God to calm storms)—whether literal, personal, or inner storms.

We will first read about the storm-journey (Mediterranean hurricane) Paul endured while being escorted to Rome as a prisoner. Paul had the authority to calm the storm he was in, but the Lord did not instruct him to—only that (via an angel) they would all survive. This was God’s promise that, storm or not, Paul would make it to Rome as instructed.

Following that, we will look at the times Jesus calmed the storms, the different storms we will face, and end with how the Lord even uses our personal disobediences to still bring good (in the storm and after the storm).

For further reading into storms: <http://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2020/04/paul-doesnt-calm-storm.html>

II. READING: [Acts 27:1-44](#) (VOICE)

The date was set for us to depart for Rome, and Paul and some other prisoners were transferred to the custody of a Roman officer named Julius, a member of the Augustan Division. 2 I, Luke, was permitted to join Paul for his journey to Rome, along with Aristarchus, a Macedonian brother from Thessalonica. We boarded a ship from Adramyttium that was stopping in ports along the coast of Asia. 3 We stopped the next day at Sidon, and Julius kindly allowed Paul to visit friends and be taken care of by them. 4 We sailed from there north of Cyprus because the winds were unfavourable. 5 We passed Cilicia and Pamphylia on our right and then came to Myra in Lycia. 6 There Julius found a

ship from Alexandria heading directly to Italy, to which we transferred. 7 The winds were still contrary, so we made slow progress for a number of days and with difficulty passed Cnidus and sailed south toward Crete and past Cape Salmone on its eastern end. 8 Sailing conditions were adverse to say the least. Finally we came to a place called Fair Havens, near the city of Lasea on the south coast of Crete. 9 We had lost a lot of time already—it was late in the year for sailing—following the Day of Atonement, and conditions had deteriorated from adverse to dangerous. Paul tried to warn those in charge.

Paul: 10 Sirs, if we proceed, I can see that our voyage will be dangerous and will involve heavy loss, not only of cargo, but of the ship itself; not only of the ship, but also of our lives.

11 But the officer ignored Paul and instead trusted the ship's pilot and owner who felt they could proceed.

12 We had two choices. We could anchor in the harbour at Fair Havens and spend the winter, or we could proceed west along the coastline, hoping to reach Phoenix and wait there for calmer spring weather. Fair Havens was not a good option, though, being vulnerable to winter storms; so most of us agreed we should try to reach Phoenix, whose harbour was more protected. 13 One day a moderate south wind began to blow, which made an attempt possible. We weighed anchor and sailed west, staying near shore. 14 Then things got scary. A violent northeaster, the Euraquilo, blew down across Crete. 15 We were caught. We couldn't turn and sail into this fierce wind, so we had no choice but to let it drive us. 16 We briefly found a bit of shelter from the wind near the island of Clauda. We had been having trouble securing the ship's lifeboat; 17 but we were able there to hoist it up and send down cables to brace the hull, which was in danger of breaking apart under the strain of the storm. The wind was relentless, and soon we were again being driven southwest at the mercy of the storm. We feared it would drive us all the way to the Syrtis Banks, down near the North African coast, so we threw out the sea anchor to slow us down. 18 All through the night, the storm pounded us violently. The next day, the crew threw the ship's cargo overboard; 19 and the day after that, they discarded any of the ship's equipment they could do without. 20 Days passed without relief from the furious winds, without a single break in the clouds to see sun or stars, even for a moment. Despair set in, as if all hope of rescue had been cast overboard as well. 21 On top of all of this, the crew had been unable to eat anything because of the turmoil. Paul saw the crew had reached a critical moment. He gathered them.

Paul: Men, if you had listened to my warning, we would still be safe in Crete and would have avoided this damage and loss. 22 I was correct in my warning, so I urge you to believe me now: none of you will die. We will lose the ship, but we will not lose one life. So keep up your courage, men! 23 The God I belong to, the God I worship, sent a heavenly messenger to me this night. 24 He said, "Do not be afraid, Paul. I'm not finished with you yet. You are going to stand before the emperor! You can be certain that God has granted safety to you and all your companions." 25 So listen, men: you must not give up hope! Keep up your courage! I have faith in God that things will turn out exactly as I was told last night. 26 Here's what I foresee: we will run aground on some island.

27-28 Imagine what happened: It's the 14th night of our nightmare voyage; we're being driven by the storm somewhere in the Adriatic Sea. It's about midnight, and the sailors are taking soundings, fearing we might run aground. "Twenty fathoms," somebody calls out in the darkness, then a little later, "Fifteen fathoms." We're nearing land! 29 But hope quickly gives way to a new fear. At any moment in this darkness, they realize, we could be smashed onto unseen rocks. So they drop four anchors from the stern and pray for first light.

30 Then some of the crew decide to make a run for it on their own. They say they need to let out more anchors from the bow, and this will require lowering the ship's lifeboat. They actually plan to abandon us; we realize what's going on. 31 Paul quickly speaks to the officer and soldiers.

Paul: Unless these men stay on board, you won't survive.

32 So the soldiers intervene, cut away the lifeboat, and let it drift away. 33, 37 We wait. Just before dawn, Paul again gathers everyone on the ship—all 276 of us. He urges everyone to eat and encourages us not to lose hope.

Paul: Listen, men, we've all been under incredible stress for 14 days. You haven't eaten anything during this whole

time. 34 I urge you to take some food now because it will help you survive what we're about to face. And I want to assure you—not one of you will lose a single hair from your head. We're all going to make it—all 276 of us!

35 Then Paul takes a loaf of bread and gives thanks to God in front of all of them. He breaks it, takes a piece, and begins to eat. 36 A fresh surge of courage seems to fill their hearts as they also begin to eat. 38 After satisfying their hunger, the crew lightens the ship by throwing the remaining wheat overboard. 39 Day finally breaks. They survey the coastline and don't recognize it, but they do notice a bay with a beach—the best place to try to run ashore.

40 So they cut the anchor ropes, untie the steering oars, hoist the foresail to the wind, and make for the beach. 41 But then there's a horrible sound, and we realize we've struck a reef; the bow is jammed solid, and the waves are smashing the stern to pieces. 42 The soldiers start talking about killing the prisoners so they won't swim away and escape; 43 but the officer wants to save Paul, so he stops them. He tells those who can swim to jump overboard and swim to the shore, 44 and those who can't, he tells to hold on to planks and other pieces of the ship when it breaks apart. Some hours later, we reassemble on the beach, each one safe and sound.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Jesus had the Spiritual Gift of foreknowledge. When Jesus climbed aboard the boat, the Holy Ghost could have easily told Him about the upcoming storm they were going into. But yet, He did not speak ahead of the journey to quiet the storm. Nor did His Father say He must. He climbed in and fell asleep. Then the storm hit. Jesus was not planning on waking up to calm the storm; Jesus was calm in the storm. And this is the key! Storms will always come, but it is our reaction to them that matters the most. It was only because of the fear of the crew that Jesus actually calmed the storm. The boat was never going to sink. Jesus said let's climb in and "go to the other side"—He did not say, let's climb in and "drown in the middle of the sea". Jesus was assured in His own words that they would get to the other side—so much so, that even though the boat was already full of water, it was not sinking (to me, proof that God's Word was keeping it afloat to get them safely to the other side).

[Mark 4:35-41](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

The same evening, Jesus [ordered them ([Matthew 8:18](#))] to cross over to the other side of the lake. 36 With Jesus already in the boat, they left the crowd behind and set sail along with a few other boats that followed. 37 As they sailed, a storm formed. The winds whipped up huge waves that broke over the bow, filling the boat with so much water that even the experienced sailors among them were sure they were going to sink.

38 Jesus was back in the stern of the boat, sound asleep on a cushion, when the disciples shook Him awake. Disciples (shouting over the storm): Jesus, Master, don't You care that we're going to die?

39 He got up, [rebuked] the wind, and commanded the waves.

Jesus: That's enough! Be still!

And immediately the wind died down to nothing, the waves stopped.

Jesus: 40 How can you be so afraid? After all you've seen, where is your faith?

41 The disciples were still afraid, slowly coming to grips with what they had seen.

Disciples (to one another): Who is this Jesus? How can it be that He has power over even the wind and the waves?

Question: Have you doubted, while in the storm, that you would get through it?

Response:

B. This second time a storm at sea occurred, Jesus sent the disciples ahead without Him. In doing so, Jesus had to compel them—perhaps, as experienced on the sea, they already sensed a storm coming. But, for Jesus again, it was an expectation that He would meet them on the other side. By this time too, the disciples saw what Jesus did before and had the same authority to calm any storm as well. Jesus even demonstrated this authority-reality to them, through their hands, in the feeding of the five thousand (not including women and children) right before getting into the boat. And when the disciples were in the middle of the storm not making any headway, along walks Jesus to meet them on the other side. Jesus didn't plan on getting into the boat ([Mark 6:48](#)), He was doing what He said about meeting them on the other side. It was only after the disciples called Him (again like the previous time) that Jesus turned and went to them. But Jesus didn't calm the storm when they called Him or when He saw them. The storm kept raging even as Peter stepped out of the boat. There was plenty of time for Jesus to calm the storm, but once again, Jesus was calm in the storm. And it was only after Jesus got in the boat that the storm vanished, and they found themselves transported to the other side of the lake ([John 6:21](#)).

[Matthew 14:22-33](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Immediately Jesus made [compelled] the disciples get into the boat and go on to the other side of the sea while He dismissed the crowd. 23 Then, after the crowd had gone, Jesus went up to a mountaintop alone (as He had intended from the start). As evening descended, He stood alone on the mountain, praying.

24 The boat was in the water, some distance from land, buffeted and pushed around by waves and wind. 25 Deep in the night, when He had concluded His prayers, Jesus walked out on the water to His disciples in their boat. 26 The disciples saw a figure moving toward them and were terrified.

Disciple: It's a ghost!

Another Disciple: A ghost? What will we do?

Jesus: 27 Be still. It is I. You have nothing to fear.

Peter: 28 Lord, if it is really You, then command me to meet You on the water.

Jesus: 29 Indeed, come.

Peter stepped out of the boat onto the water and began walking toward Jesus. 30 But when he remembered how strong the wind was, his courage caught in his throat and he began to sink.

Peter: Master, save me!

31 Immediately Jesus reached for Peter and caught him.

Jesus: O you of little faith. Why did you doubt and dance back and forth between following Me and heeding fear?

32 Then Jesus and Peter climbed in the boat together, and the wind became still. 33 And the disciples worshiped Him.

Disciples: Truly You are the Son of God.

Question: Have you resisted going into a storm you've seen coming—not remembering you've been through storms before that the Lord saw you through?

Response:

- C. Like Jesus and His disciples, we too may face these same storms throughout the world (hurricanes, earthquakes, and the like). But for many of the disciples and early followers, they also faced other literal storms in the form of political and religious persecution. Even Paul was the one bringing this storm:

[Acts 8:1-4](#) (VOICE)

1-2 Some devout men buried Stephen and mourned his passing with loud cries of grief. But Saul, this young man who seemed to be supervising the whole violent event, was pleased by Stephen's death. That very day, the whole church in Jerusalem began experiencing severe persecution. All of the followers of Jesus—except for the emissaries themselves—fled to the countryside of Judea and Samaria. 3 Young Saul went on a rampage—hunting the church, house after house, dragging both men and women to prison.

4 All those who had been scattered by the persecution moved from place to place; and wherever they went, they weren't afraid or silent. Instead, they spread the message of Jesus.

Question: Has the storm that chased you away from what you've known, become a blessing to someone else where you went to? Have you been the storm to someone else?

Response:

- D. Sometimes we face personal storms in the form of a chronic illness or birth-defect. We always saw Jesus heal anyone and everyone He encountered. We, as with the disciples, demonstrate the same healing and miracles as Jesus commanded us ([Mark 16:15-20](#)). Facing a storm like this can be draining, devastating, and crippling. But we must never lose hope or trust in the Lord, knowing it is not Him keeping healing from us, nor Him being the one that made us sick or with imperfections. Sometimes, our storm includes the battle to overcome our own fleshly mindset, stronghold, or unbelief to get to that place of healing.

[Mark 9:17-29](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

Father (in the crowd): 17 Teacher, I have brought my son to You. He is filled with an unclean spirit. He cannot speak, 18 and when the spirit takes control of him, he is thrown to the ground to wail and moan, to foam at the mouth, to grind his teeth, and to stiffen up. I brought him to Your followers, but they could do nothing with him. Can You help us?

Jesus: 19 O [unbelieving] generation, how long must I be among you? How long do I have to put up with you? Bring the boy to Me.

20 They brought the boy toward Jesus; but as soon as He drew near, the spirit took control of the boy and threw him on the ground, where he rolled, foaming at the mouth.

Jesus (to the father): 21 How long has he been like this?

Father: Since he was a baby. 22 This spirit has thrown him often into the fire and sometimes into the water, trying to destroy him. I have run out of options; I have tried everything. But if there's anything You can do, please, have pity on us and help us.

Jesus: 23 What do you mean, "If there's anything?" All things are possible, if you only believe.

Father (crying in desperation): 24 I believe, Lord. Help [my unbelief]!

25 Jesus noticed that a crowd had gathered around them now. He issued a command to the unclean spirit.

Jesus: Listen up, you no-talking, no-hearing demon. I Myself am ordering you to come out of him now. Come out, and don't ever come back!

26 The spirit shrieked and caused the boy to thrash about; then it came out of the boy and left him lying as still as death. Many of those in the crowd whispered that he was dead. 27 But Jesus took the boy by the hand and lifted him to his feet.

28 Later He and His disciples gathered privately in a house.

Disciples (to Jesus): Why couldn't we cast out that unclean spirit?

Jesus: 29 That sort of [unbelief] can only be conquered with much prayer and fasting.

Question: What is your personal storm you are facing?

Response:

- E. Other times, our storm is internal (battling our soul). This can often be a stronghold we develop from how we are personally raised or how the world raises us up—being our “old self” and the flesh ([Romans 6:6;19](#)). But we do have the ability to overcome these strongholds by someone who is stronger: Christ Jesus. This can be Him personally intervening, or even us coming to recognise the stronghold in us from therapy / counselling. For me, the Lord has worked in me directly and through counsellors to expose the stronghold in my life—to then be able to overcome it through changes in my thinking and acting / reacting. The change was a discerning of the ‘spirits’, having been unintentionally living from the flesh, to intentionally living from the Spirit (our “new man”).

[Luke 11:21-23](#) (VOICE)

Jesus: 21 When a man of power with his full array of weapons guards his own palace, everything inside is secure. 22 But when a new man who is stronger and better armed attacks the palace, the old ruler will be overcome, his weapons and trusted defences will be removed, and his treasures will be plundered. 23 Can you see that I'm asking you to choose whose side you're on—working with Me or fighting against Me?

Question: Do you find a storm raging inside of you—one that you desire something (someone) stronger to go in and overcome it to remove that unwanted ‘feeling’?

Response:

- F. Not only do we have Jesus as our primary example of overcoming (learning to be obedient in tremendous suffering), we have the testimony of so many in the Bible that came before us—including Abraham, Joseph, King David, Jehoshaphat, and Esther. All of them had storms to go through. Some struggled because of the choices they made in creating their own storms; some because others made choices that brought the storm in their lives. All these testimonies show that the Lord saw them through all their storms. Let's hold onto those proven promises that the Lord will never abandon nor forsake us. And likewise, share your journey (past and present); listening to other's as well.

[Hebrews 5:7-10](#) (VOICE)

When Jesus was on the earth, a man of flesh and blood, He offered up prayers and pleas, groans and tears to the One who could save Him from death. He was heard because He approached God with reverence. 8 Although He was a Son, Jesus learned obedience through the things He suffered. 9 And once He was perfected through that suffering He became the way of eternal salvation for all those who hear and follow Him, 10 for God appointed Him to be a High Priest in the order of Melchizedek

[Hebrews 6:9-20](#) (VOICE)

But listen, my friends—we don't mean to discourage you completely with such talk. We are convinced that you are made for better things, the things of salvation, 10 because God is not unjust or unfair. He won't overlook the work you have done or the love you have carried to each other in His name while doing His work, as you are still doing. 11 We want you all to continue working until the end so that you'll realize the certainty that comes with hope 12 and not grow lazy. We want you to walk in the footsteps of the faithful who came before you, from whom you can learn to be steadfast in pursuing the promises of God.

13 Remember when God made His promise to Abraham? He had to swear by Himself, there being no one greater: 14 "Surely I will bless you and multiply your descendants." 15 And after Abraham had endured with patience, he obtained the promise he had hoped for. 16 When swearing an oath to confirm what they are saying, humans swear by someone greater than themselves and so bring their arguments to an end. 17 In the same way, when God wanted to confirm His promise as true and unchangeable, He swore an oath to the heirs of that promise. 18 So God has given us two unchanging things: His promise and His oath. These prove that it is impossible for God to lie. As a result, we who come to God for refuge might be encouraged to seize that hope that is set before us. 19 That hope is real and true, an anchor to steady our restless souls, a hope that leads us back behind the curtain to where God is (as the high priests did in the days when reconciliation flowed from sacrifices in the temple) 20 and back into the place where Jesus, who went ahead on our behalf, has entered since He has become a High Priest forever in the order of Melchizedek.

Question: Jesus Christ is forever standing in our place (having proven Himself for us to know we can too)—what testimonies from the Bible or other people have helped you through your own storms?

Response:

- G. These storms are battles we face daily, in a season, or over our entire life. We must then always be "dressed" for battle. And it's not finding what to wear, but wearing the Armour of God. So, when we hit that battle and do all we can do to persevere, we just remain standing—having done all we could to stand (in our own strength), to stand (in His strength). Pray always to help you through the battle; making sure our hearts and mind are trained in Him; taking note of all the good things around us; positively admonishing each other and praising the Lord—in doing so, it becomes difficult to dwell on the negative. And in it all, the most important thing to do is to hold true to Love—not only to others, but especially to your own self; and in the truth that He truly and fully Loves us!

[Romans 8:31-39](#) (VOICE) [PoG]

So what should we say about all of this? If God is on our side, then tell me: whom should we fear? 32 If He did not spare His own Son, but handed Him over on our account, then don't you think that He will graciously give us all things with Him? 33 Can anyone be so bold as to level a charge against God's chosen? Especially since God's

“not guilty” verdict is already declared. 34 Who has the authority to condemn? Jesus the Anointed who died, but more importantly, conquered death when He was raised to sit at the right hand of God where He pleads on our behalf. 35 So who can separate us? What can come between us and the love of God’s Anointed? Can troubles, hardships, persecution, hunger, poverty, danger, or even death? The answer is, absolutely nothing. 36 As the psalm says,

On Your behalf, our lives are endangered constantly; we are like sheep awaiting slaughter.

37 [No! For] no matter what comes, we will always taste victory through Him who loved us. 38 For I have every confidence that nothing—not death, life, heavenly messengers, dark spirits, the present, the future, spiritual powers, 39 height, depth, nor any created thing—can come between us and the love of God revealed in the Anointed, Jesus our Lord.

[Ephesians 6:10-18](#) (VOICE)

Finally, brothers and sisters, draw your strength and might from God. 11 Put on the full armour of God to protect yourselves from the devil and his evil schemes. 12 We’re not waging war against enemies of flesh and blood alone. No, this fight is against tyrants, against authorities, against supernatural powers and demon princes that slither in the darkness of this world, and against wicked spiritual armies that lurk about in heavenly places.

13 And this is why you need to be head-to-toe in the full armour of God: so you can resist during these evil days and be fully prepared to hold your ground. 14 Yes, stand—truth banded around your waist, righteousness as your chest plate, 15 and feet protected in preparation to proclaim the good news of peace. 16 Don’t forget to raise the shield of faith above all else, so you will be able to extinguish flaming spears hurled at you from the wicked one. 17 Take also the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 Pray always. Pray in the Spirit. Pray about everything in every way you know how! And keeping all this in mind, pray on behalf of God’s people. Keep on praying feverishly, and be on the lookout until evil has been stayed.

[Philippians 4:4-9](#) (VOICE)

Most of all, friends, always rejoice in the Lord! I never tire of saying it: Rejoice! 5 Keep your gentle nature so that all people will know what it looks like to walk in His footsteps. The Lord is ever present with us. 6 Don’t be anxious about things; instead, pray. Pray about everything. He longs to hear your requests, so talk to God about your needs and be thankful for what has come. 7 And know that the peace of God (a peace that is beyond any and all of our human understanding) will stand watch over your hearts and minds in Jesus, the Anointed One.

8 Finally, brothers and sisters, fill your minds with beauty and truth. Meditate on whatever is honourable, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is good, whatever is virtuous and praiseworthy. 9 Keep to the script: whatever you learned and received and heard and saw in me—do it—and the God of peace will walk with you.

[Colossians 3:12-17](#) (VOICE)

Since you are all set apart by God, made holy and dearly loved, clothe yourselves with a holy way of life: compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience. 13 Put up with one another. Forgive. Pardon any offenses against one another, as the Lord has pardoned you, because you should act in kind. 14 But above all these, put on love! Love is the perfect tie to bind these together. 15 Let your hearts fall under the rule of the Anointed’s peace (the peace you were called to as one body), and be thankful.

16 Let the word of the Anointed One richly inhabit your lives. With all wisdom teach, counsel, and instruct one another. Sing the psalms, compose hymns and songs inspired by the Spirit, and keep on singing—sing to God from hearts full and spilling over with thankfulness. 17 Surely, no matter what you are doing (speaking, writing, or working), do it all in the name of Jesus our Master, sending thanks through Him to God our Father.

Question: Sometimes when in the storm, we do not “feel” like praying or praising or Loving—what are ways you can push into doing that (making the choice to do, even when you don’t feel like it)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Acts 28:1-16](#) (VOICE)

We quickly learned that we were on the island of Malta. 2 The Maltese people found us and were extraordinarily kind to us. They kindled a bonfire and welcomed us around it, which we greatly appreciated because it was raining and cold. 3 Paul was gathering firewood and helping build the fire. A viper had been hiding in some of the wood, and as it tried to escape the heat, it bit Paul on the hand. It sank its fangs in and wouldn’t let go. 4 The natives saw it dangling from his hand.

Natives: This man must be a murderer. He escaped the sea, but now justice has caught up with him.

5 Paul simply shook the snake off into the fire and suffered no harm. 6 The natives knew what to expect—rapid swelling followed by death—but when they waited a long time and saw that Paul suffered no ill effects of the bite, they changed their minds and concluded that he was a god.

7 The leading man of the island, Publius, owned large amounts of land near this beach. Publius received us and hosted us for three days. 8 Publius’s father was sick, bedridden with fever and dysentery. Paul visited the invalid and prayed for him, placing his hands on Publius’s father. The man was cured. 9 Soon people from all over the island who had diseases came, and they were cured as well.

10-11 We stayed on Malta for the next three months and were treated with great honour. When spring arrived, we prepared to continue our journey on a ship that had wintered there—an Alexandrian vessel with the Twin Brothers as its figurehead. The Maltese people showed us a final kindness as we departed: they came with all the provisions we needed for our journey and put them on board.

12 We set sail from Malta and stopped first at Syracuse. After three days, 13 we weighed anchor and came to Rhegium. We waited there a day, and then a south wind sprang up and sped us to Puteoli. 14 We found some believers there, and they invited us to stay with them for seven days. Then we reached Rome. 15 The believers from Rome heard we were coming, so they travelled out to meet us at the Forum of Appius and Three Taverns. Paul thanked God and felt encouraged to see them. 16 Once inside the city, Paul lived under house arrest by himself, with only one soldier to guard him.

Thoughts: Paul’s disobedience led to him being a testimony of the Lord to the other people on his journey, to the people on the island of Malta, and so much more. This is God using our decisions, not to punish us nor withhold from us, but to demonstrate His Love for everyone! Even in our persecution, He will bring about His Good!

The VOICE translation shares this from the conclusion of Stephen’s speech in [Acts 7](#):

Stephen’s sermon weaves together the story of the Jews and the life of Jesus. The point of the message is that God pursues His children despite their constant failure. The crucifixion of Jesus is the greatest of all of these failures.

Stephen affirms that through circumcision they have made themselves look like Jews, but their hearts and ears need circumcising as well. Of course, telling the Jewish leaders to get their hearts and ears circumcised elicits a rather violent response. Stephen speaks the truth so that all might hear, including a man named Saul.

And the VOICE translation shares this regarding the persecution from Paul (Saul) in [Acts 8](#):

They flee to the very places where Jesus said His disciples would be His witnesses at the beginning of this book. As a result, the persecution spreads the message of Christ rather than hinders it.

- B. I can look at my life now, and in hindsight, and see all so many of the choices and mistakes I made along the way. Yet, in all of them, the Lord has done so much for me and those around me to overcome anything wrong I did. Using each and every opportunity to bring good to myself and others.
- C. Read and study through the following journeys of these people. Take note to put yourself in their feet in what they felt, what they experienced, what choices they made, and what other people's choices / government rule did to them in their life. Yet, in all their persecution, they persevered because the Lord was always with them.
- For Abraham ([Genesis 12](#)): He left a land he called home to find a new home the Lord called him to, kept family with him that he was to leave behind (Lot), tried his own way (a mistake) in having a "promised" child, and even had to make a choice to sacrifice his actual promised child. Yet God made a promise with Himself to see Abraham and all generations from him be blessed.
 - For Joseph ([Genesis 37](#)): His dad (Jacob) showed favouritism over his brothers causing much family conflict, his brothers selling him as a slave, living a slave life for 17 years (even being falsely accused by Potiphar's wife during that time), and not knowing any hope for a future beyond slavery. Yet God never left Joseph—using a slave to save a nation and kingdom.
 - For King David ([1 Samuel 16](#)): He was born an illegitimate son (a different mother than his brothers), fought in wars / battles, faced depression, and made personal / family mistakes. Yet, through him, Solomon was born to build the Temple; and from David came Jesus.
 - For Jehoshaphat ([2 Chronicles 20](#)): He faced an immeasurable battle that was to destroy him and the nation. Yet, God kept to God's own promise, intervening for Jehoshaphat not to even face the danger.
 - For Esther ([Esther 1](#)): She was raised under a government that oppressed women's rights, kidnapped by government order (taken from her loving parental guardian), and as a child isolated / trained into a life of sexual servitude for the King. Yet, in all that, the Lord used her as the saviour of her nation.
- D. For all of us (individually or collectively), it's not about us making the storms of life go away—storms are a matter of life (they will always happen, both literally and personally). And I believe Paul understood this—as Paul was used to persecution and plenty of personal storms. Just as the Lord didn't remove Paul's horrible persecution by the silversmith (the silversmith being the thorn in Paul's side), so does the Lord not have an obligation (ability) to remove the persecution (storms) in our lives. Nor does He command us to always remove the storm. We just have to acknowledge and accept that storms will come—however they come.

These storms we face can be a product of nature (parable of the lost sheep: [Luke 15:3-7](#)), circumstances (parable of the lost coin: [Luke 15:8-10](#)), and choices (parable of the lost brother: [Luke 15:11-32](#)).

What is your literal storm: *war, gangs, violence, plague, drought, flooding, earthquakes, volcanoes, hurricanes, typhoons, tornados, wildfires, corruption, dictatorship / political oppression, religion?*

What is your personal storm: *sickness / disease / birth-defect, accident, handicap, abandonment, loss, divorce, slavery, rejection, finances, work, home, school, food, clothing, family, friends, enemies, persecution, abuse, homelessness, addiction, hardship, generational iniquities, criminal mistakes, prison, injustice / unfairness?*

What is your inner (soul) storm: *emotional distress / dysregulation, mental anguish, anxiety, depression, fear / paranoia, heartache, trauma / PTSD, worthlessness, guilt, shame, identity, strongholds, spiritual warfare, escapism, fight / flight / freeze / fawn?*

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

INTENTION:

It can feel like we have a “dual personality” in us when experience times of great love and care; yet have times when we create hurt and pain. Likewise for others that can be a “blessing” to you one day, and a “curse” the next.

How can the same person have both come out from them?

It is that we all live in a reality where we exist in both the Flesh and the Spirit. We cannot deny either of them, but can learn to live more from the Spirit (our “new man”) rather than the Flesh (our “old man”).

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Our Duality (Flesh & Spirit) which we exist in!

Do you ever wonder how you can do something so loving and kind one moment, and then something awful the next?

This is because we exist in this world in two forms:

1. The form in which we are born into on this earth (our body with the flesh).
2. The form in which we are Born-Again into in the Heavenly (Spiritual) realm.

Paul talked about this conundrum he faced where he “did the things he didn’t want to, and did not do the things he wanted to”. We face the same bizarre reality. It’s as if we are diagnosed with a multiple-personality disorder.

When we become Born-Again, our citizenship changes from one of this earth into one of Heaven. But because we don’t just instantly go to Heaven, this world is our temporary home until we do go. We reside here then as foreigners (literally aliens) in this earth—not to keep doing as earthly people do, but as Ambassadors of Heaven on this earth ([Philippians 3:20-21](#)). What a struggle this becomes!

So that part of us that was trained up in this world gets a conflicting reality with the introduction of the Holy Spirit in us; existing as both in this world (no longer of this world) and of the Spirit.

We will look at, in Lesson 049, what it means to be as a child when coming to the Lord. But here, we will look at how being raised as a child in this world defines what our flesh is. Which, in simplicity, is all that we picked up in this world that opposes the Lord and affects our body, mind, soul, and heart.

When we are born on this earth, we (as new-borns / children) are a blank slate to which the nurturing we receive gets imprinted on us as to who we will become—that nurturing also influenced by the nature of our makeup (DNA).

The Lord designed us to be this blank slate so that we can adapt and change to our environment and not only survive it, but thrive in it. Without choice and without question (as a child cannot), we take on all the traits of our parents and surroundings.

However, the unfortunate reality of this world is that our parents are not perfect—they, themselves, raised by imperfect parents (all the way back to Adam and Eve). It is impossible for us as adults to have unconditional love. A child actually has unconditional love from birth, but it diminishes as imperfections of this world shape their life.

Thus, the influence we have on our children (and our parents on us) is a mixed reality of love and mistakes. And those mistakes may not even be known, revealed, exposed, or conscious. We do things that affect one-another (sowing and reaping) without our realisations of it.

Some of that because our good-intentions are marred by our own hurts and pains; and because our intentions can be misinterpreted by those around us (we all have filters that can alter the meanings behind what is said or done).

All these imperfections damage our heart, soul, mind, and body. Trust is also broken and negated. And from that damage, we develop coping mechanisms as a child to survive the hurts, pains, and traumas of life.

Yet, the Lord is perfect. No faults whatsoever. And somehow, with all our heartbreak and distrust of people (parents, ourselves, or others) we have to come to Him with “all our heart, soul, mind, and strength” ([Mark 12:30](#)).

This goes against everything that we know. All the things we developed to survive as a child, when held onto, become the stronghold (sin) we become trapped (enslaved) to. These unhealthy coping mechanisms become our natural response to life—in our own truth, they are our “gut feeling” and what we do “from the heart”—without knowing that what feels natural to us, is not the natural of the Lord.

Yet, changing that about us goes against everything we used to protect ourselves in our childhood (and into adulthood) from the hurts, pains, and traumas we experienced. Our “gut” and “heart” responses cannot always be trusted if they have been altered by our past—“*altered as being from the perspective of if we had not experienced hurts, pains, and traumas (an impossible reality on this earth)*”.

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



So, wait... if we don't know it's wrong, how are we to know that we need to change it?

For me personally, I had to fully experience and see (have revealed to me) all that was done to me that shaped my adulthood actions, reactions, and habits. I knew I had a traumatic childhood (as having discussed before); but I was blinded to much of what I used as coping mechanisms—because, to me, they were natural. And thus, if “natural” was right. Oh, how I was wrong!

Once they became fully exposed (and continue to be exposed), I could address each of those aspects and “re-parent” myself in the Lord. I had to have my own slate wiped clean to again become a child that could be nurtured by my Father in Heaven. A Born-Again reality that discards all that I knew before, to be transformed into a “new creation” created in Christ (in HIS original Image of me).

In doing that, I could live, no longer from that flesh-mind, but in the spirit-mind of Christ. I AM a new creation—I just have to continually be “transformed into His Image” ([2 Corinthians 3:18](#)). And when that happens in each minute area of my life, I get to live in the simplest way—as He would tell me... “just be Me” ([1 John 4:17](#)).

This is my responsibility WITH His help. I can overcome, because the Spirit in me is greater than that of the flesh I am in—“greater is He that is in me, than he who is in this world” ([1 John 4:4](#)). It is only that we got accustomed to the flesh and its ways (having given it authority for so long in our lives) that it become (feels) like a great challenge to us. Especially when we don't even know that our fleshly-ways are not Spirit-ways.

Because we know that our flesh is just everything we picked up in this earth, we can read scripture in a way that reflects this. As such, let's read the following in that context—looking at where the term flesh is being those handed-down iniquities, strongholds, and behaviours that are a result of our upbringing. The book of Romans addresses many of the conflicts of flesh and Spirit—and the body (which we looked at in Lesson 013; also using Romans 8).

And note that the “growing” pains we feel is the conflict which ensues between flesh and spirit; giving obedience to the Spirit against the wants of the flesh. Enduring to the end through the pains of change—in an expectant hope that we will be set free with the help of His Spirit in us, and that all things will work out for His and our good.

II. **READING:** [Romans 8:1-39](#) (NET)

There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus. 2 For the law of the life-giving Spirit in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and death. 3 For God achieved what the law could not do because it was weakened through the flesh. By sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and concerning sin, he condemned sin in the flesh, 4 so that the righteous requirement of the law may be fulfilled in us, who do not walk according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.

5 For those who live according to the flesh have their outlook shaped by the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit have their outlook shaped by the things of the Spirit. 6 For the outlook of the flesh is death, but the outlook of the Spirit is life and peace, 7 because the outlook of the flesh is hostile to God, for it does not submit to the law of God, nor is it able to do so. 8 Those who are in the flesh cannot please God. 9 You, however, are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God lives in you. Now if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, this person does not belong to him. 10 But if Christ is in you, your body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is your life because of righteousness. 11 Moreover if the Spirit of the one who raised Jesus from the dead lives in you, the one who raised Christ from the dead will also make your mortal bodies alive through his Spirit who lives in you.

12 So then, brothers and sisters, we are under obligation, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh 13 (for if you live according to the flesh, you will die), but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body you will live. 14 For all who are led by the Spirit of God are the sons of God. 15 For you did not receive the spirit of slavery leading again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption, by whom we cry, “Abba, Father.” 16 The Spirit himself bears witness to our spirit that we are God's children. 17 And if children, then heirs (namely, heirs of God and also fellow heirs with Christ)—if indeed we suffer with him so we may also be glorified with him.

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



18 For I consider that our present sufferings cannot even be compared to the coming glory that will be revealed to us. 19 For the creation eagerly waits for the revelation of the sons of God. 20 For the creation was subjected to futility—not willingly but because of God who subjected it—in hope 21 that the creation itself will also be set free from the bondage of decay into the glorious freedom of God’s children. 22 For we know that the whole creation groans and suffers together until now. 23 Not only this, but we ourselves also, who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we eagerly await our adoption, the redemption of our bodies. 24 For in hope we were saved. Now hope that is seen is not hope, because who hopes for what he sees? 25 But if we hope for what we do not see, we eagerly wait for it with endurance.

26 In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weakness, for we do not know how we should pray, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with inexpressible groanings. 27 And he who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because the Spirit intercedes on behalf of the saints according to God’s will. 28 And we know that all things work together for good for those who love God, who are called according to his purpose, 29 because those whom he foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, that his Son would be the firstborn among many brothers and sisters. 30 And those he predestined, he also called; and those he called, he also justified; and those he justified, he also glorified.

31 What then shall we say about these things? If God is for us, who can be against us? 32 Indeed, he who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all—how will he not also, along with him, freely give us all things? 33 Who will bring any charge against God’s elect? It is God who justifies. 34 Who is the one who will condemn? Christ is the one who died (and more than that, he was raised), who is at the right hand of God, and who also is interceding for us. 35 Who will separate us from the love of Christ? Will trouble, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or danger, or sword? 36 As it is written, “For your sake we encounter death all day long; we were considered as sheep to be slaughtered.” 37 No, in all these things we have complete victory through him who loved us! 38 For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor heavenly rulers, nor things that are present, nor things to come, nor powers, 39 nor height, nor depth, nor anything else in creation will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. This conflict between the flesh and the Spirit is real. As mentioned, Paul recognised and acknowledged this. Because of this conflict, he proclaims himself as “wretched”. I too feel the same way when those flesh-ways manifest. I feel at odds with myself—sometimes feeling as though the Spirit inside me wants to just scape this body I’m trapped it (that restricts the Spirit).

[Romans 7:14-25](#) (NET)

For we know that the law is spiritual—but I am unspiritual, sold into slavery to sin. 15 For I don’t understand what I am doing. For I do not do what I want—instead, I do what I hate. 16 But if I do what I don’t want, I agree that the law is good. 17 But now it is no longer me doing it, but sin that lives in me. 18 For I know that nothing good lives in me, that is, in my flesh. For I want to do the good, but I cannot do it. 19 For I do not do the good I want, but I do the very evil I do not want! 20 Now if I do what I do not want, it is no longer me doing it but sin that lives in me.

21 So, I find the law that when I want to do good, evil is present with me. 22 For I delight in the law of God in my inner being. 23 But I see a different law in my members waging war against the law of my mind and making me captive to the law of sin that is in my members. 24 Wretched man that I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death? 25 Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, I myself serve the law of God with my mind, but with my flesh I serve the law of sin.

Question: Do you feel a part of your is trapped; or a part of you is in more control than another?

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



Response:

- B. This is where we have a choice of who to “yield ourselves” to. Whoever we let win in us, is who has mastery over what manifest out from us (what we do / don’t do). So if your (my) strongholds and iniquities (sins) are ever-present in our life, we have to decide to make that change. We can’t do it from the “strength of the flesh”, but from the strength of the Spirit in us. This is where seeking the Lord for help and answers is key. Christ Jesus faced much persecution and hardship in His ministry—yet He held onto doing what He saw His Father do. And what helped Him succeed in that obedience, was His relationship with God the Father, seeking Him in prayer.

[Romans 6:12-23](#) (NET)

Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body so that you obey its desires, 13 and do not present your members to sin as instruments to be used for unrighteousness, but present yourselves to God as those who are alive from the dead and your members to God as instruments to be used for righteousness. 14 For sin will have no mastery over you, because you are not under law but under grace.

15 What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? Absolutely not! 16 Do you not know that if you present yourselves as obedient slaves, you are slaves of the one you obey, either of sin resulting in death, or obedience resulting in righteousness? 17 But thanks be to God that though you were slaves to sin, you obeyed from the heart that pattern of teaching you were entrusted to, 18 and having been freed from sin, you became enslaved to righteousness. 19 (I am speaking in human terms because of the weakness of your flesh.) For just as you once presented your members as slaves to impurity and lawlessness leading to more lawlessness, so now present your members as slaves to righteousness leading to sanctification. 20 For when you were slaves of sin, you were free with regard to righteousness.

21 So what benefit did you then reap from those things that you are now ashamed of? For the end of those things is death. 22 But now, freed from sin and enslaved to God, you have your benefit leading to sanctification, and the end is eternal life. 23 For the payoff of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Question: How difficult is it to switch from one “owner” to another in the way you Spiritually want to do things?

Response:

- C. Jesus fought the flesh and its temptations to go its own way instead of the Father’s way. He then becomes the example for us in overcoming. Our role is to focus on who He is as to who we are—“as Christ Jesus is, so are we in this world” ([1 John 4:17b](#)) ; ever-changing from “glory to glory” (i.e., us having been made a glory in being Born-Again, to a glory that manifests itself in our everyday existence). This is the arduous process of “renewing our minds”, “no longer living in ignorance out of our flesh-mind (what we picked up growing up), but spirit-mind (mind of Christ)”, and “letting God reveal in you what does not belong”. When we do so, we change those engrained aspects of our life from doing things the way we were taught (nurtured) to doing things the way the Lord does them (as Christ did them).

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



[Romans 12:1-2](#) (NET)

Therefore I exhort you, brothers and sisters, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies as a sacrifice—alive, holy, and pleasing to God—which is your reasonable service. 2 Do not be conformed to this present world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, so that you may test and approve what is the will of God—what is good and well-pleasing and perfect.

[Ephesians 4:17-24](#) (NET)

So I say this, and insist in the Lord, that you no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking. 18 They are darkened in their understanding, being alienated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardness of their hearts. 19 Because they are callous, they have given themselves over to indecency for the practice of every kind of impurity with greediness. 20 But you did not learn about Christ like this, 21 if indeed you heard about him and were taught in him, just as the truth is in Jesus. 22 You were taught with reference to your former way of life to lay aside the old man who is being corrupted in accordance with deceitful desires, 23 to be renewed in the spirit of your mind, 24 and to put on the new man who has been created in God’s image—in righteousness and holiness that comes from truth.

[Philippians 3:13-16](#) (NET)

Brothers and sisters, I do not consider myself to have attained this. Instead I am single-minded: Forgetting the things that are behind and reaching out for the things that are ahead, 14 with this goal in mind, I strive toward the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus. 15 Therefore let those of us who are “perfect” embrace this point of view. If you think otherwise, God will reveal to you the error of your ways. 16 Nevertheless, let us live up to the standard that we have already attained.

Question: What has this kind of renewal looked like and felt like to you?

Response:

- D. When the Lord reveals those iniquities (“sins”) and strongholds in you, it can feel extremely painful. This is literally our developed / underdeveloped brain forming new neurological pathways to form new pathways to change our way of life (refer [Dr Caroline Leaf on the malleable brain](#)). It is God training and teaching us in doing things His way instead of our old way. It feels like a form or discipline—so painful at times that it figuratively feels like we are being “chastised”. But it is not literally punishment (in how we would define it), but figurative punishment (as it feels like we are being punished for something not our fault). Instead, it is truly a loving guidance and instruction and discipline for us to change into Him.

[Hebrews 12:4-11](#) (NET)

You have not yet resisted to the point of bloodshed in your struggle against sin. 5 And have you forgotten the exhortation addressed to you as sons?

“My son, do not scorn the Lord’s discipline or give up when he corrects you.

6 “For the Lord disciplines the one he loves and chastises every son he accepts.”

7 Endure your suffering as discipline; God is treating you as sons. For what son is there that a father does not discipline? 8 But if you do not experience discipline, something all sons have shared in, then you are illegitimate and are not sons. 9 Besides, we have experienced discipline from our earthly fathers and we respected them;

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



shall we not submit ourselves all the more to the Father of spirits and receive life? 10 For they disciplined us for a little while as seemed good to them, but he does so for our benefit, that we may share his holiness. 11 Now all discipline seems painful at the time, not joyful. But later it produces the fruit of peace and righteousness for those trained by it.

Question: How often have you shied away from the Lord’s correction because it felt too difficult or painful?

Response:

E. Part of that correction process of renewal is the removing of strongholds. As mentioned in the opening to this lesson, those survival coping mechanisms we picked up in our childhood, brought into our adulthood, become the things we unintentionally rely on to protect and defend us (whether it really protects us or not—only arguing that it does).

Stronghold – G3794: ochyrōma

1. a castle, stronghold, fortress, fastness
2. anything on which one relies
 - a. of the arguments and reasonings by which a disputant endeavours to fortify his opinion and defend it against his opponent.)

From a remote derivative of [G2192](#) (meaning to fortify, through the idea of holding safely); a castle (figuratively, argument):—stronghold

[2 Corinthians 10:3-7](#) (NET)

For though we live as human beings, we do not wage war according to human standards, 4 for the weapons of our warfare are not human weapons, but are made powerful by God for tearing down strongholds. We tear down arguments 5 and every arrogant obstacle that is raised up against the knowledge of God, and we take every thought captive to make it obey Christ. 6 We are also ready to punish every act of disobedience, whenever your obedience is complete. 7 You are looking at outward appearances. If anyone is confident that he belongs to Christ, he should reflect on this again: Just as he himself belongs to Christ, so too do we.

Question: What do you defend in your mind, actions, and behaviours that are a natural defense-mechanism to you?

Response:

F. Those handed-down iniquities that become strongholds in life are a huge burden on us—and on our own children we pass down to. We often feel as though we are drowning in life—and in essence we are. *For it is like someone tied a huge stone around our necks and dropped us in the middle of the ocean.* Think of the struggles caused to you or your own children because of these iniquities (“sins”) passed onto us/them.

[Matthew 18:1-6](#) (NET)

At that time the disciples came to Jesus saying, “Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?” 2 He called a child, had him stand among them, 3 and said, “I tell you the truth, unless you turn around and become like little

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven! 4 Whoever then humbles himself like this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. 5 And whoever welcomes a child like this in my name welcomes me.

6 “But if anyone causes one of these little ones who believe in me to sin, it would be better for him to have a huge millstone hung around his neck and to be drowned in the open sea.

Question: Do you feel the weight of others’ sins upon you from your own childhood—that it was so detrimental to your upbringing and adulthood, that you feel you can never get free (from your past, the abandonment / rejection you feel, the addiction you are in, the relationships that have broken apart, the anger, bitterness, resentment, and pain)?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Galatians 5:13-26](#) (NET)

For you were called to freedom, brothers and sisters; only do not use your freedom as an opportunity to indulge your flesh, but through love serve one another. 14 For the whole law can be summed up in a single commandment, namely, “You must love your neighbour as yourself.” 15 However, if you continually bite and devour one another, beware that you are not consumed by one another. 16 But I say, live by the Spirit and you will not carry out the desires of the flesh. 17 For the flesh has desires that are opposed to the Spirit, and the Spirit has desires that are opposed to the flesh, for these are in opposition to each other, so that you cannot do what you want. 18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law. 19 Now the works of the flesh are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity, depravity, 20 idolatry, sorcery, hostilities, strife, jealousy, outbursts of anger, selfish rivalries, dissensions, factions, 21 envying, murder, drunkenness, carousing, and similar things. I am warning you, as I had warned you before: Those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God! 22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, 23 gentleness, and self-control. Against such things there is no law. 24 Now those who belong to Christ have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires. 25 If we live by the Spirit, let us also behave in accordance with the Spirit. 26 Let us not become conceited, provoking one another, being jealous of one another.

[1 Peter 2:1-3; 11-12](#) (NET)

So get rid of all evil and all deceit and hypocrisy and envy and all slander. 2 And yearn like new-born infants for pure, spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up to salvation, 3 if you have experienced the Lord’s kindness.

Dear friends, I urge you as foreigners and exiles to keep away from fleshly desires that do battle against the soul, 12 and maintain good conduct among the non-Christians, so that though they now malign you as wrongdoers, they may see your good deeds and glorify God when he appears.

Thoughts: Again, the onus is on us, individually, to instigate the change necessary to refrain from the flesh dominating (manifesting) in our lives. We did not choose to have sin in our life (whether stronghold, physical / mental illness, or the parents we got), nor troubles befall us; but it is our responsibility to push into the healing the Lord desires of us. God our Father IS a healer! Let’s hold Him to that truth, and break free from all that flesh that binds us in so many various and disastrous ways.

OUR DUALITY (FLESH & SPIRIT)

Bible Study: Lesson 044



A few important aspects to note further is that:

- Each of our journeys to get there (into our own salvation) will be different, involve unique obstacles, and vary in length and time. Knowing and accepting this will help us avoid judging others, and instead opening up forgiveness (for others and ourselves). So, let us be patient with ourselves in the process; as well as being patient with those around us.
- Because we have our flesh / Spirit duality, it is important to view yourself in the Truth of who the Lord says we are. If we see ourselves only in the flesh, then we reduce ourselves to “sinners, saved by grace”. If we see ourselves only in the Spirit, we deny the harm we do to others from the flesh. As such, we must accept and see ourselves as both (even though they are in conflict with each other)—and from this reality, we can treat the flesh as the flesh, the Spirit as the Spirit, and overcome the flesh from the Spirit.
- And when doing from the Spirit, we manifest God’s way of doing things. Those “fleshly desires that do battle against the soul” is the pain and turmoil we feel inside us. But as we studied, faith is the manifestation of God in your life. And the more we manifest God, the more life we bring to our existence. Let us strive to live that faith (the manifestation of God) because it is that which actually does bring salvation to our souls ([1 Peter 1:9](#)).

B. [Philippians 4:11b-13](#) (NET) [PoG]

for I have learned to be content in any circumstance. 12 I have experienced times of need and times of abundance. In any and every circumstance I have learned the secret of contentment, whether I go satisfied or hungry, have plenty or nothing. 13 I am able to do all things through the one [Christ] who strengthens me.

[1 John 4:1-6](#) (NET)

Dear friends, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to determine if they are from God, because many false prophets have gone out into the world. 2 By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses Jesus as the Christ who has come in the flesh is from God, 3 but every spirit that refuses to confess Jesus, that spirit is not from God, and this is the spirit of the antichrist, which you have heard is coming, and now is already in the world.

4 You are from God, little children, and have conquered them, because the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. 5 They are from the world; therefore they speak from the world’s perspective and the world listens to them. 6 We are from God; the person who knows God listens to us, but whoever is not from God does not listen to us. By this we know the Spirit of truth and the spirit of deceit.

Thoughts: For me, “to do all things through Christ” and “greater is He that is in you” has not been my personal truth—even though it is Spiritual Truth. If it were my reality and truth, the Spirit in me would always manifest itself over and above the flesh. But it has not, as my flesh keeps on getting the better of me. The flesh has been winning so long, I have been unable to let it go for the Spirit win. Being deceived, I didn’t even know it was the one winning.

Hence why, as John writes, we have to discern the difference. If we are able to pause our reactions and responses long enough, we can put it up for debate with the Spirit—does it align with the Spirit (with the Lord) or not? In essence we are asking that part of us if it “confesses ([G3670](#): agrees with) Jesus” or not. If that feeling we get that is trying to create a response in us agrees with how Jesus would respond, then we know it is Spiritual and not of the flesh. We have a choice—we just need to learn how to choose the Spiritual one!

SOWING & REAPING

INTENTION:

We can praise the Lord for the Good in our lives, and praise Him in our bad—not because we believe He brings the bad, but that in the bad, we can stay focused on Him.

When we live from the Spirit, we reap the benefits (Life) of the Spirit.

When we live from the Flesh, we reap the destruction of the Flesh.

It is not God bringing injustice, calamity, hardships, trouble, and the like—this destruction is a result of you, me, and everyone who live out from the differing areas of the Flesh.

Who we “yield ourselves to” (whether the Flesh or the Spirit), we become “slaves to”.

Let us sow in the Spirit to bring Life to our own lives and the lives of those around us.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Sowing & Reaping.

Following our lesson on the Duality we exist in (Flesh and Spirit), we continue into the realities of what each bring to our lives and that of the lives around us.

We know that our relationship with the Lord is not in jeopardy based on what we do or do not do—but that does not mean we don't jeopardise our relationships here on this world.

We may not fully understand why we are the way we are—whether nature (birth/DNA) or nurture (our upbringing). But it is our responsibility to overcome that which is trying to limit, bind, or destroy us.

We are instructed to choose life over death in our choices ([Deuteronomy 30:19](#)). When we do from the Spirit, we bring Life. When we choose from the flesh, the result is death (destruction).

Now we truly have a Loving Father that knows all the flesh-mistakes we will make, and does His utmost to bring Good out from it all ([Romans 8:28](#)). This, along with His promise to care for all our basic needs is something we can put our assurance in. We can trust Him!

We tackled the topic of Righteousness as not being a behaviour, but a state of being. Yet, it is from this state of being that we are able to demonstrate righteousness in our lives. We are never fully able to produce righteousness as a way of life due to the limitations of our flesh. But when we live from the Spirit (not the flesh) righteousness is manifest. We don't try to live up to His Righteousness, we instead let His Righteousness live out from us.

A great unfortunate reality to "Christianity" is that many of the verses below have been used to guilt, shame, and condemn people. The "Bible Bashers" out there with picket signs of "going to Hell" are not representative of the Lord's heart and intent with these verses and topics. Therefore, let's not discard all we have already learned in these Bible Lessons about who the Lord is (Love), based on a stigma and dogma instituted by religion.

The only reason sin gets pointed out, is to instigate change, not to demean. The Lord already knows the infinite details of why we do what we do (stemming from Adam's iniquity handed down generation-after-generation). And it is not to expose us as evil or frauds, but to share with us His ability to overcome that which the devil (this world) has done to us to make us do those things. From that, we change our ways of thinking and believing to align with Him.

He wants us to see the difference between His way of Love and our earthly-learned ways. The Law He gave shares that comparative for our human (not spiritual) minds. But our flesh took it upon itself as a list of achievements. Yet, in God's reality, the Law points to Love ([Romans 13:8-10](#))—that when we live Love, we don't violate Love.

So where does that leave us regarding sowing and reaping?

Because of the duality we exist in, we sow seeds of Life from the Spiritual realm; and seeds of destruction from the flesh. We cannot escape this until we get our new bodies when the Lord returns.

This example of receiving our new bodies in the representation of sowing and reaping is what we will read here in the following verses. Here it is clear that we have a flesh that is weak and corrupted affecting our lives.

But after reading these verses, we will delve into what the examples of flesh-sowing there is, and what Spirit-sowing there is. And here is where we really need to address what the flesh looks like—for when we don't address the flesh, we reap from the flesh the unintentional consequences they bring. Don't be deceived that because our sins are forgiven, that God is supposed to keep "bad things from happening" (Lesson 024). We have responsibility to keep the flesh dead and the Spirit alive (Lesson 031).

It's not easy to overcome the flesh—but would you rather battle the ways of the flesh now (before destruction comes), or battle the consequences of it after the damage is done?

But fret not when damage is done (though it brings sorrow), we have the Lord who longingly wants to bring about healing from what is destroyed.

II. READING: [1 Corinthians 15:12-58](#) (LEB)

Now if Christ is preached as raised up from the dead, how do some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13 But if there is no resurrection of the dead, Christ has not been raised either. 14 But if Christ has not been raised, then our preaching is in vain, and your faith is in vain. 15 And also we are found to be false witnesses of God, because we testified against God that he raised Christ, whom he did not raise if after all, then, the dead are not raised. 16 For if the dead are not raised, Christ has not been raised either. 17 But if Christ has not been raised, your faith is empty; you are still in your sins. 18 And as a further result, those who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished. 19 If we have put our hope in Christ in this life only, we are of all people most pitiable.

20 But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep. 21 For since through a man came death, also through a man came the resurrection of the dead. 22 For just as in Adam all die, so also in Christ all will be made alive. 23 But each in his own group: Christ the first fruits, then those who are Christ's at his coming, 24 then the end, when he hands over the kingdom to the God and Father, when he has abolished all rule and all authority and power. 25 For it is necessary for him to reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. 26 The last enemy to be abolished is death. 27 For "he subjected all things under his feet." But when it says "all things" are subjected, it is clear that the one who subjected all things to him is not included. 28 But whenever all things are subjected to him, then the Son himself will be subjected to the one who subjected all things to him, in order that God may be all in all.

29 Otherwise, why do they do it, those who are being baptized on behalf of the dead? If the dead are not raised at all, why indeed are they being baptized on behalf of them? 30 And why are we in danger every hour? 31 I die every day—yes indeed, by my boasting in you, which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord! 32 If according to a human perspective I fought wild beasts at Ephesus, what benefit is it to me? If the dead are not raised, let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die. 33 Do not be deceived! "Bad company corrupts good morals." 34 Sober up correctly and stop sinning, for some have no knowledge of God—I say this to your shame.

35 But someone will say, "How are the dead raised? And with what sort of body do they come?" 36 Foolish person! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies. 37 And what you sow is not the body which it will become, but you sow the bare seed, whether perhaps of wheat or of some of the rest. 38 But God gives to it a body just as he wishes, and to each one of the seeds its own body. 39 Not all flesh is the same, but there is one flesh of human beings, and another flesh of animals, and another flesh of birds, and another of fish, 40 and heavenly bodies and earthly bodies. But the glory of the heavenly bodies is of one kind, and the glory of the earthly bodies is of another kind. 41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars, for star differs from star in glory.

42 Thus also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruptibility. 43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory. It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power. 44 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual body. 45 Thus also it is written, "The first man, Adam, became a living soul"; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. 46 But the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual. 47 The first man is from the earth, made of earth; the second man is from heaven. 48 As the one who is made of earth, so also are those who are made of earth, and as the heavenly, so also are those who are heavenly. 49 And just as we have borne the image of the one who is made of earth, we will also bear the image of the heavenly.

50 But I say this, brothers, that flesh and blood is not able to inherit the kingdom of God, nor can corruption inherit incorruptibility. 51 Behold, I tell you a mystery: we will not all fall asleep, but we will all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the blink of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. 53 For it is necessary for this perishable body to put on incorruptibility, and this mortal body to put on immortality. 54 But whenever this perishable body puts on incorruptibility and this mortal body puts on immortality, then the saying that is written will take place:

"Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 Where, O death, is your victory? Where, O death, is your sting?"

SOWING & REAPING

Bible Study: Lesson 045



56 Now the sting of death is sin, and the power of sin is the law. 57 But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ! 58 So then, my dear brothers, be steadfast, immovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, because you know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. The key verse about the sowing and reaping of the flesh is here in this verse with an admonishment of not giving up “doing good” (i.e., sowing from the Spirit). When we do this, we build others up and bring life to a situation. It may go against our “gut” or “heart”, but that is why it feels as a sacrifice—keeping dead the flesh.

[Galatians 6:7-10](#) (LEB)

Do not be deceived: God is not to be mocked, for whatever a person sows, this he will also reap, 8 because the one who sows to his own flesh will reap corruption from the flesh, but the one who sows to the Spirit will reap eternal life from the Spirit. 9 And let us not grow weary in doing good, for at the proper time we will reap, if we do not give up. 10 So then, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, and especially to those who belong to the household of faith.

Question: Does it feel like a risk of losing something when you choose to do from the Spirit—do you feel the conflict?

Response:

- B. We are given the truth about what is of the Spirit and what is of the flesh. It is a simple comparison of the two realms to force us to discern the two. Yes, the flesh can deceive us into thinking we are “doing good”, which (unintentionally) goes against the Spirit. When we live from the flesh, we don’t experience that Kingdom of God in that specific area of our lives (that presence of Righteousness, Peace, and Joy in the Holy Spirit). And let us not use God’s freedom to “do what we want without God’s wrath” to live a life of the flesh (bringing destruction).

[Galatians 5:13-26](#) (LEB)

For you were called to freedom, brothers. Only do not let your freedom become an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another. 14 For the whole law is fulfilled in one statement, namely, “You shall love your neighbour as yourself.” 15 But if you bite and devour one another, watch out that you are not consumed by one another.

16 But I say, live by the Spirit, and you will never carry out the desire of the flesh. 17 For the flesh desires against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, for these are in opposition to one another, so that whatever you want, you may not do these things. 18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.

19 Now the deeds of the flesh are evident, which are sexual immorality, impurity, licentiousness, 20 idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, outbursts of anger, selfish ambition, dissension, factions, 21 envy, drunkenness, carousing, and things like these, things which I am telling you in advance, just as I said before, that the ones who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God. 22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, 23 gentleness, self-control. Against such things there is no law. 24 Now those who belong to Christ have crucified the flesh together with its feelings and its desires.

25 If we live by the Spirit, we must also follow the Spirit. 26 We must not become conceited, provoking one another, envying one another.

Question: What are examples of times you lived by the flesh, and times you lived by the Spirit?

Response:

- C. Sometimes it is less about our own actions, and more about what comes out of our mouth from our unrenewed heart. What we believe in our heart and say from our mouth brings either life or destruction. We have to recognise that our heart and words are still affected by this world; but hold onto the truth that they are and will be renewed through the Spirit in us—we have to allow Him to revel and heal!

[Matthew 15:10-20](#) (LEB)

And summoning the crowd, he said to them, “Hear and understand: 11 It is not what goes into the mouth that defiles a person, but what comes out of the mouth—this defiles a person.” 12 Then the disciples came and said to him, “Do you know that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this saying?” 13 And he answered and said, “Every plant that my heavenly Father did not plant will be uprooted. 14 Let them! They are blind guides of the blind. And if the blind guide the blind, both will fall into a pit.” 15 But Peter answered and said to him, “Explain this parable to us.” 16 But he said, “Are you also still without understanding? 17 Do you not understand that everything that enters into the mouth goes into the stomach and is evacuated into the latrine? 18 But the things that come out of the mouth come from the heart, and these defile the person. 19 For from the heart come evil plans, murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, false witness, abusive speech. 20 These are the things that defile a person. But eating with unwashed hands does not defile a person!”

[James 3:6-10](#) (LEB)

And the tongue is a fire! The world of unrighteousness, the tongue, is set among our members, defiling the whole body and setting on fire the course of human existence, being set on fire by hell.

7 For every species of animals and birds, of reptiles and sea creatures, is being tamed and has been tamed by the human species, 8 but no human being is able to tame the tongue. It is a restless evil, full of deadly poison. 9 With it we bless the Lord and Father, and with it we curse people who are made in the likeness of God. 10 From the same mouth come blessing and cursing. My brothers, these things ought not to be so!

Question: What have you said (or found on your heart) that either brought blessing or brought cursing in life?

Response:

- D. Our flesh holds onto bitterness and is always self-seeking. Again, not from the Spirit, but of that part of us that does not want to let go of the protection or justification we feel by holding onto that bitterness.

[James 3:13-18](#) (LEB)

Who is wise and understanding among you? Let him show by his good behaviour his works, with the humility of wisdom. 14 But if you have bitter jealousy and selfish ambition in your hearts, do not boast and tell lies against

SOWING & REAPING

Bible Study: Lesson 045



the truth. 15 This is not the wisdom that comes down from above, but is earthly, unspiritual, demonic. 16 For where there is jealousy and selfish ambition, there is disorder and every evil practice. 17 But the wisdom from above is first pure, then peaceful, gentle, obedient, full of mercy and good fruits, non-judgmental, without hypocrisy, 18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace among those who make peace.

Question: What bitterness do you have (either against yourself or another person)?

Response:

- E. We are God’s creation—Born-Again out from this world into His child. Because of this, we have the ability to overcome anything that we once were. We are saved (continually being saved) from what we once were into who we have been made into.

[Ephesians 2:1-10](#) (LEB)

And you, although you were dead in your trespasses and sins, 2 in which you formerly walked according to the course of this world, according to the ruler of the authority of the air, the spirit now working in the sons of disobedience, 3 among whom also we all formerly lived in the desires of our flesh, doing the will of the flesh and of the mind, and we were children of wrath by nature, as also the rest of them were.

4 But God, being rich in mercy, because of his great love with which he loved us, 5 and we being dead in trespasses, he made us alive together with Christ (by grace you are saved), 6 and raised us together and seated us together in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, 7 in order that he might show in the coming ages the surpassing riches of his grace in kindness upon us in Christ Jesus. 8 For by grace you are saved through faith, and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God; 9 it is not from works, so that no one can boast. 10 For we are his creation, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand, so that we may walk in them

Question: Are you more aware of the things you did verses the things you are capable of doing in Christ?

Response:

- F. Our responsibility is to keep shining and keep preserving (salting) the earth. This is Christ’s direct instruction to us. We represent Christ in our entire being—both collectively and individually. Let’s keep this in the forefront.

[Matthew 5:13-16](#) (LEB)

“You are the salt of the earth. But if salt becomes tasteless, by what will it be made salty? It is good for nothing any longer except to be thrown outside and trampled under foot by people. 14 You are the light of the world. A city located on top of a hill cannot be hidden, 15 nor do they light a lamp and place it under a basket, but on a lampstand, and it shines on all those in the house. 16 In the same way let your light shine before people, so that they can see your good works and glorify your Father who is in heaven.”

Question: What are ways you can keep salting and shining?

Response:

- G. It is less about focusing on our “sins” as it is focusing on our righteousness. Yes, the Lord will reveal in us what needs to change—not to punish, but to set us free. We must not get trapped by the Law in focusing on our sins; but focusing on our righteousness as we change from “glory to glory”.

[Romans 3:19-26](#) (LEB)

Now we know that whatever the law says, it speaks to those under the law, in order that every mouth may be closed and the whole world may become accountable to God. 20 For by the works of the law no person will be declared righteous before him, for through the law comes knowledge of sin.

21 But now, apart from the law, the righteousness of God has been revealed, being testified about by the law and the prophets— 22 that is, the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. For there is no distinction, 23 for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, 24 being justified as a gift by his grace, through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus, 25 whom God made publicly available as the mercy seat through faith in his blood, for a demonstration of his righteousness, because of the passing over of previously committed sins, 26 in the forbearance of God, for the demonstration of his righteousness in the present time, so that he should be just and the one who justifies the person by faith in Jesus.

[2 Corinthians 3:17-18](#) (LEB)

Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. 18 And we all, with unveiled face, reflecting the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory into glory, just as from the Lord, the Spirit.

Question: Is revealing a sin, or focusing on a sin, what sets you free?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

- A. [1 John 2:12-17](#) (LEB)

I am writing to you, little children, because your sins have been forgiven you on account of his name. 13 I am writing to you, fathers, because you have known the One who is from the beginning. I am writing to you, young men, because you have conquered the evil one. 14 I have written to you, children, because you have known the Father. I have written to you, fathers, because you have known the One who is from the beginning. I have written to you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God resides in you, and you have conquered the evil one.

15 Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him, 16 because everything that is in the world—the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the

arrogance of material possessions—is not from the Father, but is from the world. 17 And the world is passing away, and its desire, but the one who does the will of God remains forever.

Thoughts: I have found it difficult to address the wrongs of word and action that I produce in my life. I did not fully see all that has been in my life stemming from what I picked up from this world (a result, for me, of much trauma in my life). And from that trauma came ways of surviving that were detrimental to me.

Much of what I could see in my life that was wrong (but could not fix) I believed the Lord was holding against me—ready to always punish me for my sins. But then I came to believe (as all these Bible Lessons attain to) that the Lord was not angry with me. Instead, there was peace between Him and I ([Romans 5:1](#)). That changed my life forever!

But what didn't change right away was the things I was still doing that didn't align fully with the Spirit. Oh, yes, I could see changes in how I thought, believed, and behaved; but it was not a one-and-done reality. No, it is a constant reality of change that I (we) have to push into each and every moment.

Oh, how our dualities all collide together in this world, bringing good and evil!

B. [Deuteronomy 28-30](#) (LEB)

Thoughts: Read through the guidance the Lord gave Israel as they had come out of slavery. What they picked up (iniquities / negative nurturing) during their time in Egypt was not aligned fully with the Lord. They knew that their life was not going well under Egypt, so they sought after Him for the freedom. A freedom the Lord gave to them. But they (as children) needed a form of guidance to understand what would benefit them and what would not—as they really only knew and understood they “ways” of Egypt.

So, then, why all the laws and rules given by the Lord when they came out?

In our relationship with the Lord, because He is perfect, there is no need to enforce boundaries—for He will never hurt us. But humans hurt each other. Thus, humans need protective (healthy) boundaries from one-another. Boundaries are only in place to help protect us from imperfection: being taken advantage of (or taking advantage of others). This sad but necessary reality is what is meant to establish a way of life for us for our betterment. The Law exists where Love does not--and where Love exists, the Law is fulfilled.

When you read their journey into Egypt and in their Exodus and life after, take note the things they did when given choices by the Lord. And see how their own choices (not God forcing them) brought about life or death—in that they would reap what they sowed. But I want to be specific here, the “curses” that came about were not brought about by God.

This is as we read where “the one who sows to his own flesh will reap corruption from the flesh” ([Galatians 6:8](#)). We see how it is not God that brings about corruption, but our own flesh.

God gave them a choice with the capability to make the right choice, each choice brought about blessing and curses due to sowing and reaping. God does not bring curses, He brings Life!

Even when we read personal stories of Abraham, King David, and so many others; they faced hardships in life—not because God brought the hardships, but that their own actions / inactions (and those of others) brought about the difficulties they went through.

The same pertains to you and me.

MINISTRY TYPES

INTENTION:

When we learn about the Lord through one of these Ministry Types, we get a glimpse of who the Lord is from that understanding. When an Apostle shares and demonstrates the Lord in them, we see Him from that perspective—the same when from a Prophet, Evangelist, Pastor, and Teacher.

As we experience the Lord through each as a collective, we form a greater picture of Him—and often in the time we need to hear / see Him in a season of life.

We each have the ability perform in them as well. And although, you may be more in-tuned in one Ministry Type, it does not mean we cannot each operate in all the Ministry Types in any given situation, season, or lifetime. Don't limit what the Lord can do in and through you!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Ministry Types (Apostle, Prophet, Evangelist, Pastor & Teacher).

These Gifts of Christ (separate from the Gifts of the Holy Spirit) are directly from the Lord to each of us for the benefit of the world. They each help both the Believer and Non-Believer. As a believer, we get the benefit of an expanded knowledge of the Lord—for both our growth and the growth of the collective Body of Christ. As a non-believer, they become a demonstration and acknowledgement of the Lord to break through the unbelief and lead a person to Christ (this being an extension of God's Work to bring people to Christ).

Study how Jesus operated in each of these Ministry Types as examples for us, as we too can operate in each and all of these Ministry Types too—with no restrictions based on gender, nationality, race, age, iniquity, or any other description. We can study out as well how each of those after the Cross filled those Ministry Types.

This is something I want to make clear here: that we have the exact same capabilities as Christ Jesus—"as He is, so are we in this world" ([1 John 4:17b](#)). Don't limit yourself to just one of these, as you too can operate in all of them. One may feel more comfortable for us; or that we seem stronger in one over the others, but that does not negate His ability in you to perform all of them at any given time.

For you, one may be a life-long Ministry Type, but also filled with moments that are each of the others. Or, it may look to you as though there are different extended seasons of the different Ministry Types that play out in your lifetime. Or, it may be that you operate fully in each Ministry Type at any/every given situation for your whole life.

As such, let us not limit how the Lord wants to manifest each of them in and through you. Each time you accept that role (for a moment, season, or life), you help the Body of Christ.

II. READING: [Ephesians 4:1-32](#) (GWT) [PoG]

1, a prisoner in the Lord, encourage you to live the kind of life which proves that God has called you. 2 Be humble and gentle in every way. Be patient with each other and lovingly accept each other. 3 Through the peace that ties you together, do your best to maintain the unity that the Spirit gives. 4 There is one body and one Spirit. In the same way you were called to share one hope. 5 There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6 one God and Father of all, who is over everything, through everything, and in everything.

7 God's favour has been given to each of us. It was measured out to us by Christ who gave it. 8 That's why the Scriptures say: "When he went to the highest place, he took captive those who had captured us and gave gifts to people."

9 Now what does it mean that he went up except that he also had gone down to the lowest parts of the earth? 10 The one who had gone down also went up above all the heavens so that he fills everything.

11 He also gave apostles, prophets, missionaries [evangelists], as well as pastors [shepherds] and teachers as gifts to his church. 12 Their purpose is to prepare God's people to serve and to build up the body of Christ. 13 This is to continue until all of us are united in our faith and in our [correct] knowledge about God's Son, until we become mature, until we measure up to Christ, who is the standard. 14 Then we will no longer be little children, tossed and carried about by all kinds of teachings that change like the wind. We will no longer be influenced by people who use cunning and clever strategies to lead us astray. 15 Instead, as we lovingly speak the truth, we will grow up completely in our relationship to Christ, who is the head. 16 He makes the whole body fit together and unites it through the support of every joint. As each and every part does its job, he makes the body grow so that it builds itself up in love.

17 So I tell you and encourage you in the Lord's name not to live any longer like other people in the world. Their minds are set on worthless things. 18 They can't understand because they are in the dark. They are excluded from the life that God approves of because of their ignorance and stubbornness. 19 Since they no longer have any sense of shame, they have become promiscuous. They practice every kind of sexual perversion with a constant desire for more.

20 But that is not what you learned from Christ’s teachings. 21 You have certainly heard his message and have been taught his ways. The truth is in Jesus. 22 You were taught to change the way you were living. The person you used to be will ruin you through desires that deceive you. 23 However, you were taught to have a new attitude. 24 You were also taught to become a new person created to be like God, with a life that truly has God’s approval and is holy.

25 So then, get rid of lies. Speak the truth to each other, because we are all members of the same body.

26 Be angry without sinning. Don’t go to bed angry. 27 Don’t give the devil any opportunity to work.

28 Thieves must quit stealing and, instead, they must work hard. They should do something good with their hands so that they’ll have something to share with those in need.

29 Don’t say anything that would hurt another person. Instead, speak only what is good so that you can give help wherever it is needed. That way, what you say will help those who hear you. 30 Don’t give God’s Holy Spirit any reason to be upset with you. He has put his seal on you for the day you will be set free from the world of sin.

31 Get rid of your bitterness, hot tempers, anger, loud quarrelling, cursing, and hatred. 32 Be kind to each other, sympathetic, forgiving each other as God has forgiven you through Christ.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. An Apostle is “a delegate, messenger, one sent forth with orders” ([G652](#): *apostolos*). Being an Apostle is not about a title, but a specific demonstration of the Lord. Some Apostles are from Jesus’s ministry—the 11 sent to the Jews, Paul sent to the Gentiles—others were as well. Each of them (including Jesus) being demonstration to us of what an Apostle can be; each fulfilling their role differently as to what they were called to do—the role as an Apostle is not the same for everyone. For Jesus, He was THE Apostle for us all from God the Father. *Note that being an Apostle does not make it that you perform miracles—the miracles come to anyone who believes.*

[Hebrews 3:1-2a](#) (GWT)

Brothers and sisters, you are holy partners in a heavenly calling. So, look carefully at Jesus, the apostle and chief priest about whom we make our declaration of faith. 2 Jesus is faithful to God, who appointed him.

[Romans 11:13](#) (GWT)

Now, I speak to you who are not Jewish. As long as I am an apostle sent to people who are not Jewish, I bring honour to my ministry.

[Romans 16:7](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Greet Andronicus and Junia [[G2458](#), a woman], who are Jewish by birth like me. They are prisoners like me and are prominent among the apostles. They also were Christians before I was.

[1 Peter 1:1](#) (GWT)

From Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ. To God’s chosen people who are temporary residents in the world and are scattered throughout the provinces of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.

Question: Do you believe that only the Disciples were Apostles (that when they died, there have been no more)?

Response:

B. A Prophet is “someone speaking / singing by inspiration of the Lord / Spirit and being an interpreter of God” ([H5030: nābî](#); [G4396: prophētēs](#); [G4398: prophētis](#)). The Old Testament contained many Prophets that spoke the Will of the Lord—including Isaiah, King David, Daniel, Jeremiah, Joel, and Jonah. They (with others) foretold of the coming Messiah. These different Prophets (throughout centuries) spoke of the comfort and hope that there will be a Saviour for us—which came true with Christ and the Cross. For us, we can each have the Gift of Prophecy ([G4394: prophēteia](#); [G4395: prophēteuō](#)) manifest for a person / moment; but the role of a Prophet is to carry that through in their daily lives for the edification and exhortation and comfort to people.

[Matthew 13:57](#) (GWT)

So they took offense at him. But Jesus said to them, “The only place a prophet isn’t honoured is in his hometown and in his own house.”

[Luke 2:36-38](#) (GWT)

Anna, a prophet, was also there. She was a descendant of Phanuel from the tribe of Asher. She was now very old. Her husband had died seven years after they were married, 37 and she had been a widow for 84 years. Anna never left the temple courtyard but worshiped day and night by fasting and praying. 38 At that moment she came up to Mary and Joseph and began to thank God. She spoke about Jesus to all who were waiting for Jerusalem to be set free.

[Acts 2:17-18](#) (GWT)

‘In the last days, God says, I will pour my Spirit on everyone. Your sons and daughters will speak what God has revealed ([G4395](#)). Your young men will see visions. Your old men will dream dreams.

18 In those days I will pour my Spirit on my servants, on both men and women. They will speak what God has revealed ([G4395](#)).

[Acts 13:1-3](#) (GWT)

Barnabas, Simeon (called the Black), Lucius (from Cyrene), Manaen (a close friend of Herod since childhood), and Saul were prophets ([G4396](#)) and teachers in the church in Antioch.

2 While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, “Set Barnabas and Saul apart for me. I want them to do the work for which I called them.” 3 After fasting and praying, Simeon, Lucius, and Manaen placed their hands on Barnabas and Saul, and released them from their work in Antioch.

[1 Corinthians 14:1-5a](#) (GWT)

Pursue love, and desire spiritual gifts, but especially the gift of speaking what God has revealed ([G4395](#)). 2 When a person speaks in another language, he doesn’t speak to people but to God. No one understands him. His spirit is speaking mysteries. 3 But when a person speaks what God has revealed ([G4395](#)), he speaks to people to help them grow, to encourage them, and to comfort them. 4 When a person speaks in another language, he helps himself grow. But when a person speaks what God has revealed ([G4395](#)), he helps the church grow. 5 I wish that all of you could speak in other languages, but especially that you could speak what God has revealed.

Question: Has a Prophet revealed things to you that changed your life for the better and came true?

Response:

- C. An Evangelist is “someone that brings a message or proclamation of Good (including the Gospel and promise of Salvation)” ([G2099](#): *euangelistēs*; [G2097](#): *euangelizō*) . This has been angels and people. And moreso, Christ Jesus!

[Matthew 11:2-6](#) (GWT)

When John was in prison, he heard about the things Christ had done. So he sent his disciples 3 to ask Jesus, “Are you the one who is coming, or should we look for someone else?”

4 Jesus answered John’s disciples, “Go back, and tell John what you hear and see: 5 Blind people see again, lame people are walking, those with skin diseases are made clean, deaf people hear again, dead people are brought back to life, and poor people hear the Good News ([G2097](#)). 6 Whoever doesn’t lose his faith in me is indeed blessed.”

[Luke 2:8-14](#) (GWT) [PoG]

Shepherds were in the fields near Bethlehem. They were taking turns watching their flock during the night. 9 An angel from the Lord suddenly appeared to them. The glory of the Lord filled the area with light, and they were terrified. 10 The angel said to them, “Don’t be afraid! I have good news for you, a message that will fill everyone with joy. 11 Today your Saviour, Christ the Lord, was born in David’s city. 12 This is how you will recognize him: You will find an infant wrapped in strips of cloth and lying in a manger.”

13 Suddenly, a large army of angels appeared with the angel. They were praising God by saying, 14 “Glory to God in the highest heaven, and on earth peace [good will towards mankind]!”

[Luke 3:15-18](#) (GWT)

People’s hopes were rising as they all wondered whether John was the Messiah. 16 John replied to all of them, “I baptize you with water. But the one who is more powerful than I is coming. I am not worthy to untie his sandal straps. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. 17 His winnowing shovel is in his hand to clean up his threshing floor. He will gather the wheat into his barn, but he will burn the husks in a fire that can never be put out.”

18 With many other encouraging words, he told the Good News to the people ([G2097](#)).

[Acts 21:7-9](#) (GWT)

Our sea travel ended when we sailed from Tyre to the city of Ptolemais. We greeted the believers in Ptolemais and spent the day with them. 8 The next day we went to Philip’s home in Caesarea and stayed with him. He was a missionary ([G2099](#)) and one of the seven men who helped the apostles. 9 Philip had four unmarried daughters who had the ability to speak what God had revealed ([G4395](#)).

[Galatians 1:11-12; 15-16](#) (GWT)

I want you to know, brothers and sisters, that the Good News ([G4395](#)) I have spread is not a human message. 12 I didn’t receive it from any person. I wasn’t taught it, but Jesus Christ revealed it to me.

But God, who appointed me before I was born and who called me by his kindness, was pleased 16 to show me his Son. He did this so that I would tell people who are not Jewish that his Son is the Good News ([G4395](#)). When this happened, I didn’t talk it over with any other person.

[2 Timothy 4:2-5](#) (GWT)

Be ready to spread the word whether or not the time is right. Point out errors, warn people, and encourage them. Be very patient when you teach.

3 A time will come when people will not listen to accurate teachings. Instead, they will follow their own desires and surround themselves with teachers who tell them what they want to hear. 4 People will refuse to listen to the truth and turn to myths.

5 But you must keep a clear head in everything. Endure suffering. Do the work of a missionary ([G2099](#)). Devote yourself completely to your work.

Question: What does it mean to you, “Good News”?

Response:

D. A Pastor is “a person who ‘shepherds’ other in their care—guiding and overseeing individuals and/or groups of people” ([G4166](#): *poimēn*). It is the Lord that Shepherds us ([Psalms 23](#)), but also is that Christ Jesus is our Shepherd. This role of Shepherding we take on, does NOT make people *our* flock, the role we take is that of helping guide the *Lord’s* flock—Jesus told Peter to “feed, tend to, furnish pasture for, nourish, cherish, and to supply the souls of Jesus’s sheep” ([John 21:15-18](#)).

[Mark 6:32-34](#) (GWT)

So they went away in a boat to a place where they could be alone. 33 But many people saw them leave and recognized them. The people ran from all the cities and arrived ahead of them. 34 When Jesus got out of the boat, he saw a large crowd and felt sorry for them. They were like sheep without a shepherd ([G4166](#)). So he spent a lot of time teaching them.

[John 10:14-18](#) (GWT)

“I am the good shepherd ([G4166](#)). I know my sheep as the Father knows me. My sheep know me as I know the Father. 15 So I give my life for my sheep. 16 I also have other sheep that are not from this pen. I must lead them. They, too, will respond to my voice. So they will be one flock with one shepherd ([G4166](#)). 17 The Father loves me because I give my life in order to take it back again. 18 No one takes my life from me. I give my life of my own free will. I have the authority to give my life, and I have the authority to take my life back again. This is what my Father ordered me to do.”

[Hebrews 13:20-21](#) (GWT)

The God of peace brought the great shepherd ([G4166](#)) of the sheep, our Lord Jesus, back to life through the blood of an eternal promise. 21 May this God of peace prepare you to do every good thing he wants. May he work in us through Jesus Christ to do what is pleasing to him. Glory belongs to Jesus Christ forever. Amen.

Question: What does it look like to help Shephard the Lord’s flock?

Response:

E. To “teach, instruct, instil doctrine, impart instruction, have discourse with others, explain and expound on something of the Lord” ([G1320](#): *didaskalos*). Both His Disciples and other people considered Jesus as a Teacher (Rabbi / Master). But we also see how Paul and we can also be teachers as well. How Jesus and others taught is critical to how we teach as well.

[John 13:12-17](#) (GWT)

After Jesus had washed their feet and put on his outer clothes, he took his place at the table again. Then he asked his disciples, “Do you understand what I’ve done for you? 13 You call me teacher ([G1320](#)) and Lord, and you’re right because that’s what I am. 14 So if I, your Lord and teacher ([G1320](#)), have washed your feet, you must wash each other’s feet. 15 I’ve given you an example that you should follow. 16 I can guarantee this truth: Slaves are not superior to their owners, and messengers are not superior to the people who send them. 17 If you understand all of this, you are blessed whenever you follow my example.

[Acts 13:1-3](#) (GWT)

Barnabas, Simeon (called the Black), Lucius (from Cyrene), Manaen (a close friend of Herod since childhood), and Saul were prophets and teachers ([G1320](#)) in the church in Antioch.

2 While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, “Set Barnabas and Saul apart for me. I want them to do the work for which I called them.” 3 After fasting and praying, Simeon, Lucius, and Manaen placed their hands on Barnabas and Saul, and released them from their work in Antioch.

[2 Timothy 1:9-11](#) (GWT)

God saved us and called us to be holy, not because of what we had done, but because of his own plan and kindness. Before the world began, God planned that Christ Jesus would show us God’s kindness. 10 Now with the coming of our Saviour Christ Jesus, he has revealed it. Christ has destroyed death, and through the Good News he has brought eternal life into full view. 11 I was appointed to be a messenger of this Good News, an apostle, and a teacher ([G1320](#)).

[James 3:1](#) (GWT)

Brothers and sisters, not many of you should become teachers ([G1320](#)). You know that we who teach will be judged more severely.

Question:

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Luke 4:16-21](#) (GWT)

Then Jesus came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up. As usual he went into the synagogue on the day of rest—a holy day. He stood up to read the lesson. 17 The attendant gave him the book of the prophet Isaiah. He opened it and found the place where it read:

18 “The Spirit of the Lord is with me.
He has anointed me to tell the Good News to the poor.
He has sent me to announce forgiveness to the prisoners of sin
and the restoring of sight to the blind,
to forgive those who have been shattered by sin,
19 to announce the year of the Lord’s favour.”

BODY OF CHRIST

INTENTION:

We have been Born-Again into the Image of Christ Jesus—each of us “being transformed from glory to glory” to represent Him individually. Yet, we also form a Body collectively. When each of us fills a role (“body part”) for the Lord (in any given moment, season, or lifetime), we each become a representative of Christ Jesus in that area. And when we see the “Christ” in each person individually, we get a fuller picture of who He is as a whole.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at the Body of Christ—both as an Individual and as a Collective.

Though, each of us together make up a collective Body of Christ, we ourselves are a representative of Jesus Himself.

For each of us (individually), we are “being transformed from glory to glory” to fully “reflect” the image / glory of the Lord ([2 Corinthians 3:18](#)). For as Christ Jesus is, so are we in this world ([1 John 4:17b](#)). This includes His instruction for us to “preach the gospel” with “signs accompanying those (anyone) who believes” ([Mark 16:15-18](#)).

We had previously looked at how all the Gifts of the Spirit exists through each and every one of us in Lesson 035. The same principal applies to the different Ministries (of the Lord through us), and the different Activities (of God through us). As such, we each, individually, are a Body of Christ.

Yet, because there are multitudes of believers, the sum of all of them creates a collective Body of Christ. And for each individual person, we all are at differing maturities in our existence with the Lord. As such, we develop in our own unique way exposing Gifts, Ministries, and Activities through ourselves.

For one person, one Gift may stand out first (in which they get more comfortable and confident in)—the same for Ministries and Activities. Thus, because we each manifest in our own timing, we have to rely on others who have manifested differently than us.

This does not mean we/they are more perfect in their relationship with the Lord; it just means we each have our own freedoms to work into. None of us is absolutely perfect when it comes to never making mistakes—we all have our hindrances of the flesh that we battle. And because none of us are perfect in this world, we have to collectively take the Godly things that do manifest in each of our lives to form a complete picture of Christ Jesus here on earth.

When we look at the faults of others and ourselves, we will never fully see Christ. Yet, when we only focus on seeing (recognising) Christ manifest out from us, we can add it to everyone else who we also focus on seeing Christ manifest from. You manifest a particular area (representation) of Christ, another person a different area, and on-and-on till we collectively make up the Whole of Christ.

This does not mean we cannot each manifest more of Christ in the differing areas of life, but to only look at one person as an example of Christ will not give us the full experience of Christ (as Jesus Himself demonstrated).

So, strive for all the Gifts, Ministries, and Activities in your own individual life; while at the same time, looking at the Godly in others (the collective Body of Christ) to help you in your journey to uncover more of Christ in you.

Reading verses 4-11 following: interpret it as being differing Gifts at differing times in each and every person—that the Gifts manifest through any of us at a time needed for the person (people) in front of us that Gift is meant for. The Gift is not for the giver, but for the one needing to receive it.

Reading verses 29-30 following: interpret the answer to the questions as being a YES (that I can, even though I may not realise / manifest it yet).

II. READING: [1 Corinthians 12:1-31](#) (CSB)

Now concerning spiritual gifts: brothers and sisters, I do not want you to be unaware. 2 You know that when you were pagans, you used to be enticed and led astray by mute idols. 3 Therefore I want you to know that no one speaking by the Spirit of God says, “Jesus is cursed,” and no one can say, “Jesus is Lord,” except by the Holy Spirit.

4 Now there are different gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 There are different ministries, but the same Lord. 6 And there are different activities, but the same God works all of them in each person. 7 A manifestation of the Spirit is given to each person for the common good: 8 to one is given a message of wisdom through the Spirit, to another, a message of knowledge by the same Spirit, 9 to another, faith by the same Spirit, to another, gifts of healing by the one Spirit,

10 to another, the performing of miracles, to another, prophecy, to another, distinguishing between spirits, to another, different kinds of tongues, to another, interpretation of tongues. 11 One and the same Spirit is active in all these, distributing to each person as he wills.

12 For just as the body is one and has many parts, and all the parts of that body, though many, are one body—so also is Christ. 13 For we were all baptized by one Spirit into one body—whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free—and we were all given one Spirit to drink. 14 Indeed, the body is not one part but many. 15 If the foot should say, “Because I’m not a hand, I don’t belong to the body,” it is not for that reason any less a part of the body. 16 And if the ear should say, “Because I’m not an eye, I don’t belong to the body,” it is not for that reason any less a part of the body. 17 If the whole body were an eye, where would the hearing be? If the whole body were an ear, where would the sense of smell be? 18 But as it is, God has arranged each one of the parts in the body just as he wanted. 19 And if they were all the same part, where would the body be? 20 As it is, there are many parts, but one body. 21 The eye cannot say to the hand, “I don’t need you!” Or again, the head can’t say to the feet, “I don’t need you!” 22 On the contrary, those parts of the body that are weaker are indispensable. 23 And those parts of the body that we consider less honourable, we clothe these with greater honour, and our unrespectable parts are treated with greater respect, 24 which our respectable parts do not need.

Instead, God has put the body together, giving greater honour to the less honourable, 25 so that there would be no division in the body, but that the members would have the same concern for each other. 26 So if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it; if one member is honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

27 Now you are the body of Christ, and individual members of it. 28 And God has appointed these in the church: first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, next miracles, then gifts of healing, helping, leading, various kinds of tongues. 29 Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Do all do miracles? 30 Do all have gifts of healing? Do all speak in tongues? Do all interpret? 31 But desire the greater gifts. And I will show you an even better way.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. For Jesus, during His ministry, He did not instruct each Disciple differently as to perform only specific Gifts, Ministry, or Activities. He demonstrated Himself to them (and to each of us now) as for us/them to replicate what He showed to do. He even said any ONE person could do the same as Him and more—all we have to do is believe; and if we don’t see, to ask Him about it.

[John 14:12-14](#) (CSB)

“Truly I tell you, the one who believes in me will also do the works that I do. And he will do even greater works than these, because I am going to the Father. 13 Whatever you ask in my name, I will do it so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If you ask me anything in my name, I will do it.”

Question: Are you asking for more?

Response:

- B. What Jesus bore on His body, was all our pain, suffering, illness, disease, and curses—His Body, not representing sickness, but healing and health. This is represented for us when we take Communion and “break bread”. We, as both and individual and collective Body of Christ also need to bring forth this healing and health.

[Luke 22:14-20](#) (CSB)

When the hour came, he reclined at the table, and the apostles with him. 15 Then he said to them, "I have fervently desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. 16 For I tell you, I will not eat it again until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God." 17 Then he took a cup, and after giving thanks, he said, "Take this and share it among yourselves. 18 For I tell you, from now on I will not drink of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes."

19 And he took bread, gave thanks, broke it, gave it to them, and said, "This is my body, which is given for you. Do this in remembrance of me."

20 In the same way he also took the cup after supper and said, "This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is poured out for you."

[1 Peter 2:24](#) (CSB)

He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree; so that, having died to sins, we might live for righteousness. By his wounds you have been healed.

Question: As His Body, do you assume you have to bear sickness and disease; or do you believe you bear health and healing?

Response:

- C. As you strive for your own maturity as an individual Body of Christ, remember to also take part in the collective Body of Christ. That communion of bread and wine represents all of us as one body.

[1 Corinthians 10:16-17](#) (CSB)

The cup of blessing that we bless, is it not a sharing in the blood of Christ? The bread that we break, is it not a sharing in the body of Christ? 17 Because there is one bread, we who are many are one body, since all of us share the one bread.

Question: What are ways you can share collectively in the Body of Christ?

Response:

- D. Collectively, we must cooperate and coordinate with one-another. If we become jealous of other peoples manifesting Gifts, Ministries, or Activities, we bicker and fight. Our role is to build each other up, not tear each other down. So, appreciate the Gifts, Ministries, or Activities in your own life and in the life of everyone else.

[Romans 12:3-18](#) (CSB)

For by the grace given to me, I tell everyone among you not to think of himself more highly than he should think. Instead, think sensibly, as God has distributed a measure of faith to each one. 4 Now as we have many parts in one body, and all the parts do not have the same function, 5 in the same way we who are many are one body in

Christ and individually members of one another. 6 According to the grace given to us, we have different gifts: If prophecy, use it according to the proportion of one's faith; 7 if service, use it in service; if teaching, in teaching; 8 if exhorting, in exhortation; giving, with generosity; leading, with diligence; showing mercy, with cheerfulness.

9 Let love be without hypocrisy. Detest evil; cling to what is good. 10 Love one another deeply as brothers and sisters. Take the lead in honouring one another. 11 Do not lack diligence in zeal; be fervent in the Spirit; serve the Lord. 12 Rejoice in hope; be patient in affliction; be persistent in prayer. 13 Share with the saints in their needs; pursue hospitality. 14 Bless those who persecute you; bless and do not curse. 15 Rejoice with those who rejoice; weep with those who weep. 16 Live in harmony with one another. Do not be proud; instead, associate with the humble. Do not be wise in your own estimation. 17 Do not repay anyone evil for evil. Give careful thought to do what is honourable in everyone's eyes. 18 If possible, as far as it depend.

Question: How can you respect another person's Gifts, Ministries, or Activities?

Response:

- E. Our collective Body of Christ can form groups that make up a church—representing the Body of Christ locally and globally. It is this collective group of Gifts, Ministries, or Activities that further the Work of God. Paul wrote to these churches in Rome, Corinth, Galatia, Ephesus, Phillipi, Colossea, etc; and even to small churches in a person's home (like Philemon). Paul guided each one into the wisdom and revelation of Christ within the limits they had in that area. Where we live creates strongholds in us as we pick up from our culture and surroundings. Because of this, we each need a specialised help of growth and maturing that can differ from other areas. Likewise, each area can pose doctrines and limitations based on religion or custom that does not belong in the Body of Christ (hence Paul admonishing the church of Galatia for falling back on the Law and Jewish customs).

[Galatians 2:20-21; 3:1-5](#) (CSB)

I have been crucified with Christ, and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I now live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. 21 I do not set aside the grace of God, for if righteousness comes through the law, then Christ died for nothing.

You foolish Galatians! Who has cast a spell on you, before whose eyes Jesus Christ was publicly portrayed as crucified? 2 I only want to learn this from you: Did you receive the Spirit by the works of the law or by believing what you heard? 3 Are you so foolish? After beginning by the Spirit, are you now finishing by the flesh? 4 Did you experience so much for nothing—if in fact it was for nothing? 5 So then, does God give you the Spirit and work miracles among you by your doing the works of the law? Or is it by believing what you heard.

[Ephesians 1:17-23](#) (CSB)

I pray that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, would give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him. 18 I pray that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened so that you may know what is the hope of his calling, what is the wealth of his glorious inheritance in the saints, 19 and what is the immeasurable greatness of his power toward us who believe, according to the mighty working of his strength.

20 He exercised this power in Christ by raising him from the dead and seating him at his right hand in the heavens— 21 far above every ruler and authority, power and dominion, and every title given, not only in this age but also in the one to come. 22 And he subjected everything under his feet and appointed him as head over everything for the church, 23 which is his body, the fullness of the one who fills all things in every way.

Question: How does the church you belong to demonstrate the Body of Christ as a collective—and help break down cultural / religious doctrines?

Response:

F. Because of what Christ Jesus fully accomplished at the Cross, each individual person has access into His Body by believing in Him (being Born-Again as an individual into the Body of Christ). As each new person believes and is Born-Again, they become part of the collective in their individuality. Each one instructed to grow as an individual in the correct knowledge of the Lord, in-turn growing a collective in that same correct knowledge. Christ is the Head of the Body (all the Church) and should be the one guiding it to where He needs it to go. Let us, as members of that Body, listen and obey to the instruction given to us from the Head (as each member of our own physical body—in health—follows our own mind).

Colossians 1:9-22 (CSB)

For this reason also, since the day we heard this, we haven't stopped praying for you. We are asking that you may be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding, 10 so that you may walk worthy of the Lord, fully pleasing to him: bearing fruit in every good work and growing in the knowledge of God, 11 being strengthened with all power, according to his glorious might, so that you may have great endurance and patience, joyfully 12 giving thanks to the Father, who has enabled you to share in the saints' inheritance in the light. 13 He has rescued us from the domain of darkness and transferred us into the kingdom of the Son he loves. 14 In him we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

15 He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation.

16 For everything was created by him, in heaven and on earth, the visible and the invisible, whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities—all things have been created through him and for him.

17 He is before all things, and by him all things hold together.

18 He is also the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, so that he might come to have first place in everything.

19 For God was pleased to have all his fullness dwell in him,

20 and through him to reconcile everything to himself, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross.

21 Once you were alienated and hostile in your minds as expressed in your evil actions. 22 But now he has reconciled you by his physical body through his death, to present you holy, faultless, and blameless before him.

Question: How are you personally listening to the Lord to guide you individually and as part of the collective Body of Christ?

Response:

G. This collective Body of Christ forms a family. Yes, we ARE a welcomed part of the Lord’s home as His family—His household. He is our daddy. You are a real child of the Father. You can call Him Home! When you are scared, you can go home for safety. When you are alone, you can go home for comfort. When you feel rejected, you can go home to feel welcomed. And whenever we go home, let us (as brothers and sisters) welcome each other as the Father welcomes us—without judgement, shame, or hardship.

[Ephesians 2:18-22](#) (CSB)

For through him we both have access in one Spirit to the Father. 19 So, then, you are no longer foreigners and strangers, but fellow citizens with the saints, and members of God’s household, 20 built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the cornerstone. 21 In him the whole building, being put together, grows into a holy temple in the Lord. 22 In him you are also being built together for God’s dwelling in the Spirit.

Question: Do you feel you belong in God’s home (household)?

Response:

H. This household deserves Love! So much of our family dynamic on earth has hurt and pain. The more we love, the less hurt and pain we inflict on others and on ourselves. So this is not just about loving our own family, but the family that is the Body of Christ (never forgetting to have love to yourself). This love bonds us ([G4886](#), exactly as ligaments bind the members of the human body).

[Colossians 3:12-17](#) (CSB)

Therefore, as God’s chosen ones, holy and dearly loved, put on compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience, 13 bearing with one another and forgiving one another if anyone has a grievance against another. Just as the Lord has forgiven you, so you are also to forgive. 14 Above all, put on love, which is the perfect bond of unity. 15 And let the peace of Christ, to which you were also called in one body, rule your hearts. And be thankful. 16 Let the word of Christ dwell richly among you, in all wisdom teaching and admonishing one another through psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs, singing to God with gratitude in your hearts. 17 And whatever you do, in word or in deed, do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

Question: How does Love unite us?

Response:

I. It is this unity that even Jesus Himself prayed for. His prayer for all believers helps guide / instruct us on ways we can unify (become one in Him individually, and one with each other in Him collectively) as a church (Body of Believers / Body of Christ). He demonstrated this in the love between Him and the Father; but also showed it in how much He loved His disciples (even in their imperfections). We must believe and expect His prayer will come true for us—with us acting on fulfilling it!

[John 17:20-26](#) (CSB)

“I pray not only for these, but also for those who believe in me through their word. 21 May they all be one, as you, Father, are in me and I am in you. May they also be in us, so that the world may believe you sent me. 22 I have given them the glory you have given me, so that they may be one as we are one. 23 I am in them and you are in me, so that they may be made completely one, that the world may know you have sent me and have loved them as you have loved me.

24 “Father, I want those you have given me to be with me where I am, so that they will see my glory, which you have given me because you loved me before the world’s foundation. 25 Righteous Father, the world has not known you. However, I have known you, and they have known that you sent me. 26 I made your name known to them and will continue to make it known, so that the love you have loved me with may be in them and I may be in them.”

Question: What are ways you can help the Body “be one” as fulfilling Jesus’s prayer?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Revelations 2-3](#) (CSB)

Jesus’s Letters to the Seven Churches.

Thoughts: Have a read through those letters to the seven churches to see what instruction the Lord has for us in our churches. Note that there is no condemnation in these letters, so let’s look at it in a positive (Grace) manner.

One book I have read that helps understand the way it was written is:

[Letters from Jesus: Finding Good News in Christ’s Letters to the Churches – by Paul Ellis](#)

OVERCOME THE WORLD

INTENTION:

There is so much that happens in this world that wears on us and tries to constantly bring us down.

“The thief comes to steal, kill, and destroy; Christ came to bring us abundant life.”

Because of all He accomplished through the Cross, sending the Holy Spirit, living in us, and blessing us with all Spiritual blessings, we have that ability to overcome anything that can come our way.

Christ overcame all He suffered, and so can we!

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at what it means for us that Christ has “Overcome the World”.

There is so much depth to the ministry of Jesus when He was on this earth. As we have read in these Bible Lessons, Jesus Christ came to this earth to be an exact duplicate of who God our Father is. Anything that may have been shared from the Law and the Prophets about God cannot express the accurate fullness of who He is.

This was the God aspect of Jesus—representing all of whom the Lord is.

But Jesus was also a human—representing who we were originally created and designed to be.

Looking at Jesus is not only looking at who He is as God, but who He is as a human.

This is how we can relate to Him and Him to us. Jesus isn’t a representation for us, but of us.

We may not have been born with the sinless flesh as Jesus was, but that does not negate the trails, temptations, and suffering He went through. We too going through similar sufferings.

Yet, in it all, Jesus never faltered; always went to the Father for support; and never stopped believing in His God-Given purpose (fully manifesting that belief as faith).

During Jesus’s final supper with His disciples, He shared with them that because of what they were called to be and do, that they too would face persecution and suffering. And though what they went through was unique to them, it does not distance itself from what we each (individually) go through in this world.

For you and I, we may not feel we can relate to Jesus or the Disciples because we put them on a “higher pedestal” or think of them as being “saints” above what we are (making them into some kind of “superhero”). Yet, you and I are the ones also called “saints” (Holy). This doubt we have in relating to Jesus or the Disciples is also why we also have “such a cloud of witnesses” ([Hebrews 11 & 12](#)) that can also testify to us on suffering and overcoming.

Christ overcame the temptation to quit. The Disciples overcame the temptation to quit.

And the reason why we can hold the Disciples and so many from the Old Testament in high regard is because they never did quit. They all overcame the obstacles in their way—even their own hubris alongside the persecutions.

You and I are no different—they are the same type of human we are. They didn’t have any other special ability we ourselves have not also been given. The same Spirit that lived in them, lives in us. So, for them, you, and I: “in Christ we are more than conquerors” ([Romans 8:37](#)).

Let’s first look into and understand what is meant by Jesus saying that we overcome and are a victor:

Overcome – G3528: *nikaō*

1. to conquer
 - a. to carry off the victory, come off victorious
 - i. of Christ, victorious over all His foes
 - ii. of Christians, that hold fast their faith even unto death against the power of their foes, and temptations and persecutions
 - iii. when one is arraigned or goes to law, to win the case, maintain one's cause

νικάω *nikáō*, nik-ah'-o; from [G3529](#); to subdue (literally or figuratively):—conquer, overcome, prevail, get the victory.

Victory – G3529: *nikē*

1. victory
νίκη *nikē*, nee'-kay; apparently a primary word; conquest (abstractly), i.e. (figuratively) the means of success:—victory

Victory – G3534: *nikos*

1. victory
2. to utterly vanquish
νίκος *nikos*, nee'-kos; from [G3529](#); a conquest (concretely), i.e. (by implication) triumph:—victory

This is our promise (to overcome), no matter what we face.

Then, to know more about some of what we are overcoming (per our reading in John below)—the “trials and sorrows” (tribulations) we go through—we can break down that meaning as well:

Tribulation – G2347: *thlipsis*

1. a pressing, pressing together, pressure
2. metaph. oppression, affliction, tribulation, distress, straits

θλίψις *thlipsis*, thlip'-sis; from [G2346](#); pressure (literally or figuratively):—afflicted(-tion), anguish, burdened, persecution, tribulation, trouble

Pressed – G2346: *thlibō*

1. to press (as grapes), press hard upon
2. a compressed way
 - a. narrow straitened, contracted
3. metaph. to trouble, afflict, distress

θλίβω *thlibō*, thlee'-bo; akin to the base of [G5147](#); to crowd (literally or figuratively):—afflict, narrow, throng, suffer tribulation, trouble

Worn – G5147: *tribos*

1. a worn way, a path
- τρίβος *tribos***, tree'-bos; from τρίβω *tribō* (to "rub"; akin to *τείρω* *teirō*, *τρύω* *trýō*, and the base of [G5131](#), [G5134](#)); a rut or worn track:—path.

Wound – G5134: *trauma*

1. a wound
- τραῦμα *traûma***, trow'-mah; from the base of *τιτρώσκω* *titróskō* (to wound; akin to the base of [G2352](#), [G5147](#), [G5149](#), etc.); a wound:—wound.

Break – G2352: *thrauō*

1. to break, break in pieces, shatter, smite through
- θραύω *thrauō***, throw'-o; a primary verb; to crush:—bruise. Compare [G4486](#).

Gnash – G5149: *trizō*

1. to squeak, make a shrill cry
 2. to gnash or grind one's teeth
- τρίζω *trizō***, trid'-zo; apparently a primary verb; to creak (squeak), i.e. (by analogy) to grate the teeth (in frenzy):—gnash.

Thus, let us read here below where Jesus shared with us (His Disciples) that we will not only face persecution, but overcome it. And then we will get into these persecution and overcoming promises.

II. READING: [John 15:16-26; 16:1-33](#) (TLB)

“You didn’t choose me! I chose you! I appointed you to go and produce lovely fruit always, so that no matter what you ask for from the Father, using my name, he will give it to you. 17 I demand that you love each other, 18 for you get enough hate from the world! But then, it hated me before it hated you. 19 The world would love you if you belonged to it; but you don’t—for I chose you to come out of the world, and so it hates you. 20 Do you remember what I told you? ‘A slave isn’t greater than his master!’ So since they persecuted me, naturally they will persecute you. And if they had listened to me, they would listen to you! 21 The people of the world will persecute you because you belong to me, for they don’t know God who sent me.

22 “They would not be guilty if I had not come and spoken to them. But now they have no excuse for their sin. 23 Anyone hating me is also hating my Father. 24 If I hadn’t done such mighty miracles among them they would not be counted guilty. But as it is, they saw these miracles and yet they hated both of us—me and my Father. 25 This has fulfilled what the prophets said concerning the Messiah, ‘They hated me without reason.’

26 “But I will send you the Comforter—the Holy Spirit, the source of all truth. He will come to you from the Father and will tell you all about me.”

1 “I have told you these things so that you won’t be staggered by all that lies ahead. 2 For you will be excommunicated from the synagogues, and indeed the time is coming when those who kill you will think they are doing God a service. 3 This is because they have never known the Father or me. 4 Yes, I’m telling you these things now so that when they happen you will remember I warned you. I didn’t tell you earlier because I was going to be with you for a while longer.

5 “But now I am going away to the one who sent me; and none of you seems interested in the purpose of my going; none wonders why. 6 Instead you are only filled with sorrow. 7 But the fact of the matter is that it is best for you that I go away, for if I don’t, the Comforter won’t come. If I do, he will—for I will send him to you.

8 “And when he has come he will convince the world of its sin, and of the availability of God’s goodness, and of deliverance from judgment. 9 The world’s sin is unbelief in me; 10 there is righteousness available because I go to the Father and you shall see me no more; 11 there is deliverance from judgment because the prince of this world has already been judged.

12 “Oh, there is so much more I want to tell you, but you can’t understand it now. 13 When the Holy Spirit, who is truth, comes, he shall guide you into all truth, for he will not be presenting his own ideas, but will be passing on to you what he has heard. He will tell you about the future. 14 He shall praise me and bring me great honour by showing you my glory. 15 All the Father’s glory is mine; this is what I mean when I say that he will show you my glory.

16 “In just a little while I will be gone, and you will see me no more; but just a little while after that, and you will see me again!”

17-18 “Whatever is he saying?” some of his disciples asked. “What is this about ‘going to the Father’? We don’t know what he means.”

19 Jesus realized they wanted to ask him so he said, “Are you asking yourselves what I mean? 20 The world will greatly rejoice over what is going to happen to me, and you will weep. But your weeping shall suddenly be turned to wonderful joy when you see me again. 21 It will be the same joy as that of a woman in labour when her child is born—her anguish gives place to rapturous joy and the pain is forgotten. 22 You have sorrow now, but I will see you again and then you will rejoice; and no one can rob you of that joy. 23 At that time you won’t need to ask me for anything, for you can go directly to the Father and ask him, and he will give you what you ask for because you use my name. 24 You haven’t tried this before, but begin now. Ask, using my name, and you will receive, and your cup of joy will overflow.

25 “I have spoken of these matters very guardedly, but the time will come when this will not be necessary and I will tell you plainly all about the Father. 26 Then you will present your petitions over my signature! And I won’t need to ask the Father to grant you these requests, 27 for the Father himself loves you dearly because you love me and believe that I came from the Father. 28 Yes, I came from the Father into the world and will leave the world and return to the Father.”

29 “At last you are speaking plainly,” his disciples said, “and not in riddles. 30 Now we understand that you know everything and don’t need anyone to tell you anything. From this we believe that you came from God.”

31 “Do you finally believe this?” Jesus asked. 32 “But the time is coming—in fact, it is here—when you will be scattered, each one returning to his own home, leaving me alone. Yet I will not be alone, for the Father is with me. 33 I have told you all this so that you will have peace of heart and mind. Here on earth you will have many trials and sorrows; but cheer up, for I have overcome the world.”

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Overcoming the world is overcoming anything of this world that opposes the Lord. When we “love the world”, we oppose the Lord. But because we hold the Lord in higher regard than the world, our ability to overcome sin and any shortcomings we have can hold true to us. No matter where you are in your life, the Lord will help you overcome anything that you face (of yourself or of others). Our faith brings victory, because faith is the manifestation of God in our lives (a Gift of the Spirit to help us). When we choose to keep doing as the Lord instructs, that faith overcomes anything that does come our way in life because whatever is of the Lord will always be victorious!

[1 John 4:4-6a](#) (TLB) [PoG]

Dear young friends, you belong to God and have already won your fight with [overcome, [G3528](#)] those who are against Christ because there is someone in your hearts who is stronger than any evil teacher in this wicked world. 5 These men belong to this world, so, quite naturally, they are concerned about worldly affairs and the world pays attention to them. 6 But we are children of God.

[1 John 5:1-5](#) (TLB) [PoG]

If you believe that Jesus is the Christ—that he is God’s Son and your Saviour—then you are a child of God. And all who love the Father love his children too. 2 So you can find out how much you love God’s children—your brothers and sisters in the Lord—by how much you love and obey God. 3 Loving God means doing what he tells us to do, and really, that isn’t hard at all; 4 for every child of God can obey him, defeating [overcoming, [G3528](#)] in and evil pleasure [the world] by [the victory of our faith].

5 But who could possibly fight and win [overcome, [G3528](#)] this battle [the world] except by believing that Jesus is truly the Son of God?

Question: Do you really feel you can overcome what this world throws at you; and any mistakes you also make?

Response:

- B. Part of how we overcome is knowing that the Lord is always looking out for us. Remember, we can ask Him anything. He helps us directly and through His ability given to us to not give into temptation.

[1 Corinthians 10:13](#) (TLB)

But remember this—the wrong desires that come into your life aren’t anything new and different. Many others have faced exactly the same problems before you. And no temptation is irresistible. You can trust God to keep the temptation from becoming so strong that you can’t stand up against it, for he has promised this and will do what he says. He will show you how to escape temptation’s power so that you can bear up patiently against it.

[Hebrews 2:17-18](#) (TLB)

And it was necessary for Jesus to be like us, his brothers, so that he could be our merciful and faithful High Priest before God, a Priest who would be both merciful to us and faithful to God in dealing with the sins of the people. 18 For since he himself has now been through suffering and temptation, he knows what it is like when we suffer and are tempted, and he is wonderfully able to help us.

[James 1:12-14](#) (TLB)

Happy is the man who doesn’t give in and do wrong when he is tempted, for afterwards he will get as his reward the crown of life that God has promised those who love him. 13 And remember, when someone wants to do wrong it is never God who is tempting him, for God never wants to do wrong and never tempts anyone else to do it. 14 Temptation is the pull of man’s own evil thoughts and wishes.

[2 Peter 2:9a](#) (TLB)

So also, the Lord can rescue you and me from the temptations that surround us.

Question: What are the temptations you struggle with (even if it a character trait you have)?

Response:

- C. Much of our lives growing up, we become trained in relying on only ourselves and/or on unhealthy things / people. When we do this (unintentionally), we are giving more credit to that than the Lord. As such, to “humble ourselves under the Lord” is really to just let Him be the One that we give trust to over anything / anyone else.

[1 Peter 5:6-11](#) (TLB)

If you will humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, in his good time he will lift you up.

7 Let him have all your worries and cares, for he is always thinking about you and watching everything that concerns you.

8 Be careful—watch out for attacks from Satan, your great enemy. He prowls around like a hungry, roaring lion, looking for some victim to tear apart. 9 Stand firm when he attacks. Trust the Lord; and remember that other Christians all around the world are going through these sufferings too.

10 After you have suffered a little while, our God, who is full of kindness through Christ, will give you his eternal glory. He personally will come and pick you up, and set you firmly in place, and make you stronger than ever. 11 To him be all power over all things, forever and ever. Amen.

Question: Do you find you try and fight your battles without letting the Lord in to help you?

Response:

- D. As we have tackled in other Lessons here, the Lord cannot violate our free will to do harm to ourselves or others; nor violate someone else’s free will to trouble us. “God’s Grace is sufficient” in that it becomes the Lord’s ability and glory, not our own. Again, being humble to giving Lord the authority and ability to persevere through.

Reminder: Paul’s “thorn” was not sickness, nor was it sent by God—something we addressed in Lesson 008.

[2 Corinthians 12:9-10](#) (TLB)

Each time he said, “No. But I am with you; that is all you need. My power shows up best in weak people.” Now I am glad to boast about how weak I am; I am glad to be a living demonstration of Christ’s power, instead of showing off my own power and abilities. 10 Since I know it is all for Christ’s good, I am quite happy about “the thorn,” and about insults and hardships, persecutions and difficulties; for when I am weak, then I am strong—the less I have, the more I depend on him.

Question: What does Grace mean to you when facing difficulty?

Response:

- E. No matter what we do or don't do in this world, we will never escape persecution to some extent. But we also have to hold onto the promise that He does provide when we give up so much of our life for Him. Sometimes, the hardest thing we give up is family who in-turn are the ones who persecute us for following the Lord.

[Mark 10:28-30](#) (TLB) [PoG]

Then Peter began to mention all that he and the other disciples had left behind. "We've given up everything to follow you," he said.

29 And Jesus replied, "Let me assure you that no one has ever given up anything—home, brothers, sisters, mother, father, children, or property—for love of me and to tell others the Good News, 30 who won't be given back, a hundred times over [in this life now], homes, brothers, sisters, mothers, children, and land—with persecutions!

"All these will be his here on earth, and in the world to come he shall have eternal life.

Question: Are you willing to give up what you value most, for the greater (eternal) value of Christ Jesus?

Response:

- F. The Lord adamantly provides victories in our life here on earth. This desire for the Lord to provide the best life on earth we can is continuous. Yet, no matter how long our struggles last, they will ALWAYS be temporary compared to the Eternal Life we will get along with our new bodies. So never give up hope, even when you cannot see an end to your hardships and sorrows! And even when our struggles last until our death, we also know that death cannot hold us down. Death was defeated when Christ Jesus was resurrected—the same resurrection we too will gain. Yes, we feel the stings of death in our lives from the sin that we and others do. Yet, death isn't our saviour from sin and pain; Christ Jesus is.

[1 Corinthians 15:51-58](#) (TLB)

But I am telling you this strange and wonderful secret: we shall not all die, but we shall all be given new bodies! 52 It will all happen in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, when the last trumpet is blown. For there will be a trumpet blast from the sky, and all the Christians who have died will suddenly become alive, with new bodies that will never, never die; and then we who are still alive shall suddenly have new bodies too. 53 For our earthly bodies, the ones we have now that can die, must be transformed into heavenly bodies that cannot perish but will live forever.

54 When this happens, then at last this Scripture will come true—"Death is swallowed up in victory." 55-56 O death, where then your victory? Where then your sting? For sin—the sting that causes death—will all be gone; and the law, which reveals our sins, will no longer be our judge. 57 How we thank God for all of this! It is he who makes us victorious through Jesus Christ our Lord!

58 So, my dear brothers, since future victory is sure, be strong and steady, always abounding in the Lord's work, for you know that nothing you do for the Lord is ever wasted as it would be if there were no resurrection.

Question: Have you ever wanted to quit this life to escape the pain, sorrow, and suffering?

Response:

- G. It is His Salvation (all Christ accomplished) that causes us to triumph in this life. He not only took care of sin, but paraded His conquest of the "principalities and powers" behind the cause of our suffering.

[2 Corinthians 2:14](#) (TLB)

But thanks be to God! For through what Christ has done, he has triumphed over us so that now wherever we go he uses us to tell others about the Lord and to spread the Gospel like a sweet perfume.

[Colossians 2:9-15](#) (TLB)

For in Christ there is all of God in a human body; 10 so you have everything when you have Christ, and you are filled with God through your union with Christ. He is the highest Ruler, with authority over every other power.

11 When you came to Christ, he set you free from your evil desires, not by a bodily operation of circumcision but by a spiritual operation, the baptism of your souls. 12 For in baptism you see how your old, evil nature died with him and was buried with him; and then you came up out of death with him into a new life because you trusted the Word of the mighty God who raised Christ from the dead.

13 You were dead in sins, and your sinful desires were not yet cut away. Then he gave you a share in the very life of Christ, for he forgave all your sins, 14 and blotted out the charges proved against you, the list of his commandments which you had not obeyed. He took this list of sins and destroyed it by nailing it to Christ's cross. 15 In this way God took away Satan's power to accuse you of sin, and God openly displayed to the whole world Christ's triumph at the cross where your sins were all taken away.

Question: How can you feel triumphant in the middle of hardship?

Response:

- H. Jesus faced daily affliction. Even as God, He was not able to convince people that He was the Messiah. If even God cannot convince people to stop persecution against Him, we have to understand that we too cannot control how other people will react and respond to us (in our good and in our bad). For Jesus, He always found a way to seek His Father in Heaven—even being up all night isolated in prayer. We always have an open connection to the same Father in Heaven for our support. Remember, prayer is just a conversation—and the Father does not distance Himself to us. Have a conversation with Him expecting an answer—too often I find myself going to Him to vent my frustration without waiting (or wanting) an answer from Him. He wants to provide, and has, all the answers we need (even when we may not want to hear that it is different from what we think).

[Mark 1:35](#) (TLB)

The next morning he was up long before daybreak and went out alone into the wilderness to pray.

[Luke 6:12](#) (TLB)

One day soon afterwards he went out into the mountains to pray, and prayed all night.

Question: How does your personal fellowship (conversations) with the Lord help you in your everyday life?

Response:

- I. Jesus also gave guidance to how we must respond to evils that befall us (people that cause hurts and pains in our life). This includes not judging others—because we truly don't know all the reasons why they do what they do—they might not even know they are doing wrong (just as you and I do not always know we are doing wrong).

[Luke 6:27-38](#) (TLB)

“Listen, all of you. Love your enemies. Do good to those who hate you. 28 Pray for the happiness of those who curse you; implore God's blessing on those who hurt you.

29 “If someone slaps you on one cheek, let him slap the other too! If someone demands your coat, give him your shirt besides. 30 Give what you have to anyone who asks you for it; and when things are taken away from you, don't worry about getting them back. 31 Treat others as you want them to treat you.

32 “Do you think you deserve credit for merely loving those who love you? Even the godless do that! 33 And if you do good only to those who do you good—is that so wonderful? Even sinners do that much! 34 And if you lend money only to those who can repay you, what good is that? Even the most wicked will lend to their own kind for full return!

35 “Love your enemies! Do good to them! Lend to them! And don't be concerned about the fact that they won't repay. Then your reward from heaven will be very great, and you will truly be acting as sons of God: for he is kind to the unthankful and to those who are very wicked.

36 “Try to show as much compassion as your Father does.

37 “Never criticize or condemn—or it will all come back on you. Go easy on others; then they will do the same for you. 38 For if you give, you will get! Your gift will return to you in full and overflowing measure, pressed down, shaken together to make room for more, and running over. Whatever measure you use to give—large or small—will be use.

Question: How hard is it on you (i.e., your old self / flesh) to love your enemies and not judge their actions?

Response:

J. It is easy for us to get “swallowed up” by the hurts this world can bring us (the hurts we give out too). We have to strive to continue to make choices that lead to Life, not Death—even when it feels impossible to do. Which, when it does feel impossible, that is where we have to call the Lord in to help us. The way Jesus lived to overcome all He suffered was through Love and Forgiveness. The same is what we are instructed to do. And He would not tell us to do the same if He didn’t also give us the ability to do so as well.

[Colossians 3:12-17](#) (TLB)

Since you have been chosen by God who has given you this new kind of life, and because of his deep love and concern for you, you should practice tender-hearted mercy and kindness to others. Don’t worry about making a good impression on them, but be ready to suffer quietly and patiently. 13 Be gentle and ready to forgive; never hold grudges. Remember, the Lord forgave you, so you must forgive others.

14 Most of all, let love guide your life, for then the whole church will stay together in perfect harmony. 15 Let the peace of heart that comes from Christ be always present in your hearts and lives, for this is your responsibility and privilege as members of his body. And always be thankful.

16 Remember what Christ taught, and let his words enrich your lives and make you wise; teach them to each other and sing them out in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing to the Lord with thankful hearts. 17 And whatever you do or say, let it be as a representative of the Lord Jesus, and come with him into the presence of God the Father to give him your thanks.

[1 Peter 4:8](#) (TLB) [PoG]

Most important of all, continue to show deep love for each other, for love makes up for many of [our] faults.

Question: How are we able to always love and forgive—first ourselves, then others?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Philippians 4:4-9](#) (TLB) [PoG]

Always be full of joy in the Lord; I say it again, rejoice! 5 Let everyone see that you are unselfish and considerate in all you do. Remember that the Lord is coming soon. 6 Don’t worry about anything; instead, pray about everything; tell God your needs, and don’t forget to thank him for his answers. 7 If you do this, you will experience God’s peace, which is far more wonderful than the human mind can understand. His peace will keep your thoughts and your hearts quiet and at rest as you trust in Christ Jesus.

8 And now, brothers, as I close this letter, let me say this one more thing: Fix your thoughts [number them and meditate on them: [G3049](#)] on what is true and good and right. Think about things that are pure and lovely, and dwell on the fine, good things in others. Think about all you can praise God for and be glad about. 9 Keep putting into practice all you learned from me and saw me doing, and the God of peace will be with you.

Thoughts: The problems we face with loss, suffering, and abandonment (all forms of persecution) is that it can drain the hope from our lives. It becomes easy for our flesh to focus on what we DON’T have over what we DO have (and what the Lord will give us still). This is why we are instructed to focus on the good things in life—our choice to actually do so (and make a habit of).

AS A CHILD

INTENTION:

We have a Father in Heaven who is also Jesus's Father. Jesus was His child. We are His child. Sometimes we forget to "be a child" to the Lord and understanding what that means or looks like.

But we have Jesus to look at to see what a Father-Child relationship is with God our Father.

And we can "come to Him as a child" when we believe that He can be trusted—not as like our earthly parents, but as the utmost perfect Loving Father who only does bring Good into our lives.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at being “As a Child” with the Father!

Jesus spoke that we must become as a child to Him. But what does this look like and mean?

When a child is born on this earth, they are a blank slate to which the nurturing they receive gets imprinted on them as to who they will become—that nurturing also influenced by the nature of the child’s makeup (DNA).

The Lord designed us to be this blank slate so that we can adapt and change to our environment and not only survive it, but thrive in it. Without choice and without question (as a child cannot), they take on all the traits of their parents and surroundings.

However, the unfortunate reality of this world is that our parents (and we as parents) are not perfect—all parents, themselves (ourselves), raised by imperfect parents (all the way back to Adam and Eve). It is impossible for us as adults to have unconditional love. A child has that from birth, but gets affected as imperfections shape their life.

Thus, the influence we have on our children (and our parents on us) is a mixed reality of love, fear, and error. And those mistakes may not even be known, revealed, exposed, or conscious. We do things that affect one-another (sowing and reaping) without our realisations of it.

Some of that because our good-intentions are marred by our own hurts and pains; as well as our intentions being misinterpreted by those around us. We all have filters that can alter the meanings behind what is said or done.

All these imperfections damage our heart, soul, mind, and body. Trust is also broken or diminished. And from that damage, we develop coping mechanisms as a child to survive the hurts, pains, and traumas of life.

Yet, the Lord is perfect. No faults whatsoever. And somehow, with all our heartbreak and distrust of people (parents, ourselves, or others) we have to come to Him with “all our heart, soul, and mind” ([Matthew 22:37](#)). Trust.

This goes against everything that we know. All the things we developed to survive as a child, when held onto, become the stronghold we become trapped (enslaved) to. These unhealthy coping mechanisms become our natural response to life—in our own truth, they are our “gut feeling” and what we do “from the heart”—without knowing that what feels natural to us, is not the natural of the Lord.

Yet, changing that about us goes against everything we used to protect ourselves in our childhood (and into adulthood) from the hurts, pains, and traumas we experienced. Our “gut” and “heart” responses cannot always be trusted if they have been altered by our past—“altered” as being from the perspective of not having experienced hurts, pains, and traumas (an impossible reality on this earth).

So, wait... if we don’t know it’s wrong, how are we to know that we need to change it?

For me personally, I had to fully experience and see (have revealed to me) all that was done to me that shaped my adulthood actions, reactions, and habits. I knew childhood had developed trauma in me (having discussed before); but I was blinded to much of what I used as coping mechanisms—because, to me, they were natural. And thus, if “natural” was, unintentionally, right. Oh, how I was wrong!

Once they became fully exposed (and continue to be exposed), I could address each of those aspects and “re-parent” myself in the Lord. I have to have my own slate wiped clean to again become a child that could be nurtured by my perfect Father in Heaven. A Born-Again reality that has to discard all that I knew before, to be transformed into a “new creation” created in Christ (in HIS original Image of me).

In doing that, I could live, no longer from that flesh-mind, but in the spirit-mind of Christ. I AM a new creation—I just have to continually be “transformed into His Image” ([2 Corinthians 3:18](#)). And when that happens in each minute area of my life, I get to live in the simplest way—as He would tell me... “just be Me” ([1 John 4:17b](#)).

This is what it is like to come to Him as a child—where we learn to (sometimes painstakingly) discard what does not belong anymore in us, and to learn from the Father (what Jesus demonstrated) in each aspect of life.

I am His child. Jesus was His child. As such, I can look at their relationship to determine what it is purely like to come to God the Father as a child. That relationship reveals both who WE are as a child, and who HE is as a Father.

So, when you read and study about Jesus, look at Him as to what it means to truly be a child (a child of God the Father)—defining for us what it means to come to the Father “as a child”.

We don’t fully know Jesus’s childhood, but we can accept that neither of his parents (Joseph and Mary) were themselves perfect. Did Mary do everything right? What happened to Joseph? Did Jesus face hurts and abandonment from them that we also experience?

Jesus was born of the flesh as well (although sinless flesh), so He also was nurtured the traits of His parents—which I feel is part of what He had to let go of when He was baptised (Lesson 026). Jesus had to fully embrace God as His Father. And part of this process for Jesus was reading (from a young age) about His Father in Heaven from the same Old Testament scripture we have. Jesus found that Loving Father (not punishing God) that we can also accept.

God the Father took care of Jesus His Son so that Jesus the Son could take care of the world. It reveals a Heavenly (not earthly) Father that cares for the person (individual) of the child, with a heart to transform the collective.

And regardless of what Jesus had to go through, He never gave up on the Promise of the Father and His Work for Jesus Himself and us all. And the Father never gave up on Him as His Son; nor will give up on us as His child!

II. **READING:** [Luke 18:1-34](#) (ICB)

Then Jesus used this story to teach his followers that they should always pray and never lose hope. 2 “Once there was a judge in a town. He did not care about God. He also did not care what people thought about him. 3 In that same town there was a widow who kept coming to this judge. She said, ‘There is a man who is not being fair to me. Give me my rights!’ 4 But the judge did not want to help the widow. After a long time, he thought to himself, ‘I don’t care about God. And I don’t care about what people think. 5 But this widow is bothering me. I will see that she gets her rights, or she will bother me until I am worn out!’”

6 The Lord said, “Listen to what the bad judge said. 7 God’s people cry to him night and day. God will always give them what is right, and he will not be slow to answer them. 8 I tell you, God will help his people quickly! But when the Son of Man comes again, will he find those on earth who believe in him?”

9 There were some people who thought that they were very good and looked down on everyone else. Jesus used this story to teach them: 10 “One day there was a Pharisee and a tax collector. Both went to the Temple to pray. 11 The Pharisee stood alone, away from the tax collector. When the Pharisee prayed, he said, ‘God, I thank you that I am not as bad as other people. I am not like men who steal, cheat, or take part in adultery. I thank you that I am better than this tax collector. 12 I give up eating twice a week, and I give one-tenth of everything I earn!’

13 “The tax collector stood at a distance. When he prayed, he would not even look up to heaven. He beat on his chest because he was so sad. He said, ‘God, have mercy on me. I am a sinner!’ 14 I tell you, when this man went home, he was right with God. But the Pharisee was not right with God. Everyone who makes himself great will be made humble. But everyone who makes himself humble will be made great.”

15 Some people brought their small children to Jesus so that he could touch them. When the followers saw this, they told the people not to do this. 16 But Jesus called the little children to him and said to his followers, “Let the little children come to me. Don’t stop them, because the kingdom of God belongs to people who are like these little children. 17 I tell you the truth. You must accept God’s kingdom like a little child, or you will never enter it!”

18 A Jewish leader asked Jesus, “Good Teacher, what must I do to get the life that continues forever?”

19 Jesus said to him, “Why do you call me good? Only God is good. 20 You know the commands: ‘You must not be guilty of adultery. You must not murder anyone. You must not steal. You must not tell lies about your neighbour in court. Honour your father and mother.’”

21 But the leader said, “I have obeyed all these commands since I was a boy!”

22 When Jesus heard this, he said to him, “But there is still one more thing you need to do. Sell everything you have and give the money to the poor. You will have a reward in heaven. Then come and follow me!” 23 But when the man heard this, he became very sad because he was very rich.

24 When Jesus saw that the man was sad, he said, “It will be very hard for rich people to enter the kingdom of God! 25 It would be easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God!”

26 When the people heard this, they asked, “Then who can be saved?”

27 Jesus answered, “The things impossible for men are possible for God.”

28 Peter said, “Look, we left everything we had and followed you!”

29 Jesus said, “I tell you the truth. Everyone who has left his house, wife, brothers, parents, or children for God’s kingdom 30 will get much more than he left. He will receive many times more in this life. And after he dies, he will live with God forever.”

31 Then Jesus talked to the 12 apostles alone. He said to them, “Listen! We are going to Jerusalem. Everything that God told the prophets to write about the Son of Man will happen! 32 He will be turned over to the non-Jewish people. They will laugh at him, insult him, and spit on him. 33 They will beat him with whips and then kill him. But on the third day after his death, he will rise to life again.” 34 The apostles tried to understand this, but they could not; the meaning was hidden from them.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Jesus was a child Himself. We see that He naturally had a heart to God His Father. As such, Him staying behind in the temple was natural for Him to do in innocence and without concern. We see that in children now—that they demonstrate the same innocence when we as parents / guardians worry and become anxious in trying to care for them and keep them safe in all aspects of life. But above and beyond that, in the verses following, we can see that from a young age, Jesus committed to learning from His Heavenly Father above His earthly dad.

[Luke 2:39-52](#) (ICB)

Joseph and Mary finished doing everything that the law of the Lord commanded. Then they went home to Nazareth, their own town in Galilee. 40 The little child began to grow up. He became stronger and wiser, and God’s blessings were with him.

41 Every year Jesus’ parents went to Jerusalem for the Passover Feast. 42 When Jesus was 12 years old, they went to the feast as they always did. 43 When the feast days were over, they went home. The boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem, but his parents did not know it. 44 Joseph and Mary travelled for a whole day. They thought that Jesus was with them in the group. Then they began to look for him among their family and friends, 45 but they did not find him. So they went back to Jerusalem to look for him there. 46 After three days they found him. Jesus was sitting in the Temple with the religious teachers, listening to them and asking them questions. 47 All who heard him were amazed at his understanding and wise answers. 48 When Jesus’ parents saw him, they were amazed. His mother said to him, “Son, why did you do this to us? Your father and I were very worried about you. We have been looking for you.”

49 Jesus asked, “Why did you have to look for me? You should have known that I must be where my Father’s work is!” 50 But they did not understand the meaning of what he said.

51 Jesus went with them to Nazareth and obeyed them. His mother was still thinking about all that had happened.
52 Jesus continued to learn more and more and to grow physically. People liked him, and he pleased God.

Question: Jesus placed God the Father a greater influence in His life than His parents—how difficult is it for you to let go of what/how you were trained by your own parent(s)?

Response:

- B. We see that growing up, God was with Jesus. But a time came when Jesus committed to His ministry, getting baptized by John the Baptist. At this moment, Jesus gave up any aspect of His flesh and committed Himself to the Spirit and the Will of God. From Heaven the voice of God proclaimed Jesus as His Son! No longer was Jesus’s relationship with God as just “God”, but now a relationship where God is His Father. From us being Born-Again, we no longer see just “God” (as a distant unrelatable figure), but as a Father who is “pleased with us as His child”.

[Luke 3: 21-22](#) (ICB)

When all the people were being baptized by John, Jesus also was baptized. While Jesus was praying, heaven opened and 22 the Holy Spirit came down on him. The Spirit was in the form of a dove. Then a voice came from heaven and said, “You are my Son and I love you. I am very pleased with you.”

Question: In your own upbringing, did you feel that your parent(s) were not pleased with you?

Response:

- C. Jesus led His entire life and ministry trusting fully on the Lord—He not only preached this trust, but demonstrated it. We have to remember that when the Lord gives us instruction, He holds Himself to the same instruction. He will not hold us to a higher standard than He Himself holds to. So, when the Lord is told to us that He is our Loving and caring provider, He really is! He provided all these following things to Jesus Himself as His child; and as we are also His child, we share the same experience and trust that He does provide. A child inherently trusts that their provider will have food, shelter, and clothing—the same is what we can do as a child to inherently trust He will provide for us (even if, as a child on this earth, we were neglected in this kind of care).

[Matthew 6:25-34](#) (ICB)

“So I tell you, don’t worry about the food you need to live. And don’t worry about the clothes you need for your body. Life is more important than food. And the body is more important than clothes. 26 Look at the birds in the air. They don’t plant or harvest or store food in barns. But your heavenly Father feeds the birds. And you know that you are worth much more than the birds. 27 You cannot add any time to your life by worrying about it.

28 “And why do you worry about clothes? Look at the flowers in the field. See how they grow. They don’t work or make clothes for themselves. 29 But I tell you that even Solomon with his riches was not dressed as beautifully as one of these flowers. 30 God clothes the grass in the field like that. The grass is living today, but tomorrow it is thrown into the fire to be burned. So you can be even more sure that God will clothe you. Don’t

have so little faith! 31 Don't worry and say, 'What will we eat?' or 'What will we drink?' or 'What will we wear?' 32 All the people who don't know God keep trying to get these things. And your Father in heaven knows that you need them. 33 The thing you should want most is God's kingdom and doing what God wants. Then all these other things you need will be given to you. 34 So don't worry about tomorrow. Each day has enough trouble of its own. Tomorrow will have its own worries."

Question: Does past childhood neglect hinder your ability to trust God the Father for your essential needs?

Response:

- D. Jesus's trust in the Father was not easy—it involved great difficulty and an endless commitment. It wasn't that the Father brought about the difficulty, but that the difficulty came as part of Christ's commitment to what the Father called Him for. Jesus had to maintain that commitment; and in that, learned what obedience fully was through Him choosing to be obedient to the Father through all the persecution and anguish He faced.

[Hebrews 5:7-10](#) (ICB)

While Jesus lived on earth, he prayed to God and asked God for help. He prayed with loud cries and tears to the One who could save him from death. And his prayer was heard because he left it all up to God. 8 Even though Jesus was the Son of God, he learned to obey by what he suffered. 9 And he became our perfect high priest. He gives eternal salvation to all who obey him. 10 And God made Jesus high priest, a priest like Melchizedek.

Question: How does your flesh react to obedience to the Father (than to itself)?

Response:

- E. In this world, we can often "idolise" people around us (whether our parents, or celebrity, or anyone else). When we become overly focused on those people, we tend to "worship" them—not intentionally, but out of our own desire to hold them up to a higher standard or become more like them. This is what our flesh wants to do. But we are instructed to instead worship the Lord. But since the Lord is of the Spirit, we too have to worship Him in the Spirit. But also in the Truth of His Loving character and nature. A child inherently "worships" their parent because they are the connected source of the world around us—we too must become a child to God our Father to worship Him (to hold Him up to a Higher Standard and to become more like Him).

[John 4:23-24](#) (ICB)

The time is coming when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth. That time is now here. And these are the kinds of worshipers the Father wants. 24 God is spirit. Those who worship God must worship in spirit and truth."

Question: What is Spirit and Truth to you in relating to God the Father?

Response:

F. Part of being able to call God our Father is recognising what we gain as being His children. That we became His child means we have unrestricted access to Him and all He knows. We don't need to be told what to do as slaves, we can see all He does and do it freely as well—just as Jesus did (demonstrating that reality to us). And it is through our connected Spirits that we truly can know all that the Father knows.

[1 Corinthians 2:10-13](#) (ICB)

But God has shown us these things through the Spirit.

The Spirit knows all things, even the deep secrets of God. 11 It is like this: No one knows the thoughts that another person has. Only a person's spirit that lives in him knows his thoughts. It is the same with God. No one knows the thoughts of God. Only the Spirit of God knows God's thoughts. 12 We did not receive the spirit of the world, but we received the Spirit that is from God. We received this Spirit so that we can know all that God has given us. 13 When we speak, we do not use words taught to us by the wisdom that men have. We use words taught to us by the Spirit. We use spiritual words to explain spiritual things.

[Galatians 3:26-29; 4:1-7](#) (ICB)

You were all baptized into Christ, and so you were all clothed with Christ. This shows that you are all children of God through faith in Christ Jesus. 28 Now, in Christ, there is no difference between Jew and Greek. There is no difference between slaves and free men. There is no difference between male and female. You are all the same in Christ Jesus. 29 You belong to Christ. So you are Abraham's descendants. You get all of God's blessings because of the promise that God made to Abraham.

I want to tell you this: While the one who will inherit his father's property is still a child, he is no different from a slave. It does not matter that the child owns everything. 2 While he is a child, he must obey those who are chosen to care for him. But when the child reaches the age set by his father, he is free. 3 It is the same for us. We were once like children. We were slaves to the useless rules of this world. 4 But when the right time came, God sent his Son. His Son was born of a woman and lived under the law. 5 God did this so that he could buy freedom for those who were under the law. His purpose was to make us his children.

6 And you are God's children. That is why God sent the Spirit of his Son into your hearts. The Spirit cries out, "Father, dear Father." 7 So now you are not a slave; you are God's child, and God will give you what he promised, because you are his child.

Question: Do you feel you have free access to God the Father?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [John 1:1-13](#) (ICB) [PoG]

Before the world began, there was the Word. The Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 He was with God in the beginning. 3 All things were made through him. Nothing was made without him. 4 In him there was life. That life was light for the people of the world. 5 The Light shines in the darkness. And the darkness has not overpowered the Light.

6 There was a man named John who was sent by God. 7 He came to tell people about the Light. Through him all people could hear about the Light and believe. 8 John was not the Light, but he came to tell people about the Light. 9 The true Light was coming into the world. The true Light gives light to all.

10 The Word was in the world. The world was made through him, but the world did not know him. 11 He came to the world that was his own. But his own people did not accept him. 12 But some people did accept him. They believed in him. To them he gave the right to become children [sons] of God. 13 They did not become his children [sons] in the human way. They were not born because of the desire or wish of some man. They were born of God.

Thoughts: Though we are called Sons, we can only become His child is by believing in Christ Jesus. Christ Jesus was His Son, and in believing in Him (being Born-Again), we inherit everything that is Christ Jesus, including His Sonship. You can even think of Jesus as your “older brother” in which He already showed what it is like to live as a child of God the Father.

Note that the reason the term Son is given (and not Son and Daughter) is to directly negate the human error of thinking that men are superior to women—something the Old Testament typically shows—a result of Adams sin, not God’s Design, nor God’s instruction. It is humanity itself that chose to treat a “son” as being the heir and focus of a household, yet the Lord wanted to make it clear that everyone was to be called a Son; eliminating the oft human-created inequality so prevalent still in society (gender, race, nationality, status, etc). Christ Jesus abolished all this—for there is no longer male / female, slave / free, Jew / Gentile because of Christ Jesus ([Galatians 3:28](#)).

B. [Luke 22:39-46](#) (ICB)

Jesus left the city and went to the Mount of Olives. His followers went with him. (Jesus went there often.) He said to his followers, “Pray for strength against temptation.”

41 Then Jesus went about a stone’s throw away from them. He knelt down and prayed, 42 “Father, if it is what you want, then let me not have this cup of suffering. But do what you want, not what I want.” 43 Then an angel from heaven appeared to him to help him. 44 Jesus was full of pain; he prayed even more. Sweat dripped from his face as if he were bleeding. 45 When he finished praying, he went to his followers. They were asleep. (Their sadness had made them very tired.) 46 Jesus said to them, “Why are you sleeping? Get up and pray for strength against temptation.”

Thoughts: As much as Jesus suffered during His ministry and here leading up to the Cross, He never turned-away,, blamed, or accused God the Father. He maintained relationship. God is perfect—not because He makes “troubles” never happen (which He cannot)—but because there is a greater good out there for each and every person in the midst of all the troubles we do go through. It is up to us to accept this in our own lives too. We may not have the vision, prophesy, or calling Jesus had, but that does not mean we don’t have a purpose here in this earth. We will never see the positive impact we can have on others, but when we commit to the Lord’s Will and overcome the hardships we face, that positive impact will transpire. And until we get to Heaven, we will not know how we changed the lives in this world for good. But that too is giving God the Glory.

FREEDOM

INTENTION:

We may not know we have been captive in a way of thinking, believing, feeling, or behaving. But we have been given the ability (because of Christ) to break free from those mental, emotional, and religious strongholds that limit who we are designed to be in this world. Let's break off the shackles that bind us; so that we truly can live the life that says, "as Christ Jesus is, so are we in this world".

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Freedom.

God's LOVE for us is that we are free from all the little things that keep us down and trapped, which robs us of the abundant LIFE strives for us to live ([John 10:10](#)).

What these Bible Lessons have helped us with is breaking free of so much that binds us in life—religion, sin, people's choices, our past, our fears, and so much more. And here, we will look at these freedoms which have been discussed or hit upon in all these Bible Lessons.

Do you feel free in any or all these areas?

We will read through John 8 following—note the freedoms within:

- Firstly, we see a woman set free from sin and judgment. Jesus (God) was not judging her for what she did. But moreso, He also set her free from the sin she was doing. Jesus told her to, "sin no more", not as a command, but a choice—for her, she may not have even realised she had the power/ability to actually say no. How often are we trapped in doing things as our nature because we fit into what others say of us. She (you and I) are set free from what others define us by.
- Secondly, Jesus proclaims that it is through Him that we have freedom. For it is only Him that broke (freed us) from the captivity that Adam brought into this world.
- Thirdly, Jesus also proclaimed that He conquered (freed us from) death.

II. READING: [John 8:1-59](#) (MEV)

But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. 2 Early in the morning He returned to the temple. All the people came to Him, and He sat down and taught them. 3 The scribes and Pharisees brought a woman caught in adultery. When they had put her in the middle, 4 they said to Him, "Teacher, this woman was caught in the very act of adultery. 5 Now Moses in the law commanded us to stone such, but what do You say?" 6 They said this, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him.

But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as though He did not hear them. 7 So when they continued asking Him, He stood up and said to them, "Let him who is without sin among you be the first to throw a stone at her." 8 Again He stooped down and wrote on the ground.

9 Being convicted by their conscience, those who heard it went out one by one, beginning with the eldest even to the last. Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. 10 When Jesus had stood up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, "Woman, where are your accusers? Did no one condemn you?"

11 She said, "No one, Lord."

Jesus said to her, "Neither do I condemn you. Go and sin no more."

12 Again, Jesus spoke to them, saying, "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows Me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life."

13 The Pharisees therefore said to Him, "You bear witness of Yourself. Your testimony is not true."

14 Jesus answered them, "Though I bear witness of Myself, My testimony is true. For I know where I came from and where I am going. But you do not know where I came from or where I am going. 15 You judge according to the flesh. I judge no one. 16 Yet if I do judge, My judgment is true. For I am not alone, but I am with the Father who sent Me. 17 Even in your law it is written that the testimony of two men is true. 18 I am One who bears witness of Myself, and the Father that sent Me bears witness of Me."

19 Then they said to Him, “Where is Your Father?”

Jesus answered, “You know neither Me nor My Father. If you knew Me, you would know My Father also.” 20 Jesus spoke these words in the treasury, as He taught in the temple. No one arrested Him, for His hour had not yet come.

21 Again, Jesus said to them, “I am going away, and you will seek Me, and you will die in your sins. Where I am going, you cannot come.”

22 So the Jews said, “Will He kill Himself? For He said, ‘Where I am going, you cannot come.’”

23 He said to them, “You are from below; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world. 24 Therefore I said to you that you will die in your sins. For unless you believe that I am He, you will die in your sins.”

25 They said to Him, “Who are You?”

Jesus said to them, “Just who I have been telling you from the beginning. 26 I have many things to say and to judge concerning you, but He who sent Me is true. So I tell the world what I heard from Him.”

27 They did not understand that He spoke to them of the Father. 28 So Jesus said to them, “When you lift up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am He, and I do nothing of Myself. But I speak these things as My Father taught Me. 29 He who sent Me is with Me. The Father has not left Me alone, for I always do those things that please Him.”

30 As He spoke these words, many believed in Him.

31 Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, “If you remain in My word, then you are truly My disciples. 32 You shall know the truth, and the truth shall set you free.”

33 They answered Him, “We are Abraham’s seed and have never been in bondage to anyone. Why do You say, ‘You shall be set free’?”

34 Jesus answered them, “Truly, truly I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin. 35 Now a slave does not remain in the house forever, but a son remains forever. 36 Therefore if the Son sets you free, you shall be free indeed. 37 I know that you are Abraham’s seed. But you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you. 38 I am telling what I have seen with My Father, and you are doing what you have seen with your father.”

39 They answered Him, “Abraham is our father.”

Jesus said to them, “If you were Abraham’s children, you would do the works of Abraham. 40 But now you seek to kill Me, a Man who has told you the truth which I heard from God. Abraham did not do this. 41 You are doing the works of your father.”

Then they said to Him, “We were not born of sexual immorality. We have one Father: God.”

42 Jesus said to them, “If God were your Father, you would love Me, for I came from God and proceeded into the world. I did not come of My own authority, but He sent Me. 43 Why do you not understand My speaking? Because you cannot bear to hear My word. 44 You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies. 45 Yet because I tell the truth, you do not believe Me. 46 Which of you convicts Me of sin? If I speak the truth, why do you not believe Me? 47 He who is of God hears God’s words. Therefore, you do not hear them, because you are not of God.”

48 The Jews answered Him, “Do we not rightly say that You are a Samaritan and have a demon?”

49 Jesus answered, “I do not have a demon. But I honour My Father, and you dishonour Me. 50 I do not seek glory for Myself. There is One who seeks it and judges. 51 Truly, truly I say to you, if anyone keeps My word, he shall never see death.”

52 Then the Jews said to Him, “Now we know that You have a demon. Abraham and the prophets died, and You say, ‘If a man keeps My word, he shall never taste death.’ 53 “Are You greater than our father Abraham, who died? The prophets are dead! Who do You make Yourself out to be?”

54 Jesus answered, “If I glorify Myself, My glory is nothing. It is My Father who glorifies Me, of whom you say that He is your God. 55 Yet you have not known Him, but I know Him. If I say, ‘I do not know Him,’ I shall be a liar like you. But I know Him and keep His word. 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day. He saw it and was glad.”

57 Then the Jews said to Him, “You are not yet fifty years old. Have You seen Abraham?”

58 Jesus said to them, “Truly, truly I say to you, before Abraham was born, I AM.” 59 Then they took up stones to throw at Him. But Jesus hid Himself and went out of the temple. Going through their midst, He passed by.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. Freedom from religion.

[Romans 1:16-17](#) (MEV)

For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ. For it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. 17 For in it the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith. As it is written, “The just shall live by faith.”.

Question: What is religion to you?

Response:

B. Freedom from sin (not freedom to sin).

[Romans 6:1-7](#) (MEV)

What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin that grace may increase? 2 God forbid! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it? 3 Do you not know that we who were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? 4 Therefore we were buried with Him by baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

5 For if we have been united with Him in the likeness of His death, so shall we also be united with Him in the likeness of His resurrection, 6 knowing this, that our old man has been crucified with Him, so that the body of sin might be destroyed, and we should no longer be slaves to sin. 7 For the one who has died is freed from sin.

Question: What are sins you struggle with that you know you deserve freedom from?

Response:

FREEDOM

Bible Study: Lesson 050



C. Freedom from guilt and shame.

[Acts 24:14-16](#) (MEV) [PoG]

However, I affirm that in accordance with the Way, which they call a sect, I worship the God of my fathers and believe everything written in the Law and in the Prophets. 15 I have hope in God that there will be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and the unjust, which they also expect. 16 In this do I always strive to have a clear conscience [not troubled by a consciousness of sin] toward God and toward men.

Question: Does feelings of guilt and shame haunt you?

Response:

D. Freedom from your past.

[Philippians 3:12-14](#) (MEV)

Not that I have already attained or have already been perfected, but I follow after it so that I may lay hold of that for which I was seized by Christ Jesus. 13 Brothers, I do not count myself to have attained, but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead, 14 I press toward the goal to the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

Question: Do you relive your past over and over again in your head (trying to change it through “what-ifs”)?

Response:

E. Freedom from sickness and disease.

[1 Peter 2:24](#) (MEV)

He Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness. “By His wounds you were healed.”

Question: How can you learn more about God truly wanting you to not be sick, disabled, or mentally ill?

Response:

F. Freedom from the Law.

[Romans 7:4-6](#) (MEV)

So, my brothers, you also have died to the law through the body of Christ, so that you may be married to another, to Him who has been raised from the dead, so that we may bear fruit for God. 5 When we were in the flesh, the passions of sin, through the law, worked in our members to bear fruit leading to death. 6 But now we are delivered from the law, having died to things in which we were bound, so that we may serve in newness of the Spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter of the law.

Question: Have you (unknowingly even) tried to obey the Law?

Response:

G. Freedom from perfection (of yourself and of others).

[1 Peter 4:8-9](#) (MEV)

Above all things, have unfailing love for one another, because love covers a multitude of sins. 9 Show hospitality to one another without complaining.

Question: What do you do when you aren't perfect enough—or that you feel others aren't perfect enough?

Response:

H. Freedom of choice (to believe or not).

[John 3:16-18](#) (MEV)

“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life. 17 For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved. 18 He who believes in Him is not condemned. But he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.”

Question: Have you been Born-Again through believing in Christ Jesus?

Response:

I. Freedom of choice (flesh or spirit).

[Galatians 5:13-18](#) (MEV)

You, brothers, have been called to liberty. Only do not use liberty to give an opportunity to the flesh, but by love serve one another. 14 For the entire law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: “You shall love your neighbour as yourself.” 15 But if you bite and devour one another, take heed that you are not consumed by one another.

16 I say then, walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusts against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh. These are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please. 18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.

Question: Do you struggle with choosing the Spirit over the flesh?

Response:

J. Freedom to trust the Lord.

[Matthew 6:25-34](#) (MEV)

“Therefore, I say to you, take no thought about your life, what you will eat, or what you will drink, nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body than clothing? 26 Look at the birds of the air, for they do not sow, nor do they reap, nor gather into barns. Yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much better than they? 27 Who among you by taking thought can add a cubit[a] to his stature?

28 “Why take thought about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: They neither work, nor do they spin. 29 Yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not dressed like one of these. 30 Therefore, if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is here and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? 31 Therefore, take no thought, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’ 32 (For the Gentiles seek after all these things.) For your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. 33 But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be given to you. 34 Therefore, take no thought about tomorrow, for tomorrow will take thought about the things of itself. Sufficient to the day is the trouble thereof.”

Question: What are ways you are learning to trust God as a Father?

Response:

K. Freedom to live Him in and through us.

[Ephesians 3:14-21](#) (MEV)

For this reason I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15 from whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, 16 that He would give you, according to the riches of His glory, power to be strengthened by

His Spirit in the inner man, 17 and that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, 18 may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth and length and depth and height, 19 and to know the love of Christ which surpasses knowledge; that you may be filled with all the fullness of God.

20 Now to Him who is able to do exceedingly abundantly beyond all that we ask or imagine, according to the power that works in us, 21 to Him be the glory in the church and in Christ Jesus throughout all generations, forever and ever. Amen.

Question: Do you know and believe God in His entirety Lives in and through you?

Response:

L. Freedom to know and experience Him personally as a Father in relationship.

[John 15:7-17](#) (MEV)

If you remain in Me, and My words remain in you, you will ask whatever you desire, and it shall be done for you. 8 My Father is glorified by this, that you bear much fruit; so you will be My disciples.

9 “As the Father loved Me, I also loved you. Remain in My love. 10 If you keep My commandments, you will remain in My love, even as I have kept My Father’s commandments and remain in His love. 11 I have spoken these things to you, that My joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be full. 12 This is My commandment: that you love one another, as I have loved you. 13 Greater love has no man than this: that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14 You are My friends if you do whatever I command you. 15 I no longer call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master does. But I have called you friends, for everything that I have heard from My Father have I made known to you. 16 You did not choose Me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain, that the Father may give you whatever you ask Him in My name. 17 This I command you: that you love one another.

Question: Have you felt you can approach the Lord more directly (rather than through someone else)?

Response:

M. Freedom to think independently about the Bible and the Lord.

[Ephesians 1:13-20](#) (MEV)

In Him you also, after hearing the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and after believing in Him, were sealed with the promised Holy Spirit, 14 who is the guarantee of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of His glory.

15 Therefore I also, after hearing of your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love toward all the saints, 16 do not cease giving thanks for you, mentioning you in my prayers, 17 so that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him, 18 that the eyes of your understanding may be enlightened, that you may know what is the hope of His calling and what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance among the saints, 19 and what is the surpassing greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the working of His mighty power, 20 which He performed in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places.

Question: How has your perspective and belief changed in the Lord as you seek Him personally?

Response:

N. Freedom from our captors.

[2 Corinthians 10:4-6](#) (MEV) [PoG]

For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds, 5 casting down imaginations and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, [leading away] every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ, 6 and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is complete.

Question: What (internally) makes you feel trapped or scared that keeps you from feeling free?

Response:

O. Freedom to overcome.

[1 John 5:1-4](#) (MEV)

Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves the Father loves the one born of the Father. 2 By this we know that we love the children of God: when we love God and keep His commandments. 3 For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome, 4 for whoever is born of God overcomes the world, and the victory that overcomes the world is our faith. 5 Who is it that overcomes the world, but the one who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

Question: Are you an overcomer?

Response:

[CORRECT] KNOWLEDGE

INTENTION:

Whether we believe the lie, or don't believe the truth, we are deceived.
With so much "knowledge" available to us, we often don't know what is true.
Hence why, having the correct knowledge of the Lord is crucial to a richer life.

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at having [Correct] Knowledge.

All of us have a knowledge about the Lord, but is it the right knowledge?

Striving to find that correct knowledge helps us in our relationship with God the Father to produce Life in us. And we are able to discern if we actually have the correct knowledge of Him through what transpires with our lives.

In the verses below, it talks about knowledge of the Lord—yet it really is talking about having the “precise and correct” knowledge ([G1922](#)) of the Lord. For it is not just knowledge that benefits us, but His correct knowledge.

There is so many variations in trying to understand who God is (teachings and interpretations and personal experiences), that it is difficult to know what (who/what) is telling the truth. Even I have failed at that.

But this is where the importance lies in our personal relationship with the Lord. For in that relationship, we get to discover who He is—both as a whole and personally for our own lives.

There is a key to being able to discern who the Lord is to gain this correct knowledge—it is an understanding and belief that:

[2 Timothy 2:15](#) [PoG]

When you study the word of God, to be able to rightly discern what it says, you must first know and understand that: You yourself are already approved unto God, and that you have absolutely no reason to be ashamed towards Him!

Knowing that we have been redeemed, our sins are forgiven, and we have been made righteous as believers (because of Christ Jesus); we can confidently approach the Lord without any need of fear. For without fear, we remove the filters in our eyes that can block us from embracing and understanding Him rightly.

From this mindset and belief, we can get to the correct knowledge of the Lord (God the Father, Jesus Christ the Son, and Holy Spirit).

In this lesson, we will look at all the times we are told to have the correct knowledge of Him, and what we gain when we do have that correct knowledge.

Note too how often Paul opens his letters to the different churches with “Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ”—a key to this being that correct knowledge of the Lord!

II. READING: [2 Peter 1:1-21](#) (HCSB) [PoG]

Simeon Peter, a slave and an apostle of Jesus Christ:

To those who have obtained a faith of equal privilege with ours through the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

2 May grace and peace be multiplied to you through the [[G1922](#), correct] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.

3 His divine power has given us everything required for life and godliness through the [[G1922](#), correct] knowledge of Him who called us by His own glory and goodness. 4 By these He has given us very great and precious promises, so that through them you may share in the divine nature, escaping the corruption that is in the world because of evil desires. 5 For this very reason, make every effort to supplement your faith with goodness, goodness with knowledge, 6 knowledge with self-control, self-control with endurance, endurance with godliness, 7 godliness with brotherly affection, and brotherly affection with love. 8 For if these qualities are yours and are increasing, they will keep you from being useless or unfruitful in the [[G1922](#), correct] knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 The person who lacks these things is blind and short-sighted and has forgotten the cleansing from his past sins. 10 Therefore, brothers,

make every effort to confirm your calling and election, because if you do these things you will never stumble. 11 For in this way, entry into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ will be richly supplied to you.

12 Therefore I will always remind you about these things, even though you know them and are established in the truth you have. 13 I consider it right, as long as I am in this bodily tent, to wake you up with a reminder, 14 knowing that I will soon lay aside my tent, as our Lord Jesus Christ has also shown me. 15 And I will also make every effort that you may be able to recall these things at any time after my departure.

16 For we did not follow cleverly contrived myths when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ; instead, we were eyewitnesses of His majesty. 17 For when He received honour and glory from God the Father, a voice came to Him from the Majestic Glory:

This is My beloved Son. I take delight in Him!

18 And we heard this voice when it came from heaven while we were with Him on the holy mountain. 19 So we have the prophetic word strongly confirmed. You will do well to pay attention to it, as to a lamp shining in a dismal place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts. 20 First of all, you should know this: No prophecy of Scripture comes from one’s own interpretation, 21 because no prophecy ever came by the will of man; instead, men spoke from God as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

- A. Since we have been gifted Christ’s Righteousness, we have to believe it as so. If we do not hold this as true, we fall into the trap of trying to achieve our own righteousness.

[Romans 10:1-4](#) (HCSB) [PoG]

Brothers, my heart’s desire and prayer to God concerning them is for their salvation! 2 I can testify about them that they have zeal for God, but not according to [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge. 3 Because they disregarded the righteousness from God and attempted to establish their own righteousness, they have not submitted themselves to God’s righteousness. 4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone who believes.

Question: Do you hold onto this identity that I have Christ’s Righteousness gifted unto me?

Response:

- B. There is so much we can gain in understanding to what we have been given by the Lord and the wonderful hope therein. If you feel you are living a “defeated Christian life” (as I have lived before), then seek out His truth.

[Ephesians 1:15-19](#) (HCSB)

This is why, since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all the saints, 16 I never stop giving thanks for you as I remember you in my prayers. 17 I pray that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, would give you a spirit of wisdom and revelation in the [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of Him. 18 I pray that the perception of your mind may be enlightened so you may know what is the hope of His calling, what are the glorious riches of His inheritance among the saints, 19 and what is the immeasurable greatness of His power to us who believe, according to the working of His vast strength.

Question: Can you pray for that same “spirit of revelation and wisdom”—so as to know all He has given us?

Response:

- C. As we studied in Lesson 046, the Lord provides us with all these Ministry Types to help us (as a whole) discover that correct knowledge. And in doing so, achieve the unity Jesus prayed for us to have.

[Ephesians 4:11-16](#) (HCSB)

And He personally gave some to be apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, some pastors and teachers, 12 for the training of the saints in the work of ministry, to build up the body of Christ, 13 until we all reach unity in the faith and in the [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of God’s Son, growing into a mature man with a stature measured by Christ’s fullness. 14 Then we will no longer be little children, tossed by the waves and blown around by every wind of teaching, by human cunning with cleverness in the techniques of deceit. 15 But speaking the truth in love, let us grow in every way into Him who is the head—Christ. 16 From Him the whole body, fitted and knit together by every supporting ligament, promotes the growth of the body for building up itself in love by the proper working of each individual part.

Question: Where do you see unity in the Body of Christ?

Response:

- D. Love is key to our life here on this earth—to love the Lord, to love others, and to love ourselves. Love is one of the most difficult things (to me) to fully comprehend. As such, I really want to know it for my life.

[Philippians 1:1-11](#) (HCSB)

Paul and Timothy, slaves of Christ Jesus:

To all the saints in Christ Jesus who are in Philippi, including the overseers and deacons.

2 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I give thanks to my God for every remembrance of you, 4 always praying with joy for all of you in my every prayer, 5 because of your partnership in the gospel from the first day until now. 6 I am sure of this, that He who started a good work in you will carry it on to completion until the day of Christ Jesus. 7 It is right for me to think this way about all of you, because I have you in my heart, and you are all partners with me in grace, both in my imprisonment and in the defense and establishment of the gospel. 8 For God is my witness, how deeply I miss all of you with the affection of Christ Jesus. 9 And I pray this: that your love will keep on growing in [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge and every kind of discernment, 10 so that you can approve the things that are superior and can be pure and blameless in the day of Christ, 11 filled with the fruit of righteousness that comes through Jesus Christ to the glory and praise of God.

Question: What misunderstandings of the Lord have shut out love in your life?

Response:

- E. Many of us do not feel focused in life—having a purpose. Other times, it feels as though we don't know what the Lord wants us to do in a given situation. This is a want to know what His Will for our lives is.

[Colossians 1:1-14](#) (HCSB)

Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by God's will, and Timothy our brother:

2 To the saints in Christ at Colossae, who are faithful brothers. Grace to you and peace from God our Father.

3 We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you, 4 for we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love you have for all the saints 5 because of the hope reserved for you in heaven. You have already heard about this hope in the message of truth, the gospel 6 that has come to you. It is bearing fruit and growing all over the world, just as it has among you since the day you heard it and recognized God's grace in the truth. 7 You learned this from Epaphras, our dearly loved fellow slave. He is a faithful servant of the Messiah on your behalf, 8 and he has told us about your love in the Spirit.

9 For this reason also, since the day we heard this, we haven't stopped praying for you. We are asking that you may be filled with the [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of His will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding, 10 so that you may walk worthy of the Lord, fully pleasing to Him, bearing fruit in every good work and growing in the [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of God. 11 May you be strengthened with all power, according to His glorious might, for all endurance and patience, with joy 12 giving thanks to the Father, who has enabled you to share in the saints' inheritance in the light. 13 He has rescued us from the domain of darkness and transferred us into the kingdom of the Son He loves. 14 We have redemption, the forgiveness of sins, in Him.

Question: Have there been times of being hesitant when you are unsure if it is God's Will to do something?

Response:

- F. With all the confusion that can arise from reading and hearing about God, we have been given a clear and precise image of Him in what Jesus demonstrated and accomplished. Any misunderstandings about God can be compared against what Jesus did (who Jesus is). The more we know Jesus, the more we accurately know God.

[Colossians 2:1-10](#) (HCSB)

For I want you to know how great a struggle I have for you, for those in Laodicea, and for all who have not seen me in person. 2 I want their hearts to be encouraged and joined together in love, so that they may have all the riches of assured understanding and have the [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of God's mystery—Christ. 3 All the treasures of wisdom and knowledge are hidden in Him.

4 I am saying this so that no one will deceive you with persuasive arguments. 5 For I may be absent in body, but I am with you in spirit, rejoicing to see how well ordered you are and the strength of your faith in Christ.

6 Therefore, as you have received Christ Jesus the Lord, walk in Him, 7 rooted and built up in Him and established in the faith, just as you were taught, overflowing with gratitude.

8 Be careful that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deceit based on human tradition, based on the elemental forces of the world, and not based on Christ. 9 For the entire fullness of God’s nature dwells bodily in Christ, 10 and you have been filled by Him, who is the head over every ruler and authority.

Question: Is God still a mystery to you?

Response:

G. Everything that Christ accomplished was for all of mankind—the entire earth. He didn’t just do for those who would believe, but for those who would never believe. Every person is given the opportunity to believe in Him. This is God’s Will that all would come to Him through Christ Jesus.

[1 Timothy 2:1-7](#) (HCSB)

First of all, then, I urge that petitions, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings be made for everyone, 2 for kings and all those who are in authority, so that we may lead a tranquil and quiet life in all godliness and dignity. 3 This is good, and it pleases God our Saviour, 4 who wants everyone to be saved and to come to the [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God and one mediator between God and humanity, Christ Jesus, Himself human, 6 who gave Himself—a ransom for all, a testimony at the proper time.

7 For this I was appointed a herald, an apostle (I am telling the truth; I am not lying), and a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth.

Question: Have you heard some say that only people “pre-selected” by God can be saved?

Response:

H. We live in an age where knowledge is abundant—through literature (books), pastors, teachers, academics, interest groups, religion, science, philosophy, and so much more. Of which so much is at our disposal through the digital realm of technology and the internet. Yet, how much is made-up, mistaken, mis-directed, or driven out of fear or ignorance. So much that is out there (intentional or not) can lead us astray from the truth that is Christ Jesus. If we are not careful, we can get deceived by it all. And deception is simply either: believing the lie, or not believing the truth. What we believe becomes the “truth” to us—even if it is not God’s Truth.

[2 Timothy 3:1-9](#) (HCSB)

But know this: Difficult times will come in the last days. 2 For people will be lovers of self, lovers of money, boastful, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, unholy, 3 unloving, irreconcilable, slanderers,

without self-control, brutal, without love for what is good, 4 traitors, reckless, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, 5 holding to the form of godliness but denying its power. Avoid these people!

6 For among them are those who worm their way into households and capture idle women burdened down with sins, led along by a variety of passions, 7 always learning and never able to come to a [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of the truth. 8 Just as Jannes and Jambres resisted Moses, so these also resist the truth, men who are corrupt in mind, worthless in regard to the faith. 9 But they will not make further progress, for their lack of understanding will be clear to all, as theirs was also.

Question: Has there been an area of your belief in the Lord that has changed recently?

Response:

- I. As we learned in our study on our Flesh and Spirit duality, there is a battle in us that wages—in essence, defining our actions and reactions to life. The flesh leads to destruction, the Spirit leads to life. And what can help us live that Spirit-life is this correct knowledge of God’s Truth.

[Titus 1:1-4](#) (HCSB)

Paul, a slave of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to build up the faith of God’s elect and their [\[G1922, correct\]](#) knowledge of the truth that leads to godliness, 2 in the hope of eternal life that God, who cannot lie, promised before time began. 3 In His own time He has revealed His message in the proclamation that I was entrusted with by the command of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus, my true son in our common faith. Grace and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Saviour.

Question: How does a correct knowledge of God’s Truth actually help us?

Response:

- J. Actively manifesting faith (the manifesting of God in our lives) is crucial to overcoming this world. This faith (ability to manifest God) is a fruit of the Spirit in us ([Galatians 5:22-23](#)). Our help to “unlock it” here is through completely understanding “every good thing that is in us in Christ Jesus”.

[Philemon 1:3-7](#) (HCSB)

Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I always thank my God when I mention you in my prayers, 5 because I hear of your love and faith toward the Lord Jesus and for all the saints. 6 I pray that your participation in the faith may become effective through [\[G1922, correctly\]](#) knowing every good thing that is in us for the glory of Christ. 7 For I have great joy and encouragement from your love, because the hearts of the saints have been refreshed through you, brother.

Question: What are ways you can learn more about all that is in Christ Jesus that is also in you?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [Ephesians 1:1-23](#) (HCSB)

Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by God's will:

To the faithful saints in Christ Jesus at Ephesus.

2 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Praise the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing in the heavens. 4 For He chose us in Him, before the foundation of the world, to be holy and blameless in His sight. In love 5 He predestined us to be adopted through Jesus Christ for Himself, according to His favour and will, 6 to the praise of His glorious grace that He favoured us with in the Beloved.

7 We have redemption in Him through His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of His grace 8 that He lavished on us with all wisdom and understanding. 9 He made known to us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure that He planned in Him 10 for the administration of the days of fulfilment—to bring everything together in the Messiah, both things in heaven and things on earth in Him.

11 We have also received an inheritance in Him, predestined according to the purpose of the One who works out everything in agreement with the decision of His will, 12 so that we who had already put our hope in the Messiah might bring praise to His glory.

13 When you heard the message of truth, the gospel of your salvation, and when you believed in Him, you were also sealed with the promised Holy Spirit. 14 He is the down payment of our inheritance, for the redemption of the possession, to the praise of His glory.

15 This is why, since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all the saints, 16 I never stop giving thanks for you as I remember you in my prayers. 17 I pray that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, would give you a spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him. 18 I pray that the perception of your mind may be enlightened so you may know what is the hope of His calling, what are the glorious riches of His inheritance among the saints, 19 and what is the immeasurable greatness of His power to us who believe, according to the working of His vast strength.

20 He demonstrated this power in the Messiah by raising Him from the dead and seating Him at His right hand in the heavens— 21 far above every ruler and authority, power and dominion, and every title given, not only in this age but also in the one to come. 22 And He put everything under His feet and appointed Him as head over everything for the church, 23 which is His body, the fullness of the One who fills all things in every way.

Thoughts: This chapter is one of the most profound acknowledgements of the entirety of what we have been gifted. To read this over and over again is a great reminder to me of what (who) Lives inside of me. How can I feel defeated when I have already been “blessed with all Spiritual blessings in heaven in Christ”. This is the absolute truth that I MUST believe!

MOVING FORWARD...

INTENTION:

When we do grow and learn in that correct knowledge of the Lord, we set a firm foundation to grow and develop our relationship with the Father:

Trusting the Father

I. TOPIC:

We want to look at Moving Forward...

That we are striving and progressing in maturity: “Moving Forwards to a Position of Perfection”.

That moment of “surrender” we have in believing in Christ Jesus to be Born-Again becomes the blank slate which we learn about our God our Father—to be “re-parented” by Him over everything we used to hold onto as “our truth”. Now starting to live a Life from His Truth.

Just as a baby born into this world, they only have the ability to take on (digest) their mom’s milk (not solid foods). This being a transition from being nourished through the umbilical cord in the womb.

But a baby does not live into adulthood on milk, but learns to incorporate (digest) solid foods for their needs.

We too as newly Born-Again start with the milk and transition to solid food (“meat”)—but not just any solid food, the correct solid foods (correct knowledge).

If that baby does not get proper healthy milk (milk with the necessary nutrients / nourishment), the baby’s growth can be stunted or altered—not giving that person a proper foundation to grow up and live a healthy life.

We also know, that in this world, we have an abundance of junk food that may seem good and taste good, but only causes us health issues. So even our solid-food diet needs to be nutritious to us.

The proper milk and proper solid foods we have access to is Jesus Christ. He is our “Bread of Life” that forgoes the junk of religion and self-ability.

Setting down the foundation of the Lord is critical to us growing in maturity as believers.

If we forget to feed ourselves properly, we can review the basics to stabilise / reinforce our foundation. And if we find ourselves eating too much junk food, we can fast (break) from those errors and get back to healthy solids.

Let’s run through those foundational aspects (beginning doctrines) of the Lord so that we CAN grow in maturity.

Refer also: <https://cbadenhorst.blogspot.com/2017/05/moving-forward-to-position-of.html>

II. READING: [Hebrews 5:7-14; 6:1-12](#) (RGT)

Who, in the days of his flesh, offered up prayers and supplications (with strong crying and tears) to Him Who was able to save him from death. And He was heard because he feared.

8 And though He was the Son, he still learned obedience by the things which he suffered.

9 And being consecrated, He was made the Author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him.

10 And He is called by God “A High Priest after the order of Melchizedek”, 11 of Whom we have many things to say which are hard to understand because you are dull of hearing.

12 For though you ought to be teachers by this time, once again you need us to teach you the first principles of the word of God, still having need of milk, and not solid food.

13 For everyone who uses milk is ignorant of the word of righteousness. For he is an infant.

14 But solid food belongs to those who are of age; who through long practice have their wits exercised to discern both good and evil.

Therefore, having left the beginning doctrines of Christ, let us be led forward to maturity, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, faith toward God, 2 the doctrine of baptisms, the laying on of hands, the resurrection from the dead, and eternal judgment.

3 And we will do this if God permits.

4 For it is impossible that those who were once lightened - and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 and have tasted of the good word of God, and of the powers of the world to come - 6 if they should fall away, would be renewed again by repentance (seeing they crucify the Son of God to themselves again, and make a mockery of Him).

7 For the earth, which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it and brings forth useful herbs for those who till it, receives blessing from God.

8 But that which bears thorns and briars is rejected and near to being cursed (whose end is to be burned).

9 But beloved, even though we speak in this way, we are still persuaded of better things concerning you and things which accompany salvation.

10 For God is not unrighteous, so that He should forget your work and labour of love which you have shown toward his Name. In that you have ministered to the saints, and still minister.

11 And we desire that every one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope to the end, 12 so that you are not slothful but followers of those who, through faith and patience, inherit the promises.

III. RELATED VERSES AND QUESTIONS:

A. The Foundation of: Repentance from Dead Works.

Whether it is moral-living, self-righteousness, philosophy, rituals, religion, the law, or any other self-achievement, they ALL have zero chance at having a Right-Standing with God. Everything we attempt is as “dung” ([Philippians 3:8-9](#)) and “dirty (menstrual) rags” ([Isaiah 64:6](#)) when tasked with achieving God’s Standards. Everything we do outside of Christ Jesus (outside of believing in Him) is Dead Works. Jesus Christ is our one-and-only Justifier before God.

[Romans 3:21-24](#) (RGT)

But now, the righteousness of God has been made manifest without the Law, having been witnessed by the Law and the Prophets; 22 that is, the righteousness of God by the faith of Jesus Christ, unto all and upon all who believe. For there is no difference.

23 For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God; 24 and are justified freely by His grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus.

[Galatians 2:16-21](#) (JUB) [PoG]

“Know that a man is not justified by the works of the Law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ. Even we, I say, have believed in Jesus Christ; that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the Law. Because, by the works of the Law, no flesh shall be justified.

17 “If then, while we seek to be made righteous by Christ, we ourselves are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sin? May it never be!

18 “For if I build again the things that I have destroyed, I make myself a trespasser.

19 “For I, through the Law, am dead to the Law, that I might live to God.

20 “I am crucified with Christ, but I live; yet not I anymore, but Christ lives in me. And, in that I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith [of] the Son of God, Who has loved me, and given Himself for me.

21 “I do not abrogate the grace of God. For if righteousness is by the Law, then Christ died for nothing.”.

Question: Do you still feel the need to try and please or appease God?

Response:

B. The Foundation of: Faith towards God.

Again, this is a reminder that it isn't about our achievements, but by His Grace and Faith. This Grace and Faith gifted to us allows us to come to Him in belief of Christ Jesus. It is not about OUR works or OUR Faith, but what He IS (Grace) and what He DID (Faith). And when we believe, we access this same Faith, demonstrating (manifesting) God out from us—faith as a Fruit of the Spirit ([Galatians 5:22-23](#)).

[Ephesians 2:1-10](#) (JUB)

And you were dead in trespasses and sins 2 (wherein you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the authority of the ruler of the air, even the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience, 3 among whom all of us also once lived in the lusts of our flesh, in fulfilling the will of the flesh, and of the mind; and were, by nature, the children of wrath, just as the rest).

4 But God, Who is rich in mercy, through His great love with which He loved us, 5 even when we were dead by sins, has quickened us together in Christ (by grace you are saved) 6 and has raised us up together and made us sit together in the Heavenly places in Christ Jesus; 7 so that He might show, in the ages to come, the exceeding riches of His grace through His kindness toward us in Christ Jesus.

8 For by grace are you saved, through faith, and that not of yourselves. It is the gift from God 9 (not of works, lest anyone should boast).

10 For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works; which God has ordained, so that we would walk in them.

[Hebrews 12:1-2](#) (RGT)

Therefore, seeing that we are surrounded with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us also cast away everything that presses down and the sin that so easily entangles. Let us run with patience the race that is set before us; 2 looking to Jesus - the Author and Finisher of our faith - Who, for the joy that was set before Him, endured the cross and despised the shame and is set at the right hand of the throne of God.

Question: What areas do you see faith manifesting in your life?

Response:

C. The Foundation of: Doctrine (Teachings) of Baptisms.

Though rooted in the baptism ([G907](#)) representing water baptism, Jesus Baptism, and Holy Spirit Baptism; this baptism ([G909](#)) refers to ceremonial washing to make a person clean. This law-based cleansing is no longer valid, as we have been cleansed through the Blood of the Lamb—the sanctification / sacrifice of Christ Jesus. Our filth (sins and iniquities) has forever been removed at the Cross. We can now have a clear conscience before the Lord when we sin.

[Hebrews 9:6-15](#) (JUB)

Now when these things were thus prepared, the priest always went into the first Tabernacle and completed the service.

7 But only the High Priest went into the second - once every year - and not without blood (which he offered for himself and for the people’s sins of ignorance).

8 By this, the Holy Ghost signified that the way into the Holiest of All was not yet revealed while the first tabernacle was still standing.

9 It was a symbol of that present time in which was offered gifts and sacrifices that could not make the worshiper holy concerning the conscience, 10 but consisted only of foods and drinks and diverse washings and carnal rituals imposed until the time of reformation.

11 But Christ - being a High Priest of good things to come - came by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle (not made with hands - that is, not of this creation - 12 nor by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood), entering in once to the Holy Place and obtaining eternal redemption.

13 For if the sprinkling of the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of a heifer, sanctifies those who are unclean (as touching the purifying of the flesh), 14 how much more shall the blood of Christ - Who, through the eternal Spirit, offered Himself without fault to God - purge your conscience from dead works, to serve the living God?

15 And because of this, He is the Mediator of the new Testament, so that through death (which was for the redemption of the transgressions in the former Testament) those who were called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Question: Do you still condemn yourself with the Lord?

Response:

D. The Foundation of: Laying on of Hands.

There is a demonstration of kindness, empathy, and God’s Power when we “lay our hands” on someone. A gentle touch can bring comfort and support to a person. But it is also a means to heal people and help impart the Holy Spirit.

Pertaining to the Law, no one was to touch a sick (unclean) person. So this “violation” of the law is to show that we have power over (that there is no need to fear) that we would get sick from touching someone.

And regarding the imparting of Gifts / Holy Spirit, a simple touch can open a pathway for a person to receive.

Mark 16:15-18 (JUB)

And He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature.

16 “The one who shall believe, and be baptized, shall be saved. But the one who will not believe, shall be damned.

17 “And these signs shall follow those who believe: In My Name, they shall cast out demons, and shall speak with new tongues, 18 “and shall take away serpents. And if they shall drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them. They shall lay their hands on the sick, and they shall recover.”

Acts 19:1-7 (RGT)

And it so happened (while Apollos was at Corinth) that Paul, when he passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus, and found some disciples, 2 and said to them, “Have you received the Holy Ghost since you believed?” And they said to him, “We have not even heard whether there is a Holy Ghost.”

3 And he said to them, “Into what were you baptized then?” And they said, “Into John’s baptism.”

4 Then Paul said, “Truly, John baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying to the people that they should believe in Him Who should come after him; that is, in Christ Jesus.”

5 And when they heard it, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.

6 So Paul laid his hands upon them, and the Holy Ghost came on them, and they spoke the tongues, and prophesied.

7 And there were, in all, about twelve men.

Question: Have you witnessed the “laying on of hands” manifest the Power of God?

Response:

E. The Foundation of: Resurrection of the Dead.

We are eternal beings in a temporary body. It is not that we are born, then die (becoming nothing); we exist outside and past this body for ever (all eternity)—whether with the Lord, or without (in Hell). Our chance to believe is here and now. And though our bodies will die, we will get new ones for His Kingdom!

1 Corinthians 15:12-26; 51-58 (JUB)

Now if it is preached that Christ is risen from the dead, how do some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 For if there is no resurrection of the dead, then Christ is not risen.

14 And if Christ is not risen, then our preaching is vain, and your faith is also vain.

15 And we are found also false witnesses of God. For we have testified of God, that He has raised up Christ, Whom He has not raised up, if it be so that the dead are not raised.

16 For if the dead are not raised, then Christ is not raised.

17 And if Christ is not raised, your faith is vain. You are still in your sins.

18 And so those who are asleep in Christ, have perished.

19 If it is only in this life that we have hope in Christ, we are of all mankind the most miserable.

20 But now Christ has been raised from the dead and made the firstfruits of those who slept.

21 For since by man came death, by man also came the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 Yet, each in his own order: the Firstfruits, Christ; afterward, those who are of Christ, at His coming.

24 Then, the end, when He has delivered up the Kingdom to God, even the Father; when He has abolished all rule, and all authority and power.

25 For He must reign till He has put all His enemies under His feet.

26 The last enemy that shall be ended, is death.

Behold, I tell you a mystery. We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye at the last trumpet. For the trumpet shall blow, and the dead shall be raised up incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption: and this mortal must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible has put on incorruption, and this mortal has put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, "Death is swallowed up into victory."

55 O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory?

56 The sting of death is sin. And the strength of sin is the Law.

57 But thanks be to God, Who has given us victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore, my beloved brothers, be steadfast, unmovable, abundant always in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labour in the Lord is not in vain.

Question: Why do we fear dying?

Response:

F. The Foundation of: Eternal Judgement.

Every person is judged by God's Word by whether they believed in Christ Jesus or didn't believe in Christ Jesus. There is absolutely nothing more a person is judged on—none whatsoever—not our sins, nor what we did or didn't do. The Work we are Judged on is only this: "that you believe in Jesus Christ who God sent" ([John 6:29](#)).

For those of us who do believe, we exist in a perpetual and eternal relationship WITH the Lord.

For those that chose not to believe, they exist perpetually and eternally WITHOUT the Lord (in Hell).

[John 12:47-50](#) (JUB)

"And if anyone hears My words, and does not believe, I do not judge him. For I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world.

48 "Whoever refuses Me, and does not receive My words, has One Who judges him - the Word that I have spoken. It shall judge him on the last day.

49 “For I have not spoken of Myself, but the Father Who sent Me. He gave Me a commandment, what I should say and what I should speak.

50 “And I know that His commandment is life everlasting. Therefore, the things that I speak, I speak just as the Father said to Me.”

[1 John 4:15-17](#) (JUB)

Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God - God dwells in him and he in God.

16 And we have known and believed the love that God has in us. God is love. And the one who dwells in love, dwells in God, and God in him.

17 In this is that love perfected in us: that we should have boldness on the Day of Judgment. For as He is, even so are we in this world.

[Revelation 20:11-15](#) (JUB)

And I saw a great white throne, and One who sat on it; from Whose face fled away both the Earth and Heaven, and their place was found no more.

12 And I saw the dead, both great and small, stand before God. And the books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged for those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the sea gave up the dead who were in her. And death and hell delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one of them, according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the second death.

15 And whoever was not found written in the Book of Life, was cast into the Lake of Fire.

Question: How can you reassure yourself that you CAN have confidence (boldness) regarding Eternal Judgment?

Response:

IV. FURTHER THOUGHT:

A. [1 Timothy 4:12-16](#) (JUB)

Let no one despise your youth. But be an example to those who believe - in word, in conversation, in love, in spirit, in faith and in pureness.

13 Until I come, pay attention to reading, to encouragement, and to doctrine.

14 Do not neglect the gift that is in you, which was given to you by prophecy with the laying on of the hands of the eldership.

15 Attend to these things. Give yourself to them. So that your progress may be seen among all.

16 Pay attention to yourself, and to learning. Persist in it. For in so doing, you shall both save yourself and those who hear you.

CONCLUSION & FURTHER TOPICS OF STUDY

INTENTION:

Because the Word of God is Alive and Active, it will always bring meaning and purpose to your life where you are. Your relationship with God the Father is not through the Bible, but a personal one-to-one connection in the Spirit. Develop this personal relationship with Him as Jesus did. Embrace Him just as the Disciples (and others) have done.

And never stop learning about Him in all the different circumstances, situations, and seasons of your life.

Use what you have learned from all this and from anyone else you learn from as a catalyst for growth and change—an opportunity to build on what others share to uncover all who the Lord is.

I. CONCLUSION:

Because we are forever discovering the Lord in our personal relationship with Him for ourselves (and others), we never should stop growing.

Though we only hit upon 52 Bible Study Lessons here, there are countless ones you can do and create yourself.

Below is a list of other topics I have delved into or still are searching through—if they interest you, research them. It is only meant as examples of topics of interest. Some include understandings / directions I have gone in.

I am not implying that these are correct areas or that I have “mastered” any of the topics below or in these Bible Lessons. On the contrary, they represent where I am at this moment in my relationship with the Lord.

Each Bible Lesson comes from that personal relationship and Him speaking /guiding me to where I am in life—whatever life-situation (good or bad). And, not only that, myself trying to implement these things for me too. And as I grow and change, the way I see each topic / Bible Lesson organically changes as well.

So, I pray that these Bible Lessons have helped you in some way. And that you will continue on in your relationship with God our Father!

II. FURTHER TOPICS OF STUDY:

A. Adams (Plural).

When the Lord Created the earth and all its inhabitants, ask yourself: how many Oak Trees did He plant; how many Daffodils did He plant; how many Grape Vines did He plant; how many how many Elephants did He make; how many Tiger Sharks did He make; how many Parakeets did He make; how many Tarantulas did He make; how many Honey Bees did He make; how many Brachiosaurus did He make?

For me, He didn't just plant ONE Oak Tree seed, or create ONE / TWO Brachiosaurus—He created multiple of them to fill the earth.

Question: So, why do we think He only Created ONE male and ONE female?

Study: Dig into the word Adam as being plural (more than one). Note [Genesis 6:1-2](#) which suggests that others in the Garden of Eden also sinned and got kicked out. This gives explanation to how Cain and other males from Adam and Eve had wives to marry that were from other “Adams and Eves” ([Genesis 2:16-24](#)).

B. Creation (Age of the Earth).

When we read about Creation, look at how it mentions in [Genesis 1:1-2](#) that the earth existed before the universe did. For me, meaning that the earth existed from the same “beginning” as God (eternal). And that it waited in darkness, covered in water, until the Lord chose to Create the universe around it (in 6 literal days).

Question: Can you picture the “Big Bang” theory aligning with forming around the earth when God spoke; and the age of the earth being over 4,5 billion years old?

Study: Compare the universe forming around the earth with the End Times where the universe “rolls up like a scroll” leaving the earth behind ([Isaiah 34:4](#) and [Revelation 6:12-14](#)).

C. Flood (Dinosaurs, Dragons, Tectonic Plate Shift, and Ice Age).

The book of Job is the oldest recorded book of the Bible. Read it as a historical account of the earth as the closest to the flood as possible (post-flood) and what the earth was like then.

CONCLUSION & FURTHER TOPICS OF STUDY

Bible Study



Because the Lord created ALL things, that includes the remnants of what we refer to as Dinosaurs—of which they were also saved in Noah’s Ark. The account of Job and His conversation with the Lord refers to these dinosaurs “behemoth” as existing post-flood ([Job 40:15-24](#)); including real fire-breathing dragons ([Job 41](#)).

Think too on the trauma the earth itself went through to “erupt” into a cataclysmic global flood. It tore itself apart—which brought about the locations of the continents as we see now. Go back to Creation and think of the land “gathered together” ([Genesis 1:9-10](#)) as Pangaea, with the rivers flowing from the one spot of the Garden of Eden ([Genesis 2:10-14](#)).

I also find it fascinating the reference to the “storehouses of snow” ([Job 38:22](#)). To me, a representation of the ice-age that followed after the flood.

Question: Do the stories of dragons from different, unconnected cultures across the globe corroborate their existence? What about post-flood accounts and cave-paintings that show humans coexisting with dinosaurs? Is it that, though most dragons and dinosaurs were eliminated in the flood, that their remnants / offspring were just hunted to extinction by humans?

Study: Look through Job and compare with historical and scientific accounts.

Refer also: Genesis Apologetics (<https://youtu.be/zd5-dHxOQhg>) and www.IsGenesisHistory.com

D. Sun Stands Still.

To help win a battle, an “impossible” prayer request was made to the Lord ([Joshua 10:1-15](#)). And He showed Himself in a global way. To make the sun “stand still” (being the earth stopping its rotation) is a true miracle that no human could ever do.

Question: If this did happen, would we not have accounts across the globe of either an extended day-time / dusk / dawn / night-time?

Study: Look into whether there are historical accounts outside the Bible. And then, ask what that would look like if the earth stopped rotating, then started rotating again.

E. Jesus’s Birth Date.

We celebrate Jesus’s Birth on Christmas Day (25 December). Yet, there is much history about why that date was chosen—for that date is not given as such in the Bible. But that date can be determined from the Prophecy (as in Isaiah) and the account in [Revelations 12:1-2](#).

Question: So, what can be researched from the Bible (and historical documents) to determine an actual date? And then, does it matter (make a difference) to what date it is?

Study: Look into the date of 11 September 3 B.C. and see what you find in scripture and in other’s research.

F. Jesus’s Death Date.

Unlike Christmas, we do know that Jesus was crucified and died over the Jewish Passover. But not on a Friday. Instead, He died on a Thursday with a double “Sabbath” on Friday and Saturday—making three days and three nights that He was dead ([Matthew 12:40](#))—from the time He died on the Cross (not buried) to His resurrection.

Question: Why would we want to recognise His crucifixion and death on a Thursday instead of Friday?

Study: Look into the date of Thursday, 02 April 33 A.D. (Day of Preparation of the Jewish Passover, 14 Nisan 3793) at the time when the Lambs are slaughtered at about 3:00 P.M. for Jesus’s death on the Cross.

CONCLUSION & FURTHER TOPICS OF STUDY

Bible Study



Western culture looks at the day being from midnight-to-midnight. However, Biblically, it is based on the Jewish day of sunset-to-sunset. Thus, when calculating “three days” and “three nights”, look at this timeline:

Midnight (Thursday)		Noon (Thursday)		Midnight (Friday)		Noon (Friday)		Midnight (Saturday)		Noon (Saturday)		Midnight (Sunday)	
			Died 3pm										
Arrested & Beaten		Trial Cross	D1: In Grave	N1: In Grave (Sabbath 1)		D2: In Grave (Sabbath 1)		N2: In Grave (Sabbath 2)		D3: In Grave (Sabbath 2)		N3: In Grave	
													Jesus Raised
	Sunrise (Thursday)	Sunset (Start Friday)		Sunrise (Friday)	Sunset (Start Saturday)		Sunrise (Saturday)	Sunset (Start Sunday)		Sunrise (Sunday)			

G. Angels.

Throughout the Bible, the Lord has used angels as messengers and as defenders in times of battle. Jesus was ministered to by angels to help Him after His 40 days in the wilderness ([Matthew 4:1-11](#)). Paul shares that we shouldn't forbid “worshipping of Angels” ([Colossians 2:16-18](#)).

Question: What does Paul mean? And how do Angels still help us?

Study: I have personally seen Angels and multitudes of Angels (in the Spirit). Study out how the Lord still uses them in the here-and-now. And pray for them in your life and the lives of others.

H. Sickness, Birth Defects, and Healing.

Jesus healed all ([Matthew 8:16-17](#)). When looking at who Jesus healed and the types of diseases He healed, some were due to the “fallen” nature of the world (the man born blind, [John 9](#)); and others were demonic (the epileptic child, [Matthew 17:14-21](#)). We should not automatically assume an illness or birth defect is because of a demon or a sin. Yet, regardless of what the reason is, that reason is never greater than the Healer.

Question: Question the doubts that arise when someone is not healed? Do you feel it is God not wanting to heal you / someone, or is it our own unbelief?

Study: The healing is more important than how you get healed. Notice the ways the Lord helps in your healing. Healing from Strongholds as well. Thus, don't reject the instructions of the Lord for your healing—even if it means doing things you might think are "stupid", “too hard to do”, or you believe "are not of God". Healing is only of the Lord—and the way He brings it about includes prayer, laying on of hands, going to doctors, psychologists, psychiatrists, yoga, exercise, diet, vitamins, medication, a new job, a new place to live, self-care, giving up something, etc.

I. When Children Die.

This is a sad reality in this world that children die—whether a child dies from an abortion, a birth defect, an illness, an accident, natural disaster, war, neglect, suicide, or murder.

Question: When a child dies, do they automatically go to Heaven?

Study: Here are some angles to ponder as you look into this:

1. Are humans born into sin because of Adam; only receiving salvation when they accept Christ Jesus?

CONCLUSION & FURTHER TOPICS OF STUDY

Bible Study



2. Are humans born uncorrupted (or into Christ Jesus because of the Cross)? And when they become self-aware to deny / accept Jesus are they then judged in their belief of Christ Jesus?
3. Are they given a chance to believe after death ([1 Peter 3:18-22](#)) as those who Jesus preached to in death?
4. Is their eternal destiny already known by the Lord—that the Lord knows (if they lived) whether they would grow up believing or not?

J. Heaven.

We get glimpses of Heaven from those in the Bible that saw it. But we also have testimonies of others (even now) who share their experiences of visiting Heaven.

Question: What are some things you feel the Lord would love for you to enjoy through eternity?

Study: The Lord loves us as His children—to me, that means the things we enjoy here on this earth now would also be present in Heaven. Yet, we have to also realise that Heaven is not our final destination—the Lord will create a new world for us to live on with Him—no more Heaven, but a new world that we dwell in with the Lord.

K. Enjoying Life Now.

With all the pain and suffering that draws our attention and brings destruction, it is hard to push into the enjoyment of living this life now on this earth.

Question: Does the Lord really want us to enjoy now?

Study: Look at the promises of the Lord and instruction for us in the here-and-now.

L. Jesus-Centric Old Testament Stories.

The Old Testament seems to have a different God than the Father Jesus demonstrated. Because of Christ Jesus, we gained back from a human (Jesus) what was lost by a human (Adam). Because we gained back that which was lost, we gained back a relationship with a Father.

Question: Does your interpretation of God in the Old Testament change because of who Jesus exactly demonstrated Him to be? What Old Testament topic / story / account is maybe mistranslated or misinterpreted as being of God because it was not in the correct knowledge of the Father?

Study: Place Jesus in the position of God in the Old Testament without changing the character and nature of Jesus. Read the life journeys of these people and seek out how the Lord cared for them (that He was not the one to test them or bring about their troubles). Find the Father that humanity couldn't see, but was always still present. Remember, Jesus read the same Old Testament we read, and Jesus came away from it seeing a Father, not just a God.

